

**"Talking About the World Through Tai Chi"**

Sun Chunwu

Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province, China, mainly engaged in research on natural sciences, etc;

Retired unit, Jiangsu Yangzhou Huading Electrical Appliance Group Co., Ltd

Visiting Professor at the Talent Education and Training Center of the China Management Science Research Association

Email: yzscw0514@163.com WeChat account scw20171020 Postal code 225008

**Abstract:** Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\*, decodes the scientific principles behind the Eastern mystical TaiChi and Bagua diagrams. Written in accessible language and blending education with entertainment throughout, it is specifically tailored for young people, scientific enthusiasts, and inventors, offering astonishing new knowledge about the modern scientific world.

[Sun Chunwu. Talking About the World Through Tai Chi. *N Y Sci J* 2026;19(6):38-802]. ISSN 1554-0200 (print); ISSN 2375-723X (online). <http://www.sciencepub.net/newyork>. 04. Doi: [10.7537/marsnys190626.04](https://doi.org/10.7537/marsnys190626.04)

**Keywords:** World; Tai Chi; Bagua diagram; education; entertainment; modern scientific world.

**Acknowledgments**

Professor Wang Yiping from Quzhou City, Zhejiang Province, helped me revise my thesis and provided substantial financial support for the development of the eccentric vortex engine and the filing of a patent application.

Xu Jingshan, Deputy Director of the Hanjiang Economic and Planning Commission in Jiangsu Province; Chen Qinghong, Chairman of the Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group in Jiangsu Province; Zhang Liangsoo, Chairman of the Yangzhou Huading Electric Group in Jiangsu Province; and Secretary Chen Xiaohu, who have supported my research and provided funding.

Yin Guangqing, Chairman of Yangzhou Tongyu Steel Pipe Group; Xu Guilin, Plant Manager; General Manager Yin; and Wu Zhengshan, Director of the Warehouse, among others, provided strong support by supplying steel for the repeated trial production of the eccentric vortex engine and purchasing popular science books by "Moon Doctor."

Secretary Zhu Fulai and Chairman Guo Songyuan of the Xihu People's Commune in Hanjiang County, Jiangsu Province, along with Tao Shou'an, Director of the Xihu Agricultural Machinery Factory; Zhang Zhengqing of the Xihu

Town File Factory; and Zhu Zhengtian, Director of the Xihu Town Power Brigade's Factory Office, provided strong support in the form of steel materials and free processing for the prototype development of the eccentric vortex engine.

In just a few brief encounters, despite being strangers, Wang Guoqiang, General Manager of the Hanjiang Commerce and Materials Company, spared no effort and sought no reward to help my career take off. He successfully managed the production work of the contracted large factory, transforming my life and taking me to a new level.

Wang Zhilin, Chairman and Vice Chairman of the Jiangsu Suzhou Kunshan Jinding Technology Research Institute, accompanied by Xu Jingshan, Deputy Director of the Hanjiang Economic Planning Commission, personally visited Xihu Town, Yangzhou in 2012 to inspect the eccentric machine invented by Sun Chunwu. He also gave me 1,000 yuan for travel expenses to visit their research institute, where I first viewed nearly a thousand different types of perpetual motion machines invented by various countries around the world over the past several thousand years. It was truly an eye-opening and educational experience. After 40 minutes, Chairman Wang asked me for my thoughts on the machines shown in the videos. I replied that although these machines had been invented,

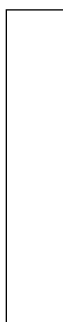
most of them required some external force, and furthermore, they had high manufacturing costs and low practicality, making them unworthy of widespread promotion.

Zheng Lie, a retired professor from Chang'an University and CEO of Xi'an Dahua High-Tech Co., Ltd., as well as Director of the Institute of Scientific Innovation and Synthesis of Chinese Studies, expressed a willingness to produce the eccentric vortex engine to support my research.

Liu Qisi, a physics expert from Xuzhou University of Mining and Technology, provided guidance and suggestions for revising the content of the book \*Tai Chi Speaks to the World\*.

University students from Yangzhou University's College of Liberal Arts and College of Education—including Xiao Zhao from Taixing and Xu Jing from the Department of Political Science—helped proofread the manuscript and registered my personal information online with the British journal \*Nature\* to facilitate online article submission.

This book is a work of natural science First come, first served





An article titled “Causes and Prevention of Cancer” was published in the conference proceedings online

**\*Tai Chi Speaks to the World\***

**(Second Edition)**

**Published by**

**Marsland Press**

**P0 Box 180432, Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA**

**Copyright © 2015 by Marsland Press, New York, USA. All rights reserved.**

**This publication is intended to provide accurate and authoritative information regarding the subject matter covered. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means—electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise—except as permitted under Sections 107 or 108 of the 1976 United States Copyright Act, without the prior permission of the Publisher or the author. Requests for permission should be addressed to the Permissions Department of Marsland Press, P0 Box 180432, Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA, or call 1-347-321-7172, or email [editor@sciencepub.net](mailto:editor@sciencepub.net).**

**For ordering and customer service, call 1-347-321-7172, email [editor@sciencepub.net](mailto:editor@sciencepub.net), or visit the website at <http://www.sciencepub.net>.**

**Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data**

**Sun Chunwu**

**Talking About the World Through Tai Chi**

**p- cm.**

**ISBN-13: 978-1-5996-4006-X**

**ISBN-10: 1-5996-4006-2**

**Printing number**

**10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1**

**Marsland Press**

**P0 Box 180432, Richmond Hill, New York 11418, United States of America**

<http://www.sciencepub.net>; editor@sciencepub.net; (347) 321-7172

**Integration of China: It likes to point directly to the heart of one of the following laws of motion—the creation of yin and yang, and the movement of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth—to rise to the evolution of all things. Philosophical thought highly values Taoist inaction.**



### Author Biography

Sun Chunwu (July 1948–), male (Han ethnicity), native of Xihu Town, Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province, China; retired from Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group Co., Ltd.

Major invention: the eccentric vortex engine. In his spare time, he engages in poetry and fiction writing, and brilliantly pursues his own innovative ideas, conducting research in philosophy, natural sciences, and other fields. He began working as a child laborer and apprentice at the age of 15. He published a comprehensive discussion on the theory of unified fields in the 18th issue of *\*Science and Technology Information\** (2007), pp.5–6.

In June 2009, the novel *\*The Moon Doctor\** was published by Beijing Art and Science Electronic Publishing House and was awarded the title of “Outstanding 21st-Century Chinese

Popular Science Publication” by the China Research Center for Quality Education in Primary and Secondary Schools. His literary works won the top prize at the first “Chinese National Heritage Cup” Contemporary Poetry and Couplets Competition. His work

*\*Causes and Prevention of Cancer\** was included in the

*\*Outstanding Collection of Essays by Distinguished Scholars of the Republic\** published by the China Academy of Chinese Studies, where it received the Special Grand Prize for Outstanding Papers. His paper *\*Causes and Prevention of Earthquakes\** was awarded the Outstanding Work Prize by experts from the National Information Center and the Academic Review Department of the Chinese Academy of National History. In October 2009, he participated in the Second National Conference on Folk Science and published an article on the causes and prevention of cancer in the conference proceedings. His work is featured on the U.S. Natural Science Journal website:

<http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>, 发表文章二十多个. Sun Chunwu also published the popular

science book *\*Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\** with Maslan Publishing House in New York, USA. In 2013, he served as a researcher at the China Society for Socio-Economic and Cultural Development. In 2013, the 24th issue of *\*Music Panorama\** published his songs, including “Moon Appreciation.”

In 2021, his article “The Origin and Prevention of the

Novel Coronavirus” won the Grand Prize at the Annual Conference of Scientists and Economists.

In 2023, he served as a visiting professor at the Talent Education and Training Center of the China Management Science Research Association.

On February 16, 2023, the third installment of his English-language article *\*My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention of the Novel Pneumonia\** was published in an American scientific journal. The World Health Organization declared the global COVID-19 pandemic over at the end of February, and to date, no major resurgence of the pandemic has been observed.

Published in *\*Academic Domain\** on May 25, 2024.

Preliminary Research on Modeling Theories in Natural Sciences, *\*Academ Arena\**, May 25, 2024;

Published the popular science book *\*New Highlights in Natural Sciences\** in May 2025

August 5, 2025: Appointed by the Writers' Committee of  
the Aesthetic Education Working Committee of the China



Oriental Studies Association to write \*



\*

Dear Sun Chunwu:

We have read your article titled "My Understanding of Tai Chi and the Eight Trigrams" in \*Academic Arena\*. It is impressive and has caught our attention. Your ideas, understanding of the discipline, problem-solving approaches, and methodology are all outstanding. I am honored to invite you to submit your new article to the \*Journal of Social Science Research Progress\* (ASSRJ). Journal of Advances in Social Science Research. UK Department of Science and Education Services  
August 12, 2019

Dear Sun Chunwu:

I am writing this email regarding your paper "My Understanding and Application of the Tai Chi Diagram: A Contribution by Sun Chunwu". I came across your research online and found it highly commendable; I have shared its observations and findings with our scholars and scientists.

Indeed, some outstanding research is currently underway in this field, and your innovative approach has the potential to inspire researchers and scientists.

Your pioneering exploration of new dimensions in your field has prompted me and our editorial board and management team to invite you to submit your new article to the European Journal of Applied Sciences (EJAS), published by the UK Science and Education Services (SSE-UK).

Online Submission | Manuscript via Email | August 16, 2022

Hello, Old Sun!

Your book \*Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\* is truly well-written. So many people have asked me about his educational background. I told them he only graduated from

elementary school—he's entirely self-taught. His current level

surpasses that of many college graduates; his expertise is truly exceptional. It's no small feat to have earned a special award certificate. I brought a copy home and read it every day.

Liu Zha'an, a veteran colleague at Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group Co., Ltd.

November 18, 2022

### Book Synopsis

**\*Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\***, decodes the scientific principles behind the Eastern mystical Tai Chi and Bagua diagrams. Written in accessible language and blending education with entertainment throughout, it is specifically tailored for young people, scientific enthusiasts, and inventors, offering astonishing new knowledge about the modern scientific world. Through this book, you will gain a deeper understanding of the universe and the world—from its origins to its dissolution—and many other major global mysteries. In the shortest time possible, you will enrich yourself with new natural science knowledge, and liberate yourself, becoming a versatile expert with exceptional abilities. For instance, by first understanding the origin of the universe, the formation of Earth's mountains, the creation of water, and the nature of plants and animals, the book offers practical insights for preventing and immediately curing diseases such as leukemia, cancer, AIDS, ankylosing spondylitis, and COVID-19.

It is also the result of scientists searching high and low for it, drawing inspiration from books, and incorporating the physical laws and equations discovered by masters of physics such as Newton, Einstein, and Yang Zhenning at specific points in time into the edifice of [New Physics in Natural Science], which serves as a systematic framework.

By flexibly applying these physical laws and equations to formulate, solve, and theorize about the evolution of physical phenomena, all mysteries are unraveled.

It is also an encyclopedia suitable for people of all backgrounds to read and enjoy in their spare time—a must-have work for every home that offers profound insights.

The early bird catches the worm

Table of Contents

|                                                                                                   |      |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| "Talking About the World Through Tai Chi"                                                         | 3    |
| About the Author .....                                                                            | 5    |
| Synopsis.....                                                                                     | 6    |
| "Talking About the World Through Tai Chi" .....                                                   | 1    |
| Correct Understanding and Application of the Taiji Diagram                                        | 211  |
| Further Exploration of Research on Natural Science Modeling Theory                                | 233  |
| "My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus Disease (Part Three) .... | 255  |
| What Are the Key Conditions for Ending the Global COVID-19 Pandemic?                              | 286- |
| Most People Are Terrified by the Virus, Reacting with Panic at the Merest Mention of It           |      |
| .....                                                                                             |      |
| 290                                                                                               |      |
| My Experience in Preventing and Treating Diseases for Reference                                   | 294  |
| Cancer Is Not a Disease: A Groundbreaking View That                                               |      |



|                                                                            |                     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------|
| <b>Challenges Traditional Medicine.....</b>                                | <b>299</b>          |
| <b>Rethinking Cancer Treatment: Current Challenges and Strategies.....</b> | <b>303 Chinese-</b> |

Style

Modernization 330

of the Universe

|                                                                               |                                                      |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>The Horn-Shaped Black .....Hole</b>                                        | <b>Ejection Model—A New Mechanism for the Origin</b> |
| <b>337</b>                                                                    |                                                      |
| <b>Reposted from CCTV for reference only .....</b>                            | <b>357</b>                                           |
| <b>On the Characterization of the Names of Tang Sanzang's Three Disciples</b> | <b>365</b>                                           |
| <b>My Perspective on "Namo Amitabha Buddha" .....</b>                         | <b>367</b>                                           |
| <b>Song of Moon Appreciation .....</b>                                        | <b>369</b>                                           |
| <b>Song of Scientific Research .....</b>                                      | <b>37</b>                                            |
| <b>0</b>                                                                      |                                                      |
| <b>Song of the Hardships of Entrepreneurship</b>                              | <b>371</b>                                           |
| <b>Sixteen Poems .....</b>                                                    | <b>372</b>                                           |
| <b>Production Plan for Eccentric Vortex Engines..</b>                         | <b>377</b>                                           |

"Talking About the World Through Tai Chi"



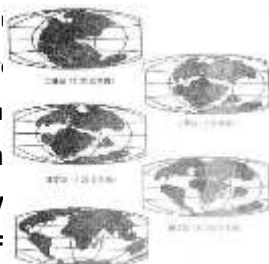
On a high mountain, a magnificent observatory stands. Inside, some people stand, some sit, and some scientists are gathered around a one-meter near-Earth telescope, observing changes on the lunar surface. They discovered a strange glow on the moon's surface and, at the same time, noticed that craters were fluctuating in size and appearing and disappearing. They analyzed and engaged in heated debates, yet no one had a conclusive theory to explain this anomalous phenomenon. Suddenly, a frantic cry rang out from the tectonic plates:

"Mother Earth's Core, it's terrible! Our satellite, the Moon, is emitting a strange glow. Some areas are growing darker, and the craters are fluctuating in size and appearing and disappearing. We don't know what disaster might befall."

"My child, the Earth's Crust, you must report this situation to your parents at the North and South Poles. They are well-traveled and knowledgeable—humanity's parents."

"Mother Earth, scientists have discovered that the centrifugal force generated by the Earth's rotation causes my crustal plates to move only when if they were to shift near the equator, they would only move a distance the length of a human foot. It would take at least hundreds of thousands of years for them to move from the equator to the North Pole, and if they were to turn back and move toward the South Pole, it would take tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years."

"How could such a thing be possible?" "Your tectonic plates, propelled by centrifugal force from the South Pole, have already shattered into fragments and are drifting toward the North Pole. Look at Saville Lepichon's six major plate tectonic models—though a small portion



hasn't crossed the equator yet, most have already passed it. So you should split into two groups: one heading south, the other heading north. Stop wasting time and hurry to report to the North and South Pole Dads—they've seen it all."

"My Earth's Core Mother, you're getting more and more confused. The centrifugal force from rotation is causing my plates to fan out like the skirt of a figure skater. As the force driving the movement toward the equator increases, I've lost control. Although a small portion of the plates hasn't yet crossed the equator, they're also being pulled by the 'centripetal force' of the movement toward the North Pole and have been swirled into individual plate surfaces, resembling craters formed by massive rock impacts. Furthermore, the Earth's rotational system is pushing the rear

ends of the plates with 'centrifugal rotational force,'

causing them to accelerate toward the equator so they can move toward the North Pole. Please, Earth's Core Mom, think of a solution!"

"I, the Earth's core, no longer possess the fiery intensity of my youth; in fact, I have solidified into a sphere. Only by being propelled by the system's centrifugal force into the mass regeneration field to push against the inner walls of the

mantle—and by combining with the 'centripetal

rotational' force generated by your movement on the mantle plates to create friction and heat—can we transform the mantle's hard rock into magma through the friction and heat generated by these two opposing forces. Furthermore, the difference in movement speeds between you and the tectonic plates creates fissures—remember, not cracks. And because the soil layers surrounding the active joints where these plates meet are not solid, it gives my magma a chance to escape, erupting from volcanoes to send a warning to the North Pole. "But I can't go to the South Pole to sound the alarm right now, because the centrifugal force from rotation is too weak—it can't propel my liquid out of the crust. And when the rotation slows down, the force generated simply can't escape."

"Core Mom, as long as you can reach the North Pole and find North Pole Dad, let us brothers lend you a hand." After speaking, a small island on a tiny active plate in the western Indian Ocean began spinning continuously, with a cycle of 24 hours. Another small plate, however, moves in the opposite direction. In the Pacific Ocean, it automatically splits into small islands; today it appears whole, but tomorrow it will split into two, with a gap of 4–5 meters. Before long, it will automatically come back together, leaving no trace of having ever been separated. There is yet another plate in Canada, propelling a small island in a straight line. It moves forward 100 meters each year; over the past 1,000 years, though it has occasionally veered slightly off course, it has still traveled 3,200 meters, causing 500 ships to be lost and claiming the lives of over 5,000 people. Even more intriguing is the small tectonic plate in the Taiwan Strait, which stubbornly follows the Chinese mainland plate, moving eastward at a rate of 5 millimeters per year.

If Penghu is taken as a fixed point, its eastern coast is also moving toward the mainland at a rate of 70–80 millimeters per year.



Image courtesy of Baigeng

With a deafening roar, the earth shook and the mountains split apart and rocks flew everywhere. Fierce magma surged straight into the Arctic sky, instantly plunging the world into darkness and forming a volcano.

"Old hag, what are you doing here, acting like a lunatic again?" "The sky is about to fall, and you're just standing there playing dead?"

"You women are so ungrateful. I'm freezing and starving out here. If it weren't for our shared goal of keeping the Earth spinning, I'd have quit long ago."

"Oh, come on, don't take all the credit. The Earth would keep spinning just fine without you." "Ha! I can't reason with a woman as narrow-minded and full of hot air as you. Without me, all your so-called great abilities would be useless. Look at all those famous scientists throughout history who bragged that the Earth's rotation was purely caused by external forces. They never stopped to think that any hypothesis must be logically consistent when traced back to its roots. Take the first planet, for instance—how did it form and begin rotating? Back then, there couldn't have been the Sun's gravitational pull or magnetic fields to help, and it certainly wasn't God giving it that initial push.



After all, whether it's the movement of planets or galaxies, animals or plants, all motion involves non-uniformity."

"Cut the crap. I don't have time to listen to your long-winded lectures. I'm asking you: why does our moon emit that strange glow? Why do parts of it darken? Why do the craters sometimes appear larger, sometimes smaller, and sometimes disappear entirely?"

Without a moment's hesitation, the North Pole replied, "That's a trivial matter; I'll just mention it for your reference. You must know that Earth's rotational speed is much faster than the Moon's. The Earth's core, driven by centrifugal force, rolls outward, generating far more thermal energy through the friction and compression of the tectonic plates. At the same time, your precious sons—the tectonic plates—sometimes surreptitiously channel the thermal energy

generated by the friction between 'centripetal rotational pull'

and 'centrifugal rotational push.' These 'nutritional'

energy sources are sent to you to replenish your vitality and boost your thermal energy, keeping you vibrant and full of life for billions of years. The vortex-like gravitational pull they create—which people call 'universal gravity'—remains incredibly strong. The mixed hot air currents and matter within your core sometimes escape beyond the crust, but they are quickly restrained by universal gravity.

The situation on the Moon, however, is quite different. Its diameter is much smaller than ours, and its rotational speed is far too slow. The thermal energy generated by rotational friction is insufficient to fully sustain the Moon, so it will gradually shrink. At the same time, the Moon's surface has poor heat retention. Although it currently experiences moonquakes, their frequency and energy cannot compare to those on Earth, and it is certainly incapable of erupting in volcanic fury like you do.



Image courtesy of Baigeng

This strange glow is primarily composed of cold material from the Moon's outer layers. When this combines with the high-temperature energy generated by friction between the Moon's core and mantle, it transforms into hot gas that surges into space. Due to the Moon's weak gravitational pull, this escaping mixture of gases disperses and drifts across the lunar surface, where it encounters other factors—such as disturbances from the solar wind—causing it to linger like smog on Earth, refusing to dissipate. If this is indeed the case, it is a good thing—it reveals the moon's secrets to us. There are various mineral deposits within the moon, and its rotation is even accelerating.

**If it were merely the result of mischievous**

**astronauts dumping trash and waste into space, or issues related to the Moon's interaction with sunlight, then we would have been getting our hopes up for nothing or worrying needlessly. As for the craters on the Moon fluctuating in size, this is a normal phenomenon. You must understand that the Moon and Earth were both born from the same mother—like the products of a major childbirth. It can be said that every crater evolved from a sunspot, much like a small molecule or cell, into an active tectonic plate. Just as on Earth, each of these plates on the lunar surface exhibits three forms of movement, which together enable the Moon's rotation. If you were to observe from another planet, one side of the Moon would resemble a pregnant woman's swollen belly. The side facing Earth generates a "centrifugal rotational thrust," causing one end of each plate to protrude downward from the spherical surface in sequence, accelerating its movement. This is particularly evident below the equator, where the surface appears significantly bulged and expanded, while the daytime side of the Moon remains relatively flat. This is why the craters appear larger when observed during the day. At night, due to the energy-intensive upward movement of the plates on the other side of the Moon caused by its rotation, the plates are forced to contract and curve inward, slowing down their movement. At this time, the far side of the Moon, during the night, contracts into an uneven, irregular spherical surface, and overlapping folds occur at the junctions between**

plates. Consequently, the craters you see at this time appear smaller. Furthermore, these craters are not formed by meteorites or, nor by other celestial bodies or that have lost energy. The craters resulting from such impacts are very deep and vary in shape, and the crater rims do not contain fragments of the impacted celestial body

. The bottom of the crater is flat and contains two vortex points: one with strong centrifugal force and



one with weak centripetal force.

Of course, the movement of tectonic plates and the cyclical process of "what has been united will eventually separate" also alter the shape of craters. As for craters appearing and disappearing intermittently, this is impossible in the short term; perhaps they simply misinterpreted what they saw. It can be said that nature serves as the source of certain theories and a testing ground for inventions, even though some movements and activities may not be detectable in the short term. But ultimately, over the long course of history, the truth will come to light. For example, people invented the hydrogen bomb by studying solar flares, and invented plastic by studying the nebulae of the Milky Way. If you wish to invent and understand the world, you too can turn to nature to observe, think, and put your ideas into practice to find the answers. Earth's Core, do you agree with what I'm saying?"

"I don't understand these things, my Arctic husband. The Moon and Earth were born of the same mother and are our close neighbors. We must fulfill our duty to visit them and see what's wrong with our older sister. If she's sick, we must call a doctor to treat her; if she lacks nutrition, we must provide her with energy to speed up her rotation. Faster rotation would change the Moon's climate and environment, making it suitable for human habitation—how wonderful that would be! You've got to go take a look right away."

"Don't you know? I can only talk—I can't run errands. I can't go myself. What should we do?" Let me think of a solution. It's not easy to find such a doctor—one who is not only highly skilled and knowledgeable but can also explain ancient and modern Chinese and foreign concepts of astronomy and geography with clarity, and generate world-class new knowledge. Only such a doctor can treat this illness. Although Western medicine has invented various new treatments like IV drips, many new diseases have emerged that are still difficult to cure. Therefore, Western medicine cannot treat this illness;

we must turn to Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM). TCM takes a comprehensive, systematic, and interconnected approach to diagnosing the root cause of the illness before prescribing and dispensing the appropriate herbs for treatment.

Yet some foreigners and a few Chinese people stubbornly refuse to believe in TCM's holistic approach of treating both the root cause and the symptoms, dismissing it as pseudoscience. But I believe that nothing is perfect—not even gold—and TCM has already taken a great stride forward. So I'll call upon the "Lunar Doctor" to give those foreigners a taste of their own medicine and treat this illness on the moon. As he spoke, the giant hand from the North Pole slapped his own head: "Oh, I've got it! Let's go find Sun Wukong, the Monkey King who caused such a ruckus

in Heaven. She's quite capable—when she was protecting Tang Sanzang on his journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, she once burrowed into the Princess Iron Fan's belly. Today, if we ask her to burrow into the moon's belly to take a look and treat this illness, it won't be a problem at all."

"What? She hasn't been digested yet?"

"How could someone like her ever die! Look at her—she's clear-cut in her likes and dislikes, never dwelling on personal grudges or gains and losses. She's fought demons and monsters, enduring every hardship to ensure Tang Sanzang's successful journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures. And at the Queen Mother's Peach Banquet, she ate plenty of divine fruits, peaches, and elixirs. If you do the math, she's guaranteed to live at least hundreds of billions of years. Not to mention her journey to the Western Heavens—not only did she gain experience in dealing with people and situations, but she also obtained the Elixir of Immortality. You could say that as long as Earth exists, her soul will never perish, and she will continue to serve the people diligently. Even before Earth's destruction, she'll likely be invited by people from other planets to preach the Dharma!"

"Quite right. She's highly capable and well-connected—she's even been to the Palace of the Moon and has a history with the Moon Goddess Chang'e. Go ahead and invite her." With that, the Earth's core, along with its sons—the tectonic plates—emitted a powerful rippling displacement force, jostling and nudging the Old Man of the North Pole to hurry and invite Sun Wukong.

As the North Pole Plate reversed its rotation with the magnetic field, the Old Man of the North Pole leaped forward, arriving at Mount Huaguo as if swinging on a swing.

Before him lay the vibrant Mount Huaguo, filled with the scent of flowers, the songs of birds, and a sea of people. Not far away, Sun Wukong was gesturing wildly as he spoke to the tourists. Seeing this scene, the Old Man of the North Pole was overjoyed and hurried toward the mountain gate.

"Stop right there! Where's your ticket?" Suddenly, an old monkey stepped forward to block his path.

"A ticket? Do I need a ticket just to see your Great Sage?" the Old Man of the North said indignantly.

"Don't you know, old man? Mount Huaguo is now a major tourist destination. Look at all the visitors from around the world gathered around our Ancestor, listening to her lecture! Besides, in today's market economy, even our Ancestor has joined the competition. How can you possibly enter without a ticket?" With no money to his name, the Old Man of the North could only stand outside the gate, watching Sun Wukong give his lecture with longing eyes. A moment later, Wukong led the tourists toward him.

The Old Man of the North Pole hurriedly shouted, "Great Sage, Sun Wukong! It's me, the Old Man of the North Pole. I have something important to discuss with you." Wukong looked up and, seeing it was the Old Man of the North Pole, asked happily, "Why aren't you coming in, you old North Pole?"

"You're just reaching into a coffin to beg for money! I'm living on thin air—where would I get the money for

a ticket? I can't get in!" The Old Man of the North spread his hands and shook them. Sun Wukong immediately shouted to the gatekeeper, "This Old Man of Longevity is an old friend of mine—please let him in." As he spoke, Sun Wukong had already reached the mountain gate. After exchanging a few pleasantries, he led the Old Man of the North to the inner hall and had him take a seat, while the little monkeys served tea and mountain delicacies to entertain him.

"Great Sage, you're being too kind—how can I possibly accept such generosity?"

"Oh, come now. When I was on my journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, I hated nothing more

than that kind of insincere hospitality—where they only start shouting for you to sit down and eat once you’ re about to leave. So, since you’ ve traveled all this way to see me, why be so formal? This isn’ t something you paid for, so help yourself and enjoy it. We’ ll talk after you’ ve eaten.” With that, he casually picked up a peeled apple and handed it to the North Pole Elder. The Elder of the North took the apple, and as he ate, he looked around. He saw that this seven-beam structure faced south, with a front width of five bays. It featured a single-step timber framework at the front and rear, and at the head of the main hall hung a diagram of the Taiji and Bagua. “Old Sun, how can you believe in this sort of thing?” Wukong hurriedly replied, “It’ s not about being illiterate, but about being out of touch with reality. Do you know the secret behind this diagram? “I’ m completely clueless about these matters—I’ ve come to listen to your wise teachings.”

“No wonder you were blowing in the cold wind at the North Pole. This diagram depicts two interlocking fish—one black, one white—in a yin-yang leap, much like how you are male and I am female—one positive, one negative. In physics, these are called centripetal and centrifugal forces. With these two forces pushing, rubbing, and generating heat, electricity and molecules are created, leading to the evolution of the universe and the emergence of all things. This is exactly what Laozi described in the *\*Dao De Jing\**: ‘The Tao gives birth to the One; the One gives birth to the Two; the Two give birth to the Three; the Three give birth to all things’ —a dynamic description of the field’ s evolution.” “But I, Old Sun, must disagree with the ancients. I believe that ‘Yin’ also represents the feminine—a multifunctional machine capable of replicating more energy and creating new products, such as giving birth to more boys and girls. Yet boys cannot give birth to children themselves. The ancients’ explanation of ‘The Tao gives birth to the One’ simply doesn’ t hold up.”

“What is the relationship between the Wuji and the Taiji Yin-Yang diagram?”

“To put it simply, Wuji refers to the state of the universe or events and phenomena that have not yet formally taken shape. If we try to interpret it solely based on its primordial state, our explanations may be inaccurate or difficult to grasp. The Taiji Yin-Yang Diagram, however, encompasses a broader scope than Wuji; the ancients used it to predict the future, make decisions on matters of state, and reflect current phenomena. It was used to observe the heavens above, the earth below, and human affairs in between. Today, experts such as physicists and philosophers are exploring how to apply ancient wisdom to modern times, utilizing Taiji culture to address questions regarding the origin of the universe and the emergence of all things from nothingness.

First, let us examine microcosmic theories: where did the universe come from, and how does its movement transform into new matter and replicate more energy through evolutionary processes? Just as the Sixth Patriarch of Chan Buddhism, Huineng—who could not read a single character—had someone write down his verse for him:

“Bodhi has no tree; The bright mirror has no stand. Originally there is nothing; Where could dust arise?”

In other words, judging by these four lines of verse, the Sixth Patriarch Huineng did not establish a contextual backdrop. Consequently, ordinary people inevitably find it difficult to grasp, leaving them with a sense of being in the dark, as if they half-understand yet do not fully comprehend.

In contrast, the verse by Shenxiu, Huineng’ s senior disciple and founder of the Northern School, reads:

The body is the Bodhi tree; the mind is like a mirror stand. Polish it diligently at all times; do not let dust settle upon it. People of all levels of understanding can easily grasp the meaning of these four lines. Therefore, today’ s Chinese physics masters are establishing a new theoretical framework for a Chinese-style dynamic field system. Combining these two approaches makes the theory easier to understand and apply in practical work. “If we analyze your financial fortune using Tai Chi culture, you haven’ t leveraged the geographical advantages of the North Pole. Perhaps you’ re too lazy to exercise much, nor do you use your brain—so you’ ll remain poor all your life.”

**"Old Sun is right; I really have been poor all my life."** The North Pole glanced up at the wall above, where it was written: **"Life—Life is inherently empty; why bother striving in vain? Let go of all delusions; dedicate yourself to the Four Modernizations."** Another scroll read: **"Faith—Whether there is a god or not, do not argue; understand this truth, and all is real. Fail to grasp this truth, and you harm yourself; superstition and delusion will never lead to success."** On the opposite wall hung a scenic tour map of Mount Huaguo, while the lower wall displayed a master plan for Mount Huaguo's future development. The room was quite tidy.

**'Sun Wukong has made great strides in his thinking today. His spirit of dedicating himself to the Four Modernizations—rather than sitting in meditation to conquer the world—is truly something I should learn from.'**

**"You flatter me, you flatter me. I'm still in the process of learning and transforming."** **"Not in the least. Look at how you've turned Mount Huaguo into such a distinctive tourist destination. Tourists from all over flock here in droves, making a huge contribution to the nation's tourism industry and creating a cash cow for you. Compared to you, Old Sun, I'm truly ashamed and embarrassed."**

**"I'm just a son raised by my aunt, relying on the support of others. This small achievement isn't worth mentioning. Thank you for honoring my humble abode with your presence. At your age, if anything comes up in the future, just give me a call—there's no need for you to come in person; I'll make sure it gets taken care of."**

**"You're a true friend, Old Sun. In today's market economy, there aren't many good people like you who cherish old ties and value loyalty—most just go through the motions, scheming and deceiving one another. To be perfectly honest, there's a matter of the utmost importance that absolutely requires the help of you, the Great Sage."** With that, the Old Man of the North leaned slightly closer to Wukong and continued, **"Our dear sister, the Moon..."** And so, he began to explain the situation to Wukong.

**After hearing this, Wukong furrowed his brow. "Oh my, Old Man of the North Pole, it's not that I, Old Sun, won't go. But ever since the four of us returned from the Western Heavens with the scriptures, each of us has developed our own insights and worldviews, and we've all been busy with our own affairs. Just look at my master, Xuanzang—as soon as he returned with the scriptures, he immediately went to report to Emperor Li Shimin of the prosperous Tang Dynasty. The grand ceremony the emperor held to receive the Buddhist scriptures and artifacts was truly magnificent. Civil and military officials, the entire city's populace—even even the empresses and concubines within the palace couldn't stay cooped up—all rushed out to join the spectacle. Once the ceremony concluded, the Emperor ordered my master to swiftly mobilize all available resources to translate the scriptures into Chinese and disseminate them widely among the people. This was to transform their insular mental worlds, benefit the common folk, and foster social harmony, stability, and unity."**

**Consequently, upon returning to the temple, my master immediately assembled a large group of talented monks to work day and night on the translation. Although my junior brother Ba Rong and I were merely "rice-brewing cloth bags" and knew nothing of translating scriptures, we were far from idle. All day long, we had to field the curious questions of the endless crowds of devout men and women who came to visit. Our lips grew raw and our throats ached, yet we still had to answer their endless inquiries. "What do the Bodhisattvas in the Western Paradise look like? Are they really as tall as the Bodhisattvas enshrined in our temple? Do they truly live forever? Next time, ask Old Sun to take us to fetch the scriptures."** I told them, **"You couldn't endure such hardships—it's a journey of 108,000 li on foot."** Just hearing the phrase **"108,000 li on foot,"** they recoiled in fear, sticking out their tongues in horror. **Could people like that ever hope to retrieve the true scriptures?**

**As for Ba Rong, he was surrounded by even more people. A group of female devotees crowded around him, asking all sorts of questions. They accused him of having impure thoughts and consorting with demons along the way,**



asking, "Can someone like that truly cultivate the Buddha's path?" He's an expert at flirting. He always says the women in the Western Paradise dress far more beautifully than you do, their fragrance wafting from a great distance, and they speak in soft, polite tones. As a man, of course, I can't help but be tempted the moment I hear or see them—I was enchanted by her and only suffered a little hardship because of it. As for the Bodhisattva's work of guiding people to Buddhahood, he emphasized that it transcends wealth, status, education, worldviews, life philosophies, and social classes. Even evildoers, bad people, and sinners who oppose his teachings can be transformed into goodness through Buddhist doctrine; by doing good deeds, one can attain Buddhahood. He spoke of escaping the sea of suffering caused by fame and profit, cultivating great blessings for the next life, and achieving eternal life and immortality.

Some female devotees, however, asked questions that were both clever and childish, such as, "Someone who looks like you—don't the people of the Western Paradise fear you? How could they let you enter the Buddha hall?" When Ba Rong found it difficult to answer, he would tap and pat those women, feigning ignorance.

You could see the imperial consorts, dressed in splendid silk robes, riding in one flower-adorned palanquin after another, accompanied by their daughters and treasures. They would step down from the palanquins with great reverence, approach the large clay statues of the Bodhisattva, offer incense and treasures, and pray for the Buddha's blessing of wealth, honor, and eternal life. They bowed and curtsied repeatedly before the clay Bodhisattvas, and made their daughters do the same.

After offering incense, the head abbot led them on a tour of the temple. This was a disaster. Xuan Zang was in the midst of discussing the translation and phrasing of the sutras with his disciples when he noticed a young monk answering questions with remarkable eloquence. The group stood there, completely engrossed in his explanation. The princess asked the Empress Dowager, "He's so handsome and young—why would he choose to be an ascetic monk? He'd be so much happier if he found a young lady to marry. It's such a pity."

From then on, the princess frequently visited the temple under the pretext of burning incense. She brought several new trunks filled with her clothes and daily necessities and settled in. She would sit beside the young monk, helping him organize his scriptures and asking him all sorts of questions. The two hit it off remarkably well. However, this young monk was implicated in an affair with the emperor's daughter. A thief, believing the trunks must contain the princess's valuables, stole them—only to find that the only valuable item was a pair of embroidered shoes. The thief was caught by the authorities and confessed that the stolen goods came from the temple. Thus, the young monk never got to enjoy the incense; instead, he was bound to a wooden stool at a crossroads in the capital and beheaded by the executioner.

The situation back then was truly dire! I could see that my young fellow monk was the victim of a miscarriage of justice, and I wanted to save him, but my master firmly refused, saying that this was his fate and that we couldn't break the rules of the Dharma. Just look at how superstitious he was—believing in such notions as "it's one's fate." Later, while spreading the scriptures, he faced all sorts of new trials and tribulations, which ultimately shattered all his spiritual anchors. He came to see through all worldly fame and fortune and continued to live as a monk, studying, teaching, and spreading the Dharma.

At the same time, I told my master that since Buddhism was introduced to China during the Western Han Dynasty and flourished, there have been several campaigns to suppress Buddhism throughout history. Take Emperor Taiwu of the Northern Wei Dynasty, Tuoba Tao, for example. Following in his predecessors' footsteps, he used military force to vie for control of the northern territories. Wave after wave of fully armed troops marched to the frontiers to wage war. The wars raged year after year without cease; every decisive battle was extremely brutal, leaving corpses strewn across the fields and rivers of blood flowing everywhere. This rendered vast tracts of land barren, and hordes of refugees fled to distant lands to beg for food.



After he had unified the north by force, the state treasury was completely depleted, yet he failed to recognize that Buddhism served as a stabilizing force in society. He summoned his ministers and, using a lack of faith in Buddhism as a political pretext, sought to target monasteries as sources of economic exploitation. He proposed raiding temples to seize their treasures and lands. Look at those fully armed soldiers—some mounted on fine horses, marching in formation and brandishing broadswords and spears—slaughtering monks, Taoist priests, and nuns on sight, and smashing temples and various pagodas and treasures. The Buddhist scriptures, statues, and other items they confiscated were burned on the spot. He strictly prohibited the spread of Buddhism, and all temple lands, gold ingots, and silver treasures were confiscated and transferred to the state treasury to address the problem of an empty treasury.

However, upon his death, people began to spontaneously embrace Buddhism again, blending its rational and scientific core with certain superstitious beliefs. This trend was particularly evident during the Sui and Tang dynasties, when ordinary citizens voluntarily donated money and goods to temples, leading to the reconstruction of the destroyed temples and pagodas one by one. Burning Buddhist scriptures and statues were republished and recited, and many believers and disaster victims without means of livelihood became monks, Taoist priests, and nuns, bringing Buddhism back to its golden age.

However, the rulers could not find a governing philosophy to ensure social stability and large-scale development. Every few years—or at most a decade or so—conflicts between people and between nations would intensify. Consider the endless wars waged year after year between soldiers and soldiers, soldiers and bandits, and bandits and bandits, all vying for resources, territory, and leadership. Although Emperor Wuzong of Tang eventually unified China and seized power, the state treasury was even more depleted, and the market was in decline. Moreover, so many soldiers had followed him on campaigns across the country for decades, yet to this day, they still had no wives! Where could one find so many respectable young women willing to marry soldiers? He adopted the methods of his predecessors—suppressing religion—to secure his first windfall, resolve the problem of the empty treasury, and also address the marital concerns of some of his officers.

Yet his approach to using the suppression of religion as an economic tool was more cunning, more ruthless, and more successful than that of previous emperors. Observe how he personally presided over meetings time and again, first orchestrating a massive propaganda campaign to justify the crackdown. He had walls and stones everywhere inscribed with slogans declaring that Buddhism was impure and the root of the people's unrest. He ordered monks, Taoist priests, and nuns to renounce their vows and return to lay life, and resolutely confiscated all temple lands and property. Observe those vast, fully armed troops marching into the temples: they seized any supplies they found and added them to the state treasury; they drove out the monks and Taoist priests; those who resisted were killed. Some young, beautiful nuns were even fought over by officials and soldiers alike, who took them—or the junior nuns—home to be their wives or concubines. Some elderly, frail, or disabled veterans had no choice but to take elderly nuns or temple attendants home as wives or concubines, while some ill-mannered soldiers even raped some of the temple attendants.

In just a few short months, as many as two million monks and nuns returned to lay life, and 150,000 households of former temple servants were registered as taxpayers under the state's two-tax system. The temple estates suffered a devastating blow. From then on, Buddhism in China declined along with the weakening of feudal society. I told my master all this, hoping he would no longer cling to outdated ideas, but instead follow the teachings of the Buddha Huineng: to use temples and sacred grounds as the best places for spiritual enlightenment and the promotion of spiritual civilization. The Dharma must not be separated from worldly enlightenment; seeking Bodhi [enlightenment] apart from the world is like searching for the horns of a rabbit. Monks must also give equal importance to farming and meditation.

Although Buddhism has suffered numerous persecutions, you have not broken free from the old traditions to create a new Buddhist superstructure—one that serves the economic foundations of each era and is thus accepted by

Buddhists and ordinary households alike. This would allow Buddhism to flourish once more and contribute to a harmonious, stable, and united society. Don't you agree?"

Beiji nodded. "That makes sense, that makes sense."

"As for my junior disciple Zhu Wuneng—nicknamed Zhu Bajie—I saw he had nothing to do at home after the pilgrimage, so I asked him to come help me manage the household. But he said: 'The energy of life's enlightenment lies in eating, drinking, and revelry; without that, life is meaningless.' Coming here to be bound by rules is like locking him up. Now he truly lives in a drunken haze, indulging in every kind of pleasure. "I heard he went to a dance hall to hit on a hostess and got arrested by the police. Don't you think he's as stupid as a pig? How could he do something like that in public?"

Beiji shook his head repeatedly and sighed, "That pig of a brother—he wasn't on the straight and narrow even back when he was on the journey to the West, and he still hasn't reformed. Women are bottomless pits and traps. Without money or a connection, it won't last; even if you have plenty, they're no treasure. It's best to treat your wife at home like a treasure."

"True, but Pig Brother has one good quality: he's a tough guy. No matter how much emotion or money he pours into a woman, when she turns her back on him, he'd rather cry himself to the next life than snitch. Unlike some people who can't let go—they'll make a huge fuss over a minor issue or a little money, yelling and cursing, even going so far as to seek revenge, fighting, or killing to silence their lovers."

"Once you see through it all, you realize that those mundane, worldly fools will do anything depending on their immediate self-interest or how much money is offered. When making friends, you should only associate with talented people who are also eager to help others—only then can you expand your knowledge and make lasting friends. You must be cautious in everything you do."

"That's right. That cat with the wandering tongue won't change no matter how much you beat him. He just loves to hang around women, flirting and chasing after them. I've told him, but he won't listen. Instead, he laughs at me, saying Old Sun here has no luck to enjoy such pleasures." Now, let's talk about my second junior brother, Sha Wujing—still that honest, simple-minded fellow. In his own words, 'We honest folk should stick to honest work and never get involved in politics.' He believes that people like me spend our lives bustling about yet achieve nothing of value. "There are risks in neglecting one's proper duties and chasing after women. It's best for a person to remain untouched by the world—'purity' brings no worries, and 'purity' is true blessing. But after all, people don't live in a vacuum; how can there be true purity in this world? That's why he returned to the Great Sha River to enjoy its tranquility. Without that tranquility, the vast, empty waves of the river have washed him clean." "Good heavens! Brother Sha is truly remarkable; his enlightenment is indeed higher than yours or mine. He has seen through the hardships of worldly strife for fame and fortune, achieved success and fame, and gone to enjoy his blessings. And what of you, Old Sun?"

"As you well know, Old Sun, I have endured the most hardships in my life. After returning from my quest for the scriptures, I faced countless trials. My enlightenment is just as Master Mingbie Mountain said: 'The red dust and white waves stretch endlessly; patience and gentleness are the wondrous remedy; Go with the flow to prolong your days, and live a life of contentment; Do not cloud your own heart, nor magnify others' faults; Be cautious in social interactions to avoid regret, and be patient and reasonable in discussions; A taut bowstring always snaps first, and a steel blade's edge is easily damaged; Trouble arises from idle gossip, and misfortune stems from a dark heart; There's no need to argue over right and wrong, nor to judge each other's merits; The world has always been full of imperfections; how can the body escape impermanence? Suffering a slight loss is no hindrance; yielding a little is no harm; Just as spring brings the green of willows, autumn winds bring the yellow of chrysanthemums; Glory is but a dream of three watches; the bitter and the sweet, one must bear them all! People boast of

cleverness through cunning schemes, but Heaven determines its course with composure; deceit, greed, and anger lead to hell, while fairness and integrity are paradise. The musk deer dies young for its strong scent, and the silkworm perishes early for its abundant silk; one dose of the Spirit-Nourishing and Stomach-Harmonizing Decoction, two cups of the Harmonizing Qi and Erchen Decoction. A million cares wasted in life, yet after death, only a pair of empty hands remain! Joy and sorrow, partings and reunions—the world is in constant turmoil; wealth and poverty—we toil ceaselessly day by day! Cease striving for dominance and victory; a hundred years are but a stage for a play; in an instant, the gongs and drums fall silent—who knows where home lies! That is why today I never vie for fame or profit, nor dwell on personal grievances; I never seek ill-gotten gains. I have devoted myself to cultivating my land for hundreds of years. Especially in this prosperous era of reform and opening-up, I have actively responded to the government's call, abided by laws and regulations, and worked hard on the Four Modernizations with my wisdom and diligent hands. Look at the earth-shaking changes that have taken place on my Flower-Fruit Mountain—with so many tourists every day. I, Old Sun, keep my distance from officials and avoid trouble with the people. Through annual contracts, I earn at least tens of thousands, and sometimes as much as several hundred thousand yuan. I know I can't take this fortune with me when I die, but a person's wisdom and ingenuity can be carried along. Look at the descendants of Zhuge Liang in history—they built their village into the Bagua Village, where neither Japanese invaders nor Chinese warlords dared to enter lightly. Today, his descendants use local characteristics to develop tourism, making a fortune without leaving home. So I, Old Sun, have also done what I can within my means.

At the same time, it wasn't until after my journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures that I realized: reciting sutras, offering incense, and burning joss paper with the utmost reverence, as my master did, can only bring spiritual fulfillment. But harboring good intentions for society and others, and doing whatever good deeds or practical work I can—though the path of virtue is fraught with trials and has caused me no small amount of suffering—But when I look back on my life in the future, it will leave me with less guilt or regret. Moreover, it has granted me the good fortune to turn misfortune into good luck time and again, escaping death in the face of great peril.

"Great Sage! You didn't learn a single useful lesson from your journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, yet you've been preaching to me about these intangible, invisible superstitions and a philosophy of self-sacrifice—only to lead me into such a huge loss?"

"How can they be intangible and invisible? People's lives cannot be defined by monetary exchange or material values. Human existence is continuous. Why is it that some truly great figures, despite countless attempts by others to harm them, simply cannot be killed? Perhaps it is due to the diligence of their ancestors and the energy they accumulated from helping others and doing good deeds. This causes the organs within their bodies to undergo repeated friction and pressure. In particular, the iron in their blood is transformed into magnetism through this friction, and the intensity of the electromagnetic waves emitted and converted also increases time and again.

These electromagnetic waves function much like a universal instrument: they can regulate and harmonize the

coordination of bodily organ functions, as well as preemptively receive critical signals. This triggers automatic alerts to the brain's nervous system or the soul, enabling appropriate defensive measures to ward off harm from sudden disasters. Furthermore, this process fosters the evolution of a virtuous soul and good fortune.

Take, for example, General Wu, the son of Commander Wu of the Yangzhou Military Sub-district; Yang, the accountant at the Yujiang Theater; and especially the elderly Mr. Liu Zhiran, a former educated youth from Ludili Road in Guilin, Guangxi. After being reassigned back to the city, he rented out his home. Now advanced in age and having never married, He would save every penny from his monthly salary and donate several thousand yuan to help poor people or impoverished scientists—people he had never met, but only seen through the bank card numbers and phone numbers listed in the advertisements attached to Dr. Moon's books—to help them overcome difficulties such as applying for patents. For those poor people who received his help, even just a few dozen yuan could prevent a major crisis. As a result, they never forget his kindness, praise his spirit to everyone they meet, and are determined to repay his generosity a thousandfold.

At the same time, having come from a humble background myself, I deeply understand the hardships of those without money or the ability to earn it. I have followed the example of General Manager Wu and Liu Zhiran, providing financial assistance to talented, virtuous, and ambitious individuals who are either penniless, have suffered setbacks in their careers, failed in their research, or faced sudden disasters. For decades, I have consistently helped them one by one to become prosperous, supporting them all the way without ever pressuring them to repay the debt.

Some people are simply less fortunate than others; they may lack business experience, or their startups may be struggling in the early stages, leaving them truly destitute. They might even be unable to borrow money at high interest rates, let alone repay their debts immediately. In such cases, I help them connect with new customers to open up sales channels. I also distribute their products to my workers as benefits, and I mentor them on the ethics and skills of business to help them succeed. After all, virtue is a source of wealth and can even ward off evil. It's far more effective than traveling a thousand miles to seek a Buddha. Just look at all the

banners, certificates, and thank-you letters on the wall—even the gifts of gratitude—they're my spiritual reward and fulfillment. What more could I ask for? What could be more rewarding than this?" Having said this, Wukong stretched out on the Grand Duke's chair, closed his eyes, and savored a moment of peace.

"Oh my, Mr. Sun, even before I arrived, my old wife was saying that today's Sun Wukong isn't the penniless beggar of the past—rich people are always afraid of death." Wukong jumped up in a flash. "What? What?" Not even heaven and earth would believe that Old Sun is afraid of death." With that, the Great Sage's eyes darted about, and his teeth chattered. The little monkeys, seeing their ancestor was angry, rushed forward without a word—some lifting his head, others his legs—and hoisted the Old Man of the North Pole, ready to hurl him outside.

Seeing this, Wukong shouted, "Stop! Stop! You'll kill him! Put him down gently!" A few of the young monkeys were still defiant, shouting in unison, "The moment I laid eyes on this old geezer, I knew he wasn't a good sort. He's been making a fuss here, and let me tell you, if our ancestor hadn't called out in time, we'd have thrown you to your death just to feel better..."



Wukong walked over to the Old Man of the North Pole, bent down, helped him up from the ground, and sat him in a chair. Then he asked, "Was it that crazy, senile old woman of yours who said I'm afraid of death? Everyone knows that I, Sun Wukong, fear neither heaven nor earth—how could I possibly be afraid of a tiny little moon? But to be honest, I've just lived a few more years and gained some worldly wisdom; I can't act as recklessly as I did in my youth anymore. "If I leave now, who knows when I'll be back? You've worked so hard for hundreds of years to build this family business—just as it's starting to bear fruit and bring some rewards—and now it's all going to go to waste."

"Great Sage," sighed the North Pole, "if something were to happen on the moon, Earth would suffer as well. By then, who knows where you and I would end up?"

The little monkeys all shouted in unison: "Ancestor, you mustn't listen to his nonsense! Don't be fooled! If something happens on the moon, it won't just be our family that suffers. Why must you take the lead on this? Once you leave, our family business will be ruined. Ancestor, we beg you—you absolutely must not go!"

Polar Bear snapped, "You little ones have no idea

how vast the world is, yet you dare to tell me I can't leave. Once you've seen the danger in this video of real events, you'll understand why I've travelled thousands of miles to Mount Huaguo to ask our ancestor to come out of seclusion. It's truly to save all of your lives." With that, Beiji pulled a media player from his robe. The screen immediately displayed historical footage from 65 million years ago: the inhabitants of the planet Maya were holding an emergency meeting. A tall, fair-skinned elder with a head of silver hair stood at the podium and said, "Everyone, please quiet down. On behalf of the Maya Planet Provisional Supreme Council, I am issuing this final announcement: a lifeless planet in the cosmos is hurtling toward us at a speed of one million kilometers per hour. To prepare for the worst, we have formulated two plans:

1. Every nation and region must unconditionally provide the most advanced weapons, including trans-matter weapons, and launch them from various locations to intercept this gravity-less planet in mid-air, causing it to explode in space.

2. We have made preparations for evacuation and will relocate our wise ones to other planets in phases and

batches. According to the data currently being returned, the wise ones who arrived earlier on other planets have discovered that the climate and environment there are no longer suitable for human habitation. For example, on Venus, because it not only orbits the Sun but also rotates around its own rotational axis, it has reached the limit of its axial tilt cycle. As the planet, composed of interconnected tectonic plates, accelerates downward along the upper portion of the tilted axis, the inner core of Venus is flung outward by the system's centrifugal force. This causes the inner walls of the intermediate mantle layer to be compressed and frictioned, generating additional heat that radiates to the surface of Venus.

Thus, the harsh winter climate of Venus's new ice age has come to an end. The peak of summer—when Venus orbits the Sun at its fastest, non-uniform pace—has arrived once more. The high temperatures generated by the friction and movement of tectonic plates sliding across the mantle have caused everything on Venus to be consumed by fire. Only a few hundred thousand buildings and advanced facilities remain.

The wise ones on Mars also discovered that the planet was now a desolate wasteland, and we must wait for the

climate changes that will occur when its rotation period becomes irregular. This is because Mars also completes a cycle of approximately 400 million years as it rotates around its own rotational axis. If it were to rotate uniformly around its axis, it would evolve into a "Great Autumn." However, as it accelerates downward from the rotational arm, the heat generated by friction and compression gives rise to a "Great Summer." During this period, all industries on Mars experience rapid development, but they also compete fiercely for market share. Initially, there is shouting and bickering, followed by localized wars. One side initially endures the humiliation in silence, while the stronger side grows even more ruthless.

They also used spies to spread various rumors everywhere, such as claiming that agricultural products were toxic, that eating them would cause epidemics to spread, and that deaths would increase.

Meanwhile, they sowed discord among nations. One nuclear-armed nation, enraged, launched a nuclear strike, and several other nations followed suit, each firing their own nuclear weapons, ultimately destroying all life on Mars. This was also a man-made problem.

Wise explorers who visited Mars discovered that it is now a desolate wasteland with an autumn-like climate. Moreover, it is decelerating, generating less rotational force, and evolving toward a cold, winter-like climate reminiscent of the beginning of a new cycle. Therefore, we must wait until Mars accelerates again and moves closer to the Sun before we can develop it to make it suitable for human habitation.

Alternatively, we could penetrate Mars' interior to alter its eccentric vortex structure, increasing its eccentricity. This would accelerate Mars' rotation, generating greater friction and pressure, thereby raising its temperature by several dozen degrees—making a warm climate entirely feasible. Alternatively, we could trigger a massive volcanic eruption somewhere on Mars. Once the eruption subsides, the temperature difference between the crater and the surrounding area would cause rain to fall from the sky. Water would accumulate in the low-lying areas of the crater, forming rivers, which would transform the crater's natural environment. This would foster the growth of various plants, allowing humans to settle there and begin terraforming Mars.

Meanwhile, the sages who have migrated to Earth have

discovered that its natural environment is more favorable, with all forms of life already thriving there. We can use our wisdom and civilization to build and transform this planet. Our scientists have accurately mapped Earth's topography; our Mayan calendar has been calculated to span 400 million years into the future, and our astronomical calendar remains valid for 64 million years. We have determined that the Tzolkin cycle is 260 days, and the Venusian cycle is 584 days. A Earth year is 365.2420 days (today's precise calculation is 365.2422 days; the two-second difference is caused by Earth's slowing rotation). The sages who go there may use our calendar alongside Earth's calendar. From now on, Earth will be the realm where we live and thrive. Therefore, we have decided to begin mass migration to Earth immediately."

Suddenly, someone asked, "Excuse me, Commander, are there any sentient beings like us there? Are there any threats to our lives?"

"That is a good question. Rest assured, during the chaotic period of the universe, only diffuse gas spread through the air, creating turbulent flows that spiraled downward in a centripetal vortex, forming a funnel-shaped black



hole.

External hot air currents spiraled inward into these funnel-shaped black holes, forming a centripetal vortex. These were flung outward by centrifugal force. As they collided and frictioned with the incoming hot air currents, they gained momentum or experienced varying

magnitudes of force, leading to the formation of six force fields in this region. Within this force field, the outer air currents accelerating downward were first coiled into a massive spherical

mass—

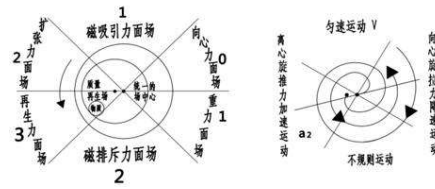
The funnel-shaped black hole.

The gas within the black hole's void is swirled into cyclonic clusters and stored in the black hole's eccentric void field. [This forms a structure comprising an outer shell, an inner void, and a system of cyclonic clusters.] This marks the beginning of the evolution of individual atomic shells.

The hot air currents pervading the universe flow toward the cooler regions within atoms, swirling centripetally into small cyclonic clusters. These are then propelled outward by centrifugal force, inevitably

colliding with the incoming hot air currents. This friction generates heat, causing water molecules to form at the boundary between hot and cold regions. Consequently, the mass of the gas entering the cavity's center is altered, leading to the replication of more rain nuclei and cyclonic spheres. Water molecules outside the rain nuclei flow toward the center of the rain nucleus cavity. This process causes the rain nuclei to replicate even more water.

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



As hot air from outside continuously enters the cavity of the spherical shell, the resulting friction generates high temperatures, which convert the water into a new gas. This new gas enhances the system's centrifugal force, accelerating the rotation of the inner shell. This continuous friction generates even higher temperatures and pressures, transforming the new gas into chemical bonds and individual solid-state molecules. These are then replicated through rotation into small clusters, evolving into shells resembling solid-state atoms.

At this stage, the diffuse gas evolves from the spatial field into the physical field of the atom, further enhancing its transformation and replication capabilities; it does not necessarily manifest as a vortex.

For example, one half of an atomic sphere's shell consists of at least thirty small molecules combined into a shell. Therefore, every time a stream of hot gas enters through the small voids between molecules, it is surrounded by a centripetal vortex and replicated into tens or hundreds of subatomic spheres. This is similar to how, when a stream of air enters the human heart, it is instantly replicated by a

vortex into hundreds of white blood cells.

These subatomic spheres then evolve into a collective of atomic nuclei, forming the atom's tripartite structure consisting of the outer shell, the inner cavity, and the atomic nuclei within the cavity.

The external hot airflow continues to flow unceasingly toward the low-temperature center of the atomic cavity, resulting in a situation where the entity with greater mass becomes the unified field. First, the subatomic particles in the transition layer generate a

vortex suction force as they spin. Much like "those closest to the

water get the moon first," they draw the hot airflow into the subatomic cavities.

As this hot airflow spirals inward in a centripetal

vortex, it is subjected to centrifugal forces generated by the system. The resulting friction and heat generate high temperatures and pressures, converting the new gas into small solid-state molecules. These are then replicated by the vortex into more subatomic particles, or stored within the subatomic shell, thereby

enhancing the subatomic particles' descent from the upper regions of

the atom toward the atomic nucleus. By this point, the atomic nucleus has been spun by the system into a tightly structured small sphere,

effectively serving as a springboard for the subatomic particles' hard

landing. Like a grazing shot, they skim past, moving tangentially and crashing into the inner wall of the opposing atom. Due to the atom's

large mass, the impact merely causes it to vibrate, bouncing the subatomic particle back. However, it cannot rebound to its original height and instead settles onto the atomic nucleus.

Since the subatomic shell is also composed of several small molecular rings arranged in a circular pattern, the downward force causes several small molecules within the subatomic cavity to push one after another, increasing the force propelling them toward the front of the spherical shell. This increases the mass density at the front, resulting in a greater force when it strikes the inner wall of the atom. This force can be calculated to be at least three times the mass of the subatomic particle. Since there are dozens or even hundreds of subatomic particles on this surface of the atom, continuously rushing

downward, they impart repeated thrusts to the atom's spin.

When the subatomic particles and individual small molecules in the cavity are rebounded from the impact, they do not have time to make a sharp turn and charge forward again. Consequently, the reaction force consumes the applied force, causing the rebound force to diminish with each instance until they follow a parabolic trajectory and land in the middle of the atomic inner wall. The subatomic particles then roll downward along the curvature of the atomic inner wall. Due to the downward acceleration along the curvature, they are

subjected to the system's centrifugal and eccentric forces. The

individual small molecules within the subatomic cavity are continuously pushed toward the front edge of the shell, much like the force arm of an eccentric or lever. As the mass is constantly shifted to the eccentric side and accelerates, the subatomic mass generates

additional energy—which is also a force. Consequently, its velocity exceeds that of a tangential motion that merely glides past, enabling it to return to a higher elevation and perform work by moving downward once more.

Since tangential motion is linear, it only generates a single force.

Of course, some subatomic particles with low mass, after being rebounded, fall into the atomic nucleus and remain there. However, at this point, the atom and the atomic nucleus have undergone at least three forces. For instance, each downward acceleration and collision causes the atom and the atomic nucleus to bounce and vibrate once, resulting in three different outcomes regarding the amount of energy. 1. When the subatomic particle is bounced back by the atom and lands on the atomic nucleus, it causes several subatomic particles or individual small molecules within the nucleus to jostle and rub against each other, generating heat. 2. When rebounded, the small molecules within the subatomic voids, as well as the subatoms themselves, collide, push against one another, and generate heat and electricity through friction. Individual subatoms are thus transformed

into what are known as "electron spheres." 3. The hot gas produced by friction within the atom, or individual subatoms, accelerates toward areas of lower temperature and pressure. In reality, electrons do not exist. However, for the sake of consistency with physics, we accept the notion that electricity is generated.

As electrons accelerate from a high-temperature region to a low-temperature region, or from the top to the bottom, and collide with the opposite side of the atomic nucleus, the small molecules in the electron-hole pair are also pushed forward by centrifugal force. This causes the small molecules to jostle and rub against one another, generating heat and converting the electrons into high-energy particles. [In practice, this means that within the atom, while centripetal force accelerates the small molecules toward the cooler region, the small molecules at the center are pushed outward by centrifugal force. As they collide and rub against each other, generating heat, this process results in the production of high-energy protons on the opposite side.]

At this point, some small molecules within the proton and electron cavities generate magnetic properties through this jostling and friction. Alternatively, under different high-temperature and high-pressure conditions, various chemical bonds are formed. For example, some small molecules within the proton and electron cavities may be fused



together by high temperatures to form clusters of multiple small molecules, or they may be held together by the magnetic properties generated through jostling and friction, resulting in electron clusters composed of multiple small molecules. With these high-mass electron clusters, the force of acceleration becomes even stronger. For instance, small molecules entering the interior of an electron cluster inevitably encounter small molecules being expelled by the centrifugal force generated by the system. As they collide and rub against each other, they generate heat and light. Although this phenomenon vanishes as quickly as a whirlwind forming on the ground. However, the hot gas flow and small molecules outside the atom constantly accelerate toward every tiny cavity in the atomic wall, circling toward the cooler center. Consequently, the atomic center continuously replicates more electron clusters. Each one is then pushed and frictioned by centrifugal force, converting into an instantaneous burst of light and heat.

Yet this transformation process does not consume the atom's internal energy; rather, it enables electrons to accelerate from

high-temperature, high-pressure regions toward low-temperature, low-pressure zones in a single, swift flow. People have confirmed this beautiful phenomenon: the work done by electric charge and current.

This strengthens the atomic system's rotational capacity, causing small subatomic particles, elliptical spheres, and irregular spherical

bodies within the atomic nucleus to be successively ejected along parabolic trajectories by centrifugal force.

Thus, within the atom, while centripetal rotational force systematically replicates electrons on one side, centrifugal rotational force pushes and fricts them into protons on the other, causing them to move continuously within the upper and lower magnetic fields. This breaks the magnetic induction lines of the central object's rotation, converting mechanical energy into the so-called ability of electric current to accelerate motion.

When the natural laws within the atom are disrupted and the environment for combined motion is destroyed—for instance, when gases and high temperatures not only fill the internal voids of the atom but are also forced by high-speed centrifugal forces to the edge of the atomic shell—the gases and high temperatures escape through tiny voids in the shell wall, causing the atomic system to cool and depressurize, and the genetic energy it provides is significantly reduced. At this point, the four forces—friction, attraction, and gravity—become unified and are no longer capable of performing work, causing the rotation to decelerate.

Assuming an atomic mass of one jin, when accelerated to 1,000 revolutions per minute, it generates a greater inertial force, making it impossible for the atom to stop instantly. This creates the time

required for the forces to readjust and for the motion structure to reorganize within the spatial process of work. During the upward motion of subatomic particles and their centripetal contraction in a non-uniform motion cycle, the periodicity of different elements emerges.

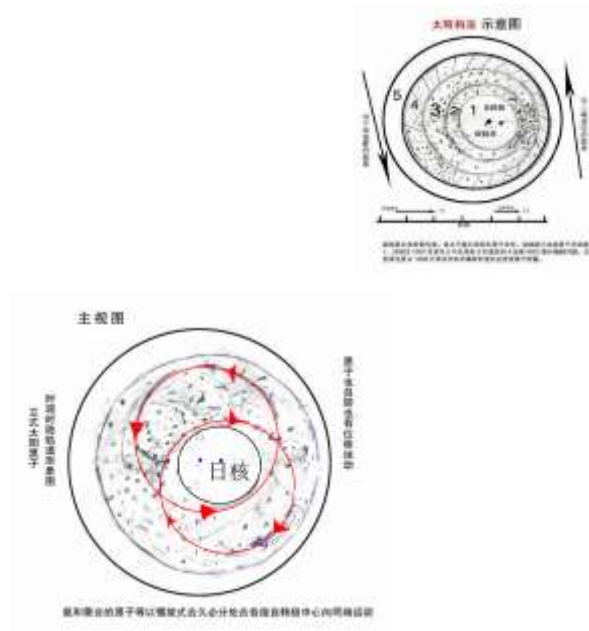
Furthermore, when several subatomic particles within an atomic nucleus are ejected and collide with one another, a collective force is formed. At this point, the force within the atom transforms from the electromagnetic force generated by electrons into the nuclear force.

In other words, as individual subatomic particles are subjected to "centripetal rotational pulling forces" and "centrifugal rotational pushing forces," the friction and heat generated by their collision and friction create high-temperature, high-pressure energy. This energy lays the groundwork for a so-called "magnetic field highway," which in turn generates additional electric charges. First, clusters of matter and individual subatomic particles within atomic voids undergo a chain reaction of nuclear fusion—hydrogen combustion—resulting in collapse, melting, or a big bang. These are then stored in outer space.

Consequently, the universe evolved from nothingness into atoms, and further evolved into dark planets and red giant liquid spheres with greater mass.

**Figure 2: A physical representation of the Sun's primordial**

## structure



A galaxy is formed when various stars rotate centrifugally, creating a galactic image, with some dying stars being cast out to the galaxy's periphery. Since the outermost region of the galaxy also undergoes centripetal rotation, many new stars are formed. As these stars exert centrifugal force, they create another image of the galaxy. The immense thrust of this galaxy will shatter dead stars, which will also be drawn into liquid stars like the Sun by powerful gravitational forces.

These dead stars are like dying cells within the human body, circulating through the bloodstream and respiratory system; they cannot be expelled from the body through urination or defecation. Within the body, centripetal rotation replicates new cells, or they are pulled by the spiral arms of genetic centripetal force into the center.

of genetic cavities, where more new cells are replicated and stored within the body. Children grow taller day by day and evolve into the elderly,

Planets in a galaxy also undergo a cycle of birth and death, perpetually renewing themselves, evolving into the blueprint of a



barred spiral galaxy.

During the evolution of the universe, dead stars are cast to the outer edges of galaxies, driving the universe to expand and evolve infinitely.

The above explains that dark matter in the universe is "Mi-man Qi," and dark energy is the "centripetal rotational pull" and "centrifugal rotational push." The natural world is described by these two simple, opposing forces of friction and repulsion, which have transformed the universe's former state of purely gaseous motion. This serves as a model of wisdom, providing the means for genetic replication and the transformation of new matter to create various new phenomena.

For example, when a dark star evolves into a red giant, and particularly when a star transforms into a white dwarf, the hydrogen gas within the star is converted into helium particles.

More helium particles are replicated by vortices into numerous sunspots, which then evolve into sunspots with greater mass. Starting from the upper region of the solar core, they accelerate in a figure-eight pattern from top to bottom toward the thinnest part of the photosphere. The sunspots spin faster and faster, much like cells replicating and entering a fetus' s body—growing larger day by day while remaining restless within the womb. Gradually, the thinnest part of the photosphere is pushed outward, bulging and rupturing. One by one, these small sunspot “lives” break through the photosphere' s maternal shell, emerging in single file. Time and again, the Sun' s centrifugal force gives birth to numerous “sub-planets” of varying energy. Or, in the Big Bang, it gave birth to planets like the Moon and Earth, marking the origin of the “sub-planetary” class.

[And just as an animal dies after giving birth without a birth canal, the light sphere dies and remains in space as a crab-like nebula. The diffuse gas within these nebulae, under the influence of centripetal rotational forces several years later, spirals inward to form new rings. Over the course of several centuries within this new ring structure, the diffuse gas in space continuously spirals inward into the low-temperature rings, coalescing into clusters and evolving into new gaseous planets. After several more centuries, these evolve into planets with liquid and solid states. These evolutionary processes will not be detailed here.]



The Earth, evolved from the Great Ejection, first underwent orogenic movements under high initial temperatures. As the outer crust cooled rapidly, the surface hardened into rock. The Earth's core, driven by the centrifugal force generated by the system, pushed against one side of the inner wall of the mantle plates, causing the mantle plates to generate heat through friction and causing the Earth to bulge significantly toward the Sun. Meanwhile, the upper part of the mantle plates (see figure)

is also subjected to the displacement of small active tectonic plates on the crust. These plates are pushed and frictioned by "centripetal rotational" forces, generating heat and transforming the internal rocks of the mantle plates into high-temperature magma. When the Earth's rotation causes the active plates to move upward from below, the magma is also transported to the nighttime region. As the upward movement of the plates slows, the thermal energy and electrons generated by friction decrease, resulting in night. Consequently, accelerated cooling and contraction trap the gas at the active fault surfaces between the inner crustal plates, trapped at the active fault planes between the plates and the molten magma leaking from the core. This causes the ground at one end of the active fault—where the crustal plates meet—to be subjected to continuous contraction and compression by powerful gaseous or liquid forces. Much like a hydraulic jack gradually pushing up the ground at the end of the active fault formed by the crustal plates, the protruding ground forms mountain ranges. The

upper parts of the mountains cool rapidly, while the inner parts at the base cool slowly. Especially when the surface plate shifts toward an area of expansive forces—typically from late night into the daytime—the differing stresses at the base of the mountain range, combined with the assistance of accelerated inertial forces from the downward-sagging of the plate's leading edge on the sunlit side, cause the ground at the mountain's base to be pushed, squeezed, twisted, and pulled into depressions. This results in river-like or hilly terrain, as well as fissures and other unique landforms.

Over the course of approximately 100,000 years, the Earth had formed irregular topography and landforms, including mountains, hills, plains, depressions, and fissures. At this point, the crustal and mantle plates on the Earth's surface—much like our own planet—began to exhibit three forms of movement, gradually creating the conditions for various natural evolutionary processes: First, on the side facing the Sun, the plates—one end at a time—began to exhibit turbulence-like activity, successively protruding and sagging downward with increasing speed. This side of the Earth expanded significantly, creating a large cavity on that side of the sphere, far from the center. The centrifugal force

generated by the Earth's rotation pushed the core toward the side with the larger cavity, causing the core to rotate. Consequently, particularly on the equatorial side, the thermal energy converted throughout the year evolved into a summer climate year-round. When each small active plate generates more inertial force through the Earth's transformation, it performs an upward impact motion. However, since it lacks additional energy or force to sustain this movement, the lower end of each plate moving upward sequentially undergoes centripetal contraction and bending, resulting in elliptical motion. This generates centripetal force that pushes the core further toward the side with the larger cavity, much like



the longer arm of a lever exerting greater force. Consequently, the Earth's rotation becomes non-uniform. II. Because each small plate differs in shape and geographical environment, and is subjected to varying forces—such as the Earth's structural “centripetal rotation” and “centrifugal rotation”—some plates exhibit clockwise or counterclockwise displacement as they

move across the Earth's surface; III. Over the course of its long history, the Earth has been shaped into an ellipsoid by these diverse forces. Consequently, centrifugal forces at the equator are stronger than at the poles. This causes the leading edges of the active plates at the South Pole to be constantly subjected to the thrust of “centrifugal rotation” and the pull of “centripetal rotation” as they move toward the North Pole. Driven by the principle that what has been united for a long time will eventually separate, and what has been separated for a long time will eventually reunite, these plates undergo non-uniform, periodic displacement movements toward the poles.

This movement of tectonic plates occurs on the Earth's crust. When their displacement causes friction and heat at the boundaries of the crust, it creates conditions for the future conversion of this energy into volcanic and seismic activity, and further provides the conditions for the creation and transformation of new phenomena through irregular combined forces.

As the Earth evolved, particularly in active fissures on the Earth's surface—such as those found in the Grand Canyon or at the bases of towering mountains—the Earth's core, driven by centrifugal rotational forces, pushes and friction against the mantle's contact surface. The resulting high temperatures and pressures burst through the Earth's crust into the sky, or hot air currents from volcanic eruptions surge through fissures toward high-pressure zones in the atmosphere. These processes are also influenced by the combined forces of solar radiation and other

factors. This is due to the uneven distribution of solar radiation on the Earth's surface: in some areas, where heat absorption is greater and temperatures are higher, air currents rise, creating low-pressure zones; in other areas, where heat absorption is less and temperatures are lower, air currents sink, creating high-pressure zones. At high altitudes, however, the situation is reversed: areas of low pressure at ground level correspond to high-pressure zones in the upper atmosphere, while high-pressure zones at ground level correspond to low-pressure zones in the upper atmosphere. Consequently, air currents originating from high-pressure zones generate waves of turbulence and accelerate toward low-pressure zones.

Since the air currents, which rely solely on upper-level conditions, encounter resistance from the front, they form a centripetal vortex, creating a large outer ring. The hot air from the outer ring continuously accelerates toward the cold center in a vortex, thereby forming the eye of the tornado. Air entering the

center of the tornado's vortex is spun into a cyclonic mass, which is inevitably propelled outward by the system's centrifugal force. This drives the tornado's outer ring to spiral downward from the upper atmosphere in a funnel-like shape, accelerating from

a larger to a smaller vortex, thereby generating additional kinetic energy that surges toward the ground.

Scientists can model and design elliptical diagrams to formulate and solve problems.

By applying mathematics to sequentially multiply the magnitude of mass at that moment, the force, acceleration, time, geographical conditions, and the tools used, more energy is replicated. Then, by flexibly applying physical laws and equations, and using the circular logarithms taught by Professor Wang Yiping, calculations show that if the vortex shrinks by one full rotation from an altitude of 10,000 meters, the replicated energy causes the

rotational speed to increase by one unit. Alternatively, the larger the circle, the more energy is replicated as all things in the universe move downward, generating rotational wind forces capable of destroying or altering the form of objects on the ground. For instance, when an accelerating, centripetal vortex strikes the ground, the point of impact first marks the center of a single vortex rotation on the surface, then transforms into a "centrifugal vortex." force, propelling it upward to form the center of a vortex on the ground. As it bounces forward and falls, it transitions back into a "centripetal vortex," generating the wind force of another cyclone cluster and forming an increasingly smaller vortex circle on the ground, which then evolves into a cyclone cluster from the center of the vortex circle. When accelerated once more and propelled outward by centrifugal force, the reduced cyclonic force transforms into a gale-force wind sweeping toward the ground ahead.

If other objects are present within the tornado's vortex, they are accelerated by the "centripetal rotation", causing them to spiral ever tighter. When friction from the system's centrifugal force reaches its limit, high temperature and pressure are generated at the vortex's center, transforming the cyclonic mass into meteorite-like objects that crash into the ground. The sparks ignited by this violent impact also provide the chemical conditions for the creation of new matter in outer space. Alternatively, when that gas accelerates in a vortex from 10,000 meters above the ground, it forms a cyclone with winds exceeding Category 12. This inevitably shatters objects on the ground, cracks them open like artillery fire, or sweeps up massive boulders and other objects, carrying them away before dropping them

to the ground—much like tossing a toy. This, in turn, alters the dynamic environment on the ground.

Consequently, people observe two cyclone clusters in the sky

moving toward and away from each other: one formed by a centripetal vortex, and the other formed by centrifugal force generated by the system. This marks the birth of a complete tornado structure.

Of course, within the vast cavities of tornadoes—which can span hundreds or even thousands of kilometers in diameter—there are not just one or two small spherical clusters moving in orbit around each other. Consequently, certain small cyclonic clusters with significant mass inevitably collide with the centripetal flow of hot air, generating heat and electricity through friction. This causes water molecules to form at the boundary between hot and cold air, which are then replicated by the cyclonic forces into more spherical clusters of rain nuclei. On one hand, external water molecules convect toward the center of the rain-nucleus vortex. As they are spun out by the vortex, varying amounts of acid mist and rain are released into the upper atmosphere. The frigid upper atmosphere freezes and aggregates these into patches of ice of varying sizes, or transforms them into skies over torrential rain zones. Notably, the upper atmosphere over the oceans may also present the illusion of being completely cloudless.

Your aircraft must exercise extreme caution; under no circumstances should you fly toward the extreme point of the thermal boundary within a short period, to avoid triggering the formation of additional rain or freezing into ice at high altitudes. Even small ice fragments that have already formed are accelerating downward from altitudes of over 10,000 meters; often, by the time you notice them, it is already too late, and they may collide with your aircraft, leading to mechanical failures or even catastrophic crashes.

“Then how should we fly?”

“Your aircraft must closely monitor changes in high-altitude weather conditions over a short period. If possible, the best strategy is to fly over the area at a higher altitude.

**Alternatively, you can either reduce speed or avoid rapid climb to pass through. This will allow you to evade attacks from ice fields or water bodies.**

**“Why do we need to slow down or avoid rapid ascent?” “Because this region—specifically the upper atmosphere above 10,000 meters—it is the optimal zone for the formation of super-strong cyclones, which can evolve into hail or ice. This includes the force generated by your aircraft’s high-speed movement as it pushes forward into the upper atmosphere—it is not a rain zone. Just as**

**on the ground, when large-scale, powerful thermal currents rush toward an area of low pressure in the sky, the downward thrust at the boundary between hot and cold air causes water molecules to condense and form ice, resulting in stronger winds or rain falling to the earth.**

**Therefore, if you fly through this region at a reduced speed, or if your aircraft maneuvers in a serpentine pattern, the forward thrust generated by your aircraft will diminish. Consequently, the air ahead will not be converted into water, nor will it be frozen into ice by the extremely cold high-altitude weather. Of course, in severe high-altitude weather, more water has already been converted and frozen into ice, or a hurricane has already formed, accelerating downward from an altitude of 12,000 meters, inevitably colliding head-on with a rapidly ascending aircraft. Alternatively, the drag force generated when your aircraft turns around may pull the downward-plunging ice chunks, causing them to strike the aircraft or its components mid-air, resulting in a massive explosion or severe damage to both. Therefore, when you detect problems in the air, you must respond calmly. Otherwise, the time it takes to change course will be too slow to keep up with the downward acceleration of the ice chunks.**

**Additionally, if you are flying toward the South Pole, there is a centripetal force in the sky that can easily cause errors in**

your aircraft' s data. The above is provided for your reference only.

You see, in the vortex of a high-altitude tornado, air currents collide and generate heat, which condenses into water. condenses into hailstones and ice chunks, which are accelerated outward by centrifugal force. Unlike the cyclonic flow on the opposite side driven by centripetal force, the friction and compression here generate powerful chemical reaction waves. Alternatively, the small molecules within those cyclonic clusters may be transformed into electrons by centripetal force; when subjected to further friction and compression, they emit two blinding flashes of light. As the centripetal force and frictional force increase, one vortex is pushed farther away from the center. When the centripetal force and frictional force are weak, the vortices draw closer to one another, causing observers to perceive them as moving in an intelligent, alternating pattern of approaching and receding. When hot cyclonic clusters descend from high altitudes toward the ground and collide with dark matter such as ice or water droplets in the air, they first produce a flash of lightning, followed by a deafening clap of thunder. Because the Earth' s rotational speed is in the optimal position within the solar system, waves of rain and hail fall in certain regions along the path. This triggers a chemical reaction in the ground, resulting in a second leap.

In some low-lying areas, accumulated water forms rivers or oceans. The upper layer of the river surface is illuminated by sunlight, causing the water temperature to rise. As the hot air currents move downward rapidly on one side and upward more slowly on the other, they swirl into small cyclonic spheres, which then evolve into cell walls. The hot air currents outside these cellular bodies accelerated their vortex toward the cold center, spinning into cyclonic clusters and evolving into more small cells. Within

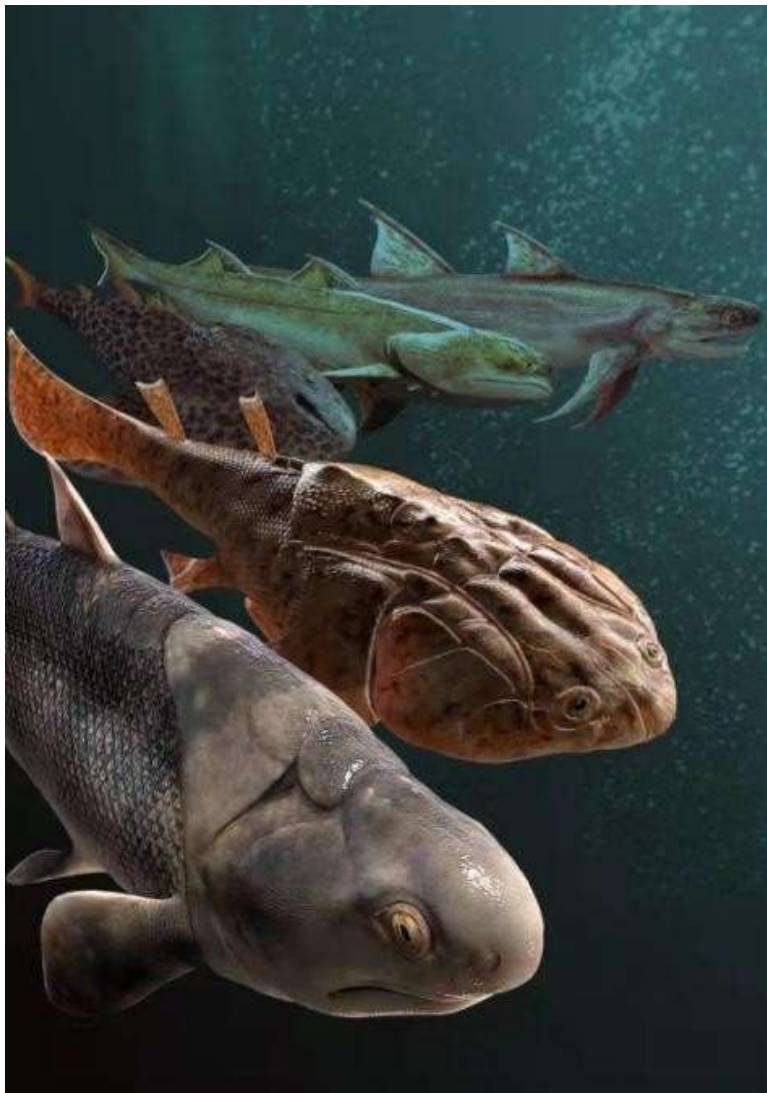
the cavities of these small cells, the centripetal airflow formed an eccentric cavity field. Consequently, hot air currents from the water's surface continuously flow into the low-temperature, eccentric cavity field within the cell. This generates heat through friction and compression with the hot air currents, causing the cell to synthesize more elements and proteins, which develop into internal organs, gradually growing and evolving into a small fish. Fish with lower jaws longer than upper jaws and mouths slightly upturned—such as peacock cichlids, black marbles, red swords, other swordtail species, zebrafish, and similar species—are predominantly surface-dwelling fish. Their mouth structure is suited for feeding on food in the upper water column and at the surface. Arowanas also belong to this category of surface-dwelling fish.

The waste products from these fish sink to the riverbed. This, in turn, gives rise to numerous microorganisms in the water. As the warm air currents from the water's surface swirl toward the cooler depths of the riverbed, they form cells in the middle layer of the river, evolving into mid-water fish. Most ornamental fish are mid-water or lower-mid-water species, such as angelfish, rainbow angelfish, and mapfish—including tetras, red-nosed tetras, and grass carp—all fall into this category. The waste products of surface-dwelling fish give rise to numerous plankton, which serve as a nutrient source for mid-water fish. Consequently, mid-water fish have a richer diet and grow larger, thereby generating income for fishermen.

When warm air currents at the water's surface move to the bottom of a large river and swirl into small cells, they evolve into bottom-dwelling fish—such as scavengers and various loaches—most of which are active in the bottom layer of the water column. This includes carp, crucian carp, black carp, and loaches. Their mouth structure is exactly the opposite of that of

**surface-dwelling fish:** the upper jaw is longer than the lower jaw, and the mouth faces downward, making them well-suited for grazing on food in the riverbed sediment, such as leftover bait and algae. Deep-sea fish, on the other hand, inhabit depths of 100 meters or more. They are characterized by large mouths, large eyes, and bioluminescent organs in certain parts of their bodies. These bioluminescent organs are used both to attract prey and to attract mates.

Deep-sea fish have developed these unique adaptations during evolution to survive in environments characterized by extreme pressure, extreme cold, and darkness. The habitats of deep-sea fish are among the most unique in the world. Because competition in the deep sea is not as intense as along the coast or in shallow waters,





many primitive species have survived to this day. The most significant deep-sea fish groups include deep-sea anglerfish, viperfish, and hairy-mouthed fish. This leads to the principles of "big fish eat small fish," "shrimp eat mud," "survival of the fittest," "survival of the adaptable," and the flourishing of the Way of Harmony.

Because deep-sea fish are rich in polyunsaturated fatty acids and minerals—such as trace elements like calcium, iron, and zinc—as well as vitamins A, B, and C, they offer the following health benefits: reducing the risk of heart disease. The omega-3 fatty acids in deep-sea fish can effectively help manage coronary heart disease and lower cholesterol. The polyunsaturated fatty acids in deep-sea fish remove cholesterol from blood vessels, thereby reducing cholesterol levels in the body and lowering blood lipid levels. These polyunsaturated fatty acids can sustainably lower blood lipid levels and promote brain health. The DHA found in deep-sea fish promotes healthy vision development, as well as brain development and cognitive function. It is also an essential nutrient for the growth of the nervous system, aiding in development and boosting immunity. Deep-sea fish meat is rich in protein and minerals, providing balanced nutrition that helps regulate the body's water balance, boosts immunity, and aids in wound recovery and healing. It also helps reduce the harmful effects of smoking.

Moreover, the hot summer weather causes droughts in certain regions; riverbeds crack open, and the stench of dead fish rises into the sky. As the air currents rise and swirl downward in the atmosphere, they evolve into various birds. Their droppings scatter across the land, giving rise to numerous symbiotic organisms.

As the forces of ground displacement, pushing, and friction continue to intensify, and under the combined effects of acidic

water, wind, and sunlight, parts of the ground transform into soil. In other areas, the Earth's core pushes and grinds against the mantle plates, causing year-round high temperatures in the equatorial regions. Additionally, in some areas, intense thermal air currents swirl around the surface, shattering rocks into small pebbles, and the surface evolved into a desert.

At the center of the atmospheric circulation over the desert, much like the eye of a tornado, the air is calm and still. After evolving over several centuries, a beautiful, habitable environment with water sources emerged.

These uneven surfaces, along with the increasing bodies of water and the pungent odor of dead fish rising into the air, generate cyclonic currents of varying intensities, which in turn create and evolve primitive substances or seeds for the terrestrial environment. For instance, as the surface is constantly subjected to the refining forces of the sun and moon's essence and the celestial dew, a third leap occurs. The combined forces of different elements produced results of a different nature. First, within the centripetal motion of various cyclonic vortices, these elements were spun into cyclonic clusters. Just as the hot air currents moving toward the center of the void, when pushed, rubbed, and heated to their limit, transform into hydrogen and water vapor at that location, so too, through repeated accelerations, pushing, rubbing, and heating within the cyclonic circulation, high temperatures and pressures are generated. This further transforms the air within the void into more new small molecules, which are replicated by the vortex system into advanced spherical eggs—that is, they evolve into individual primitive seeds.

At this stage, whether on a macroscopic or microscopic scale, and whether as individuals or groups, these primordial seeds move in accordance with the elliptical pattern, much like a figure-eight motion. For instance, at the center of a primordial seed cavity,

when subjected to the centripetal rotation of water or temperature-driven air currents from the outside, the seed begins to expand. Turbulent flow then arises at the waist of the seed, accelerating from higher to lower elevations. This pushes the edge of the seed downward, forcing out a fork. Small molecules on the fork are drawn into the center of the cavity by the vortex-like airflow and expelled by the system's centrifugal force, causing an elliptical root to grow on this side first. With the elliptical root, a system capable of self-replicating energy is established. When small molecules in the root cavity are expelled by the system's centrifugal force, the vortex moves slightly farther to the other side, where another elliptical root also grows.

For example, when water vapor entering the center of the root cavity is expelled by centrifugal force, if the heat generated by the friction between the two is minimal, the converted water merely provides the energy required for synthesis within the seed. When the friction generates significant heat, the water vapor in the seed's cavity is converted into solid-state small molecules under high temperature and pressure. With the conversion of more small molecules, they are spun by the system into new clusters resembling small cellular structures, which are then arranged by centrifugal force into another layer of cavity walls. This mechanism solves the problem of insufficient water and nutrient supply from the soil, enabling the seed to play a more exemplary role in future nuclear fusion-style development.

For instance, within the central cavity of the seed, the airflow is transformed by the system's centrifugal force into a series of vortex arms, pushing the airflow toward the upper side of the seed's outer shell. This gives rise to a bud driven by centrifugal motion; within the cavity of this bud, high temperature and pressure are generated, converting the air into solid-state

**small molecules. Day by day, the bud grows into a leaf.**

**The airflow and small molecules within this leaf's half-side then undergo a centripetal vortex motion; as the airflow surges toward the other half, it is replicated by the vortex into another half-leaf. Evolving into a complete leaf generates greater force, leading to the growth of a branch. As the airflow rises around the branch, a new bud forms. When the airflow at the center of this bud surges toward the opposite side of the branch and moves upward, another bud emerges. Due to the conservation of energy, the leaves formed from these vortex-generated buds do not occupy symmetrical positions.**

**Consequently, the seed evolves into a tree trunk. This trunk has a capacity ten thousand times that of a leaf, a thousand times that of a small twig, and a hundred times that of a branch.**

**Moreover, as the tree trunk moves in a funnel-shaped,**

**centripetal vortex, it generates centripetal force to overcome the constraints of energy conservation. The tree trunk, along with its branches and leaves, grows in size, thickness, and height simultaneously through a process akin to nuclear fusion. [See the first image below, which shows the internal eccentric vortex cavity structure of a fruit, replicating more energy to form centrifugal spiral arms. The other image depicts leaves on a frost-covered branch, which, following the six distinct energy force fields illustrated in the elliptical diagram, grow and arrange themselves in a cyclical evolutionary movement—progressing from small to large and then sequentially from large to small.]**



**This approach grants the seed centripetal force, thereby**

resolving the issue of insufficient water and small molecule supply during major growth from the roots in the soil. It also reserves more energy for future growth. For instance, the branches and leaves replicate excess small molecules through vortex replication, which are then stored by centrifugal force in the eccentric cavity fields on the branch stems. Through compression and friction, water molecules are transformed; within these cavities, additional water molecules are converted into gases of varying densities by different high temperatures. Since these cavities contain at least five or six distinct density levels, the thermal air currents circulating through these zones evolve into blossoms of varying sizes, forming circular patterns. When oxygen and carbon combine, they form carbon dioxide. Furthermore, through various combinations, oxygen, hydrogen, and carbon can form the organic compounds essential to our lives, such as sucrose, alcohol, and starch—common substances we use daily. Thus, a variety of flowers emerge, each with distinct scents and colors. Just as popcorn produced at different temperatures varies in color and aroma,

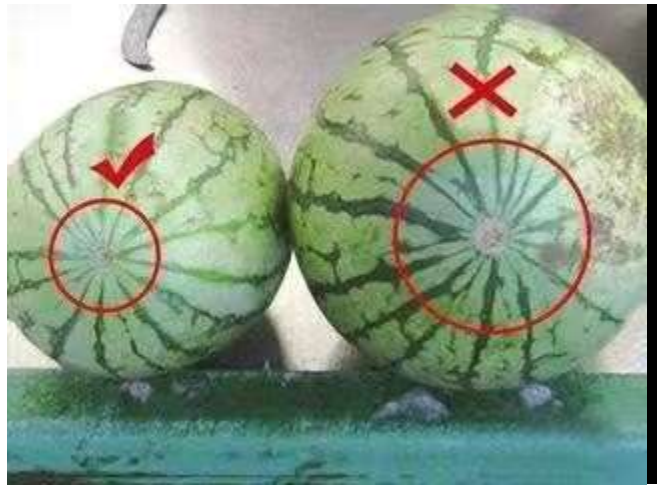
These floral scents and colors diffuse into the air, where they combine with surrounding air and small molecules. As they swirl downward in the atmosphere, they give rise to different species of insects—or colorful butterflies—which either pollinate the flowers blooming on the plant stems to produce more fruit, or cause damage to the flowers.

For instance, there are several watering methods passed down among rural folk: pouring rice-washing water on loofahs; using car exhaust fumes to promote flowering and fruiting; feeding leeks a mixture of white vinegar and water to make their stems sturdy and prevent root rot; watering tomatoes with brown sugar water to yield a bountiful harvest; adding cola to green beans to make them grow long, tender, and bend the trellis; and sprinkling beer on leafy

greens to make their leaves lush and vibrant.

When more small molecules are replicated within the flower's pistil, they spiral and evolve into fruit. Since the voids within the flower and fruit possess varying magnitudes of force across different force fields, the small molecules within these fields also accelerate their growth. This results in the formation of more primitive single-celled plant seeds, and there are now energy differences in their ability to propagate and continue the lineage. Just as a mother gives birth to nine children, some descendants are strong, some are weak, and some cannot reproduce. Therefore, some seeds, if they exist within a centripetal force field, will be unable to bear fruit in the future or may not even germinate.

Watermelons also have male and female varieties





From then on, the seeds resolved the issue of replenishing the energy required for their development and evolution through the cycle of life and death. Of course, as they grew, their branches and leaves—swaying in the wind and shaking the tree trunks, and being bathed by rain and soil—also helped the plants grow faster. Just as those primitive plant seeds were constantly subjected to the combined forces of nature—such as the intensifying movements of wind and water—they also underwent natural selection and cross-pollination. Within the hollow cavities of the seeds' oval spheres, species and hybrids with greater developmental potential or new synthetic capabilities evolved. For instance, air currents driven by centripetal force formed concave female fruits, while centrifugal air currents created convex male fruits. The earth evolved various plants; dark, damp environments gave rise to mosses and similar plants, while the tropics produced rainforests. Later, under conditions of high mass, accelerated by compression and friction that generated higher temperatures, chemical reactions occurred, transforming solid matter into liquid-like physical forms. As these evolved into higher-level hybrids, structural forms were established. For

instance, when the mass of hot air currents and vortices was immense, it led to the evolution of an eccentric structural system within cells, resulting in the emergence of dinosaurs and mammoths. The Arctic's extreme cold gave rise to polar bears, while temperate and humid regions produced pandas, and rivers and lakes fostered the evolution of numerous aquatic species.

However, these large animals—especially dinosaurs—did not civilizedly create means of production or material resources. Instead, relying on the law of the jungle, they indiscriminately devoured and slaughtered all marine life. Due to this massive hunting, marine resources could not keep up with demand. These dinosaurs then evolved to hunt innocent creatures on land; a single large dinosaur could consume as many as several of the fiercest tigers in a single day. The resentment, anger, and spirit of the various animals killed by them were in motion. As they entered the dinosaurs' cells, the rotation accelerated, and the friction and heat generated increased. Over time, this led to an imbalance with more males and fewer females, causing the dinosaur population to naturally decline and eventually face extinction. In the short term, the high-fat, high-cholesterol gases accumulated within their bodies were burned into microscopic particles by the intense heat generated from the increasing cellular friction and compression. This left the cells as hollow shells, which were then drawn into the system's eccentric void field by the centrifugal force of the genes, replicating hollow cells lacking mass. Consequently, the quality of proteins produced by other organs





within the dinosaurs' bodies also declined day by day, leading to various chronic diseases. Conditions such as cancer or plagues accelerated the dinosaurs' natural extinction.

Furthermore, the gases emitted from uneaten carcasses or excrement polluted the mountain ranges and the seabed, providing the conditions for synthesis and transformation necessary to foster the continuous emergence of higher-level new entities and species. Look at the mountainous regions and seabeds around the world, especially near the equator; their convection and circulation, light and dark, cold and hot, dry and wet, polluted and unpolluted environments, as well as the interactions of the metabolic processes of various animals and plants, all involve significant and extensive air currents.

In particular, organic matter within the mixed gas currents of the Earth's inner core, driven by thermal energy from the fissures of tectonic plates at the base of mountains—much like an inverted tornado column—is continuously and controlled in a spiraling ascent through the crust. As it rises, it incorporates substances flowing from the mountains into the fissures, combined with hydrogen, oxygen, carbon monoxide, and other substances and energy required for the origin of life—which have accumulated in rock cavities—are ultimately unified within elliptical cyclones. These are replicated by the vortices into spherical cells, which

later form cyclone clusters within the spherical cells across different regions. Through systematic transformation, the forces generated by compression, friction, and evolution create high temperatures and pressures, evolving small molecules and other substances.

For example, the human body is a living organism composed of carbon (carbon-based), acid (acid-based), and calcium (calcium-based) cells.

The acid-based component is the molecular or elemental foundation for the evolution and development (dual evolution) of protein cells—that is, living cells. Next comes the sugar-based component, which can only undergo evolution through a process of gradual refinement and convergence.

Carbon-based (including): carbon-based, acid-based, calcium-based, silicon-based, sulfur-based, zinc-based, boron-based, crystal-based, selenium-based, phosphorus-based, sugar-based, iron-based, copper-aluminum-based, salt-based, etc., along with the co-existing rare earth family. All of the above are merely a part of the carbon-based group. The rare earth family is primarily stored in brain cells and consists of the molecules and elements that create and form intelligence and IQ. The total content of metallic components in the human body is approximately 5 grams or less, with iron (in cells) accounting for a significant proportion. The nervous system and memory functions rely on the combined efficiency of metallic components and the rare earth family.

If it were a carbon-based life form, it could only resemble snails, worms, or earthworms—perhaps not even matching ants or insects, let alone rodents, cats, or dogs.

The Milky Way is a multi-arm spiral galaxy. In terms of nuclear mass, nuclear density, and volume, stars like the Sun rank approximately fifth in the Milky Way.

The material and physical properties of life, living organisms, and life species on Earth are directly proportional to those of the Sun and Earth (the Theory of Life-Physics Proportionality). In the Milky Way, Earth-like life forms can only emerge where Sun-like stars exist.

This is the research of a Guangdong-based Zhihu user known as Master Jinshui. The unique evolutionary process he discovered has solved the problem of how humans evolved.

Due to the varying qualities of force fields within the unified elliptical field of a cell—such as the six small cavities in a tomato versus the five in a melon—these structures can generate force and store more seeds for reproduction. Consequently, the centripetal vortex of airflow within the body generates numerous cells, and the qualities manifested across different force fields give rise to the five viscera and six organs with their distinct functions. When the vortex of airflow bursts out from one side of the cell membrane, it evolves into an arm driven by centrifugal force. When the centrifugal vortex moves to the other side of the cell membrane, it evolves into an arm driven by centripetal force. With these two hands, the organism can solve the problems of eating and acquiring more energy for sustenance.

The hot airflow accelerating downward from one side of the cell's midsection also varies in strength—strong, medium, or weak. This evolves into a leg and foot with joints, though this leg is slightly shorter and smaller. When the airflow on the other side is flung outward by centrifugal force and swirls, it evolves into another leg and foot, also equipped with joints that allow bending, and this leg is slightly longer and larger. This enhances the ability to address the need for greater energy replenishment.

But you must be careful, especially when walking long distances on unfamiliar roads at night—whether running errands or heading home. These two legs of different lengths will cause

you to walk in endless elliptical circles, preventing you from reaching your intended destination. This isn't because you've been bewitched; rather, it's because the longer leg moves faster while the shorter one moves slower, causing you to walk in circles.

Furthermore, through the pores in the cell walls, various external nutrients move inward. These organs gradually convert and replicate them into more energy and small molecules, which are stored within the cells and the body. Thus, day by day and year by year, they evolve, growing larger and taller, ultimately evolving into advanced intelligent beings with different skin colors—the bipedal human species. If the mass of the vortex within the fertilized egg is particularly large, it may even result in multiple births. For example, if an egg is located on one side of the uterine cavity, the airflow and small molecules move downward, accelerated by centrifugal force on that side of the environment, resulting in the evolution of a robust male. Conversely, within the uterine cavity, the upward movement of airflow consumes more energy. As the airflow swirls in a centripetal vortex, it can only replicate female twins.

Similarly, the centrifugal vortex of air rushing rapidly from underground rock crevices to the surface evolves into men who are tall and strong. The centripetal vortex of air emerging slowly from rock crevices to the surface evolves into the uterus; women are short and plump. They give birth to several boys and girls. It is like a machine that produces a variety of different products.

If these men lack proper moral education or legal restraint, they become arrogant and indulgent, letting their nature run wild. They view virgins as the celestial nectar of heaven, and every man longs to taste a sip; the passionate young wife is like red wine—once you take a sip, you crave another; the romantic woman is like a bottle of grape wine, sweet from the moment it touches

your lips to the depths of your heart; A beautiful mistress is like beer—refreshing and satisfying to the palate; yet they treat their own wives as if they were baijiu, forcing down that bitter drink even when they know it's undrinkable; and though they know a prostitute is like counterfeit alcohol, men still secretly spend money and take risks to indulge in this wicked habit of drinking.

“Excuse me, sir, why do humans only have two nipples on their chests?” When the airflow is pushed upward from the navel by centrifugal force to a certain point, it lacks sufficient energy to continue, so it forms its own “kingdom.” As it continuously moves in a centripetal vortex around one side of the chest, it replicates several cells, which accumulate to form a small cluster that grows into a nipple. The air currents inevitably enter the vortex at the center of this small cluster, are flung outward by centrifugal force, and move forward to a specific position on the opposite side of the chest. Lacking energy to sustain themselves, they descend while performing a centripetal vortex rotation, causing the air currents to replicate into a cluster of cells. As centrifugal force replicates more and more cells, they are gathered and stacked to form a slightly larger nipple.

“Then why are women's breasts large?” Because during the evolution of women, when the airflow moved upward from the gravitational field toward the centripetal force field, it consumed a great deal of energy while generating little energy through self-replication. This resulted in two instances of stagnation and rippling, which generated a centripetal vortex through centripetal force, thereby evolving into true women. Just as on Earth, whenever tectonic plates move to a position just before dawn, due to insufficient energy for upward movement, a sudden pause occurs, resulting in a brief darkness. Then, driven by the

system's inertial force, the plates are pushed and rubbed together to generate electricity, converting into photons—so that as soon

as day breaks, it becomes bright.

Therefore, when the air currents within cells move in a centripetal vortex and are continuously replicated into many cells, the vortex codes within the cells evolve into a female physique that is shorter than a man's and has slightly larger hips and buttocks. This is because the vortex forces emitted by certain cells possess greater upward momentum, and while the chest area

is broad, the higher the movement goes, the more force is consumed. Moreover, because humans walk upright, the upward surge of a woman's air flow slows down as if pausing to accumulate energy, creating ripples—a warning to men: do not provoke a woman. When she gets angry, her centrifugal force shoots skyward, and she may even beat you soundly before her rage subsides. Then, the centripetal force returns to punish you.

Their cells multiply, forming centripetal vortices and accumulating within centrifugal spirals, enlarging the upper chest to evolve into a pair of large breasts.

Hey, God was truly inspired—solving the practical issues of

a mother's milk supply and a baby's ability to nurse, while also adding a beautiful sight to life. Those voluptuous, beautiful women exude a richer fragrance and enjoy the wealth their wealthy husbands earn, ensuring they are well-fed and well-dressed. Yet they also bear the great responsibility of bearing and raising more fine children.

Of course, women with gentle dispositions tend to experience more happiness and joy in life.

Notice how one nostril exhaled when it exerted centrifugal force, while the other inhaled when it performed a centripetal movement. If humans weren't upright and our bodies weren't flat—but instead had rounded spines like animals or plants and crawled—the energy replicated from the body's internal qi at this point would be even greater, allowing us to grow rows of nipples

**just like animals.**

Moreover, during the hot summer months, droughts form in certain regions, causing riverbeds to crack open. The stench of dead fish rises into the sky, and the hot air currents in the high-pressure zone above spiral downward toward the low-pressure zone on the ground. Typically, after about forty minutes of swirling from top to bottom, they evolve into large red-headed flies with an unusually large number of eyes, their bodies hairless like fish. However, the energy of the rice pot lid is weaker, so it only produces small flies, and their color is also dull.

You see, the gases exhaled by various animals and plants, or the gases produced by their decay after death, all rise toward the high-pressure zone in the sky, then swirl downward in a centripetal vortex to form a cyclone cluster. External hot air currents spiral inward toward the center of the cyclone's low-temperature cavity. There, they are swirled into smaller cyclones, which are stored in an eccentric cavity field. A centrifugal force pushes these small cyclones outward one by one, they collide with the incoming hot air currents, generating friction that creates high temperature and pressure. This process transforms each small cyclone into proteins and internal organs, giving rise to birds capable of flight.

As the hot air currents from the bird's five internal organs spread out

and burst through the shell, they evolved into a centrifugal fork at the lower edge of the spiral. Since the air currents within the fork also moved in a cyclical, regenerative pattern, claws grew on the legs and feet. Regardless of their number, these claws evolved from small to large in response to the magnitude of the forces acting upon them; as energy became insufficient, they evolved from large to small, causing the claws on the feet to grow day by day. This means that no two claws are the same length. When the air within the vortex rushes toward the other side in a centripetal rotation, an elliptical leg also grows from small to large on that side. The numerous small cells replicated and stored within the claws and legs also vary in size.

At this point, the body absorbs external thermal air currents,

which swirl inward to form a vortex. This air is then expelled by centrifugal force through cavities in the shell, evolving into wings. When the air moves toward the other side, it creates a centrifugal rotating arm, evolving into wings with slightly less energy. At this point, the air radiating from the bird's interior bursts out of every tiny pore on its skin, swirling into feathers. Because each wing generates significant force during flapping, the air expelled from the body forms feathers that aid in flight, rather than mere down that offers no such assistance.



with high  
rising to  
humans, wi



Eagles  
penetrates everywhere, air  
with low energy  
small birds. Just as



create and invent a wide array of essential goods and consumer products with differing energy levels to meet people' s diverse needs.

Of course, birds with feathers do not have eyes composed of numerous small eyes like flies. Just as some of us, when we work on an empty stomach, generate low-quality energy that easily evolves into small molecules within the body, leading to the formation of kidney stones and gallstones. However, the vital energy of individuals possessing great talent and merit surges toward high-pressure zones in the atmosphere. When it cannot ascend further, it spirals downward from the sky, forming a vortex cluster. Within this vortex cluster, high temperatures and pressures are generated, transforming the vortex and water molecules into stone-like objects. These often differ slightly from the stones and meteorites formed in the cosmos. They are shaped like jujubes or pears—elliptical. Spheres created by centripetal force are small, while those created by centrifugal force are large. Some contain a central core, which gives them greater spiritual vitality; they can even foreshadow future events, such as auspicious signs or misfortunes.

In other words, whether the air currents you generate—regardless of their size, strength, or nature—are directed toward a high-pressure zone in the sky, once they reach a certain level of energy, they will continuously replicate the vortex of that high-pressure zone to generate even more energy. This may result in a massive rockfall or an earthquake of magnitude 7 or higher in a corresponding low-pressure zone on the ground, or it may send a subtle message to a specific person. You must prepare in advance according to the different messages conveyed by Heaven' s will, prepare in advance. You must do more good deeds on Earth; do not quibble over trivial matters, engage in verbal spats, or resort to armed conflict. When conflicts arise, both parties should strengthen dialogue and communication. Both sides must also

**cultivate a spirit of tolerance and practice empathy, so that major issues can be minimized and minor ones resolved. Otherwise, karmic retribution will inevitably follow.**

**Perhaps the philosophy you learned in school was still rooted in the debate over whether spirit or matter is primary. Once on Earth, you may still be intoxicated by the glitz and glamour, or by the allure of wealth and sensual pleasures, leading you to lose your senses—such as robbing a bank or committing other evils. Though you might gain something in the moment, Heaven is a system that replicates energy; one day, the law or ethics will ruthlessly destroy you, harming both others and yourself.**

**I especially hope that you scientists, upon arriving on Earth, will earnestly experiment, reflect, and draw your own conclusions across all fields. For example, if you scatter feces on the yellow earth of the wilderness in summer and let it bake under the sun for several days, you will see that the thermal vortex generated by the feces on the ground moves in a planar elliptical, centripetal spiral—transforming and replicating more energy to fuel development.**

**This is unlike the thermal vortexes found in ground fissures or underwater crevices, which are constantly stretched straight by controlled forces, moving upward in an elliptical, flattened arc toward the low-pressure surface. Moreover, they are continuously influenced by various organic substances flowing into the fissures from the ground. Through repeated synthesis with these thermal currents, they accelerate their transformation into liquid or protein, ultimately evolving into something as beneficial as a human being.**

**Therefore, the hot air currents generated by sunlight transforming feces evolve within a few days into a different type of crawling, black, hard-shelled insect, which can only be used as medicine to treat intractable and severe illnesses.**

Observe: within the earth's fissures, as these vortexes are constantly fed by a vast influx of organic matter, the vortex currents repeatedly absorb diverse information. The resulting human beings possess greater wisdom, such as the ability to speak various languages. Of course, if an individual's evolution is interrupted by a lack of certain organic compounds needed for synthesis, that person may be born mute.

Because they possessed this "qi" and had formed living organisms with systematic structures, the airflow entering the heart was replicated by centripetal vortex forces to produce more white blood cells. Through centrifugal forces that pushed, squeezed, and frictioned them, these white blood cells were transformed into red blood cells. As they were expelled from the heart and accelerated, the movement of life evolved. The two opposing forces of genetic movement act like rotating arms, self-replicating to generate more energy to sustain human survival and address related issues. It is only through the union of two different genders—male and female—that children are born and raised, ultimately ensuring that the energy set in motion remains constant and endures for eight generations. This is also why issues such as birth, aging, sickness, and death arise in the process.

"Dear Sir, the more you speak, the more confused I become. Since God created humans, and in old age they work little and consume little energy—and even eat more nutritious food to replenish themselves—how could death possibly occur?"

"This young lady asks the right question: why does death still occur? They take in the air they breathe and the nutritious food they eat; cells are busy replicating, genes are busy replicating, and even the testicles are busy replicating and storing energy. The cells and small molecules produced through this replication are stored within the body, enabling people to grow taller and become smarter. However, the body's various systems, such as the

blood vessels, cannot store such a large number of small molecules. Moreover, young people often fall ill and run fevers, which burn the body's energy into small molecules. As these accumulate within the body, they consume more blood, slowing its circulation and causing various health problems to arise.

Especially as people age, various body parts—such as the skin—shrink, lose elasticity, and age. This blocks the flow of external qi through the skin's pores to the heart and lungs, while the carbon dioxide toxins produced internally struggle to be expelled through the pores in a timely manner. Additionally, as people age, they tend to shrink in height, further increasing the force required to circulate qi and blood. Therefore, as people age

and their qi becomes insufficient, death is inevitable—though extending one's lifespan is possible.

Consider how wise trees are, growing for thousands of years. As their trunks grow thicker and taller, their systems continuously extend through branches and leaves to expand their capacity. Moreover, they never greedily consume more nutrients; instead, they rely solely on their roots to absorb a small amount of moisture and small molecules from the soil, using these to replicate energy for survival, development, and longevity.

Moreover, despite enduring extreme cold and heat and the disruptions of nature, they never resent the impermanence of life, nor do they shorten their own lifespan. When they realize that their quality continues to decline after each transformation, and that replicating more energy cannot resolve the issue of expanding system capacity, the number of cells replicated within the system begins to decrease. By reducing the number of cells, toxic gases such as carbon dioxide can be promptly diffused and expelled through the pores. This process effectively eliminates useless, aged, and diseased cells, thereby expanding system capacity and significantly extending the tree's lifespan by many years.

Thus, the intelligent early humans on Earth, driven by these two forces, continuously progressed toward spiritual and material civilization, creating new forms of labor—such as agriculture—to acquire more material resources and extend their lives. They also constantly invented tools and weapons to eliminate the dinosaurs. However, these people were still completely naked, covering their bare bodies only with leaves or animal skins as they searched for food and interacted with one another. They showed no hostility toward us; in fact, they seemed somewhat friendly, as if they were always observing our clothing and appearance.

If Earth were suddenly struck by extreme heat, it would be a good thing if the dinosaurs were the first to perish. However, I fear that these creatures might evolve and reappear once the heat subsides. Moreover, when faced with short-term, sudden heat waves, dinosaurs would immediately seek refuge—diving into water or hiding in caves—so it is unlikely that all dinosaurs across the globe would become extinct at once. In this scenario, humans on Earth would not be the threat; the dinosaurs would be.

I have made comprehensive preparations and arrangements in all these areas, and I have instructed you to bring some medication to ensure they never reappear. Furthermore, we scientists have applied the principle of bio-mimicry to create a self-propelled technology that counteracts energy consumption. We have developed a self-propelled machine—also known as a perpetual motion machine—which harnesses the combined force of a systematic assembly to generate additional power for use on Earth. The machine has a simple structure, wide applicability, causes no environmental pollution, is easy to operate and maintain, and consumes no external energy. In the future, you can install it on machinery requiring power, replacing engines and electric motors that rely on external energy sources.

Now, go to Earth with confidence; from now on, Earth is our

home. The wise ones who have gone to Earth first to lay the groundwork are all the most accomplished and outstanding scientists and explorers in various fields of our society today. "At the same time, you have brought our most advanced instruments and equipment to Earth for use. Our Young Marshal will oversee the development of Earth's biological resources," he said, pointing casually. "This wise woman is named Cheng Shizhen; she specializes in biological and genetic engineering research. Her husband, Shi Wu, focuses on high-energy physics and electronic engineering."

Everyone followed his gesture. Standing 180 centimeters tall, with jet-black hair framing a pair of thick-browed, large eyes, and a high nose, he had a mouth that didn't speak much, but when he smiled, two dimples appeared—a handsome face. He stood at the very front of the group with his wife, holding their luggage, waiting to hear the address.

"Wise ones, you must maintain the spirit of hard work, solidarity, and ambition that you demonstrated on the planet Maya. You must also shed those traits of indiscipline and immorality—that tendency to rely solely on bravado and a combative nature. For those with knowledge will see your self-centered, insatiable greed. Just as others always think someone else's wife is better, you may even resort to verbal slander to bask in the glory of others' achievements or seize what isn't yours. Humans on Earth detest such behavior most of all. Once you arrive there, religious issues should be addressed first by those knowledgeable

in religious culture. If there are conflicts between tribes, first identify the root cause of the conflict, engage in open and honest communication with them, adhere to principles on major issues and show grace on minor ones, and work to ease and resolve the conflict. If the issue is economic, those with practical experience should first understand the crux of the problem, and through mutual compromise

and coordination, help both sides reach a resolution. If the issue stems from a misunderstanding of culture, resolve it through the power of culture to unify their thinking. Once on Earth, the two of you will be responsible for dividing the tasks and carrying out all work. You must develop Earth to be even more advanced than we are now in the shortest possible time! Wise ones, do you have the resolve?"

"We do!" everyone shouted in unison.

"Good, that is the resolve we need. Also remember that once you arrive on Earth, you may lose your hearing and be unable to recall our culture—a devastating blow to your wisdom. But do not fear. Your souls already hold a wealth of wisdom. When you undertake this noble mission and strive through hardships, you are actually unlocking the wisdom deep within your souls. At the most difficult or dangerous moments, miracles will appear to assist you, or to inspire and guide you on what to do next—and all will be well.

"To the wise ones who have not yet departed, please ensure public order and protect the elderly and children. The first group of 999 people will board two spacecraft; the other two will carry equipment and supplies. Boarding begins now."

At the airport, the sages bustled about boarding the ships with a sense of both urgency and order. Soon, the two spacecraft filled with scientists took off, and one could see the remaining sages waving colorful flags to bid them farewell.

Suddenly, two young men wielding neutron guns rushed to the side of the ship being loaded with cargo and shouted, "They are the Wise Ones—are we not? "If we' re going, we' re all going together; if we' re going to die, we' ll die together!" With that, they crawled toward the cabin with their guns raised. Some of the Sages trying to escape followed suit, and instantly the scene descended into chaos. Shouting and cursing mingled in a cacophony as the cabin door was blocked by the surging crowd, preventing

supplies from entering. Though the police made every effort, it was to no avail; they could not drive away the Wise Ones climbing into the hold. Seeing that the armed youths had already entered the hatch, the elderly Wise One ordered the police to open fire and suppress the crowd. Bullets whistled toward the two young men. One was hit and fell, still clutching his neutron gun and firing back frantically, while the other dodged and weaved, returning fire. The gunfire was intense. Hearing the shots, the Sages who had been trying to escape scattered in all directions.

Suddenly, the air raid sirens began to wail frantically, and a voice boomed over the loudspeakers: "The planet Unstar has fifteen minutes left before colliding with the planet Maya. Everyone, please evacuate immediately."

The elderly man who had been seated on the podium rushed to the command screen and gave the order: "Fire!" Instantly, atomic launchers from all directions fired a barrage of new-generation weapons into the sky to intercept the dying planet. In the blink

of an eye, nearly 80 billion tons of super-matter missiles struck the planet's surface, sending dust billowing as they carved out craters. The planet trembled slightly before hurtling even more fiercely toward Yama.

"Oh no, get out of the way!" The monkeys screamed in terror as they watched. A deafening explosion followed, and as the two planets collided, a sea of fire engulfed the sky, with dust drifting through the cosmos. From that moment on, all civilization on Yama Star vanished from the solar system.

The Old Man of the North turned off the player and said with a heavy heart, "Look, wasn't that scene just now tragic and terrifying?"

The little monkeys were stunned by what they had just witnessed. It took them a long while to come to their senses, and they stammered, "Terrifying... truly terrifying!"



**"Let me tell you, many wise people today are deeply concerned about the future of Earth and the Moon, fearing that the tragedy we just saw might repeat itself. That's why some have suggested we cast off the Moon and have Earth escape the solar system in six stages. Do you think we can just ignore our familial ties like that?"**

**"That's out of the question. On my journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, I was driven to the brink of madness by my master, the ever-so-polite Tang Sanzang, and was even cast out by him. Yet whenever I heard my master was in trouble, I never failed to come to his rescue,"** Wukong declared with unwavering resolve.

**"Exactly. As a Chinese person, you embody Chinese traditions and virtues. It's precisely because I've been so deeply influenced by Chinese moral culture that I came to Mount Huaguo to ask you, Old Sun, to come out of retirement once more. I know you've 'enlightened' yourself regarding right and wrong, success and failure, joy, anger, sorrow, pleasure, and worry—but why do you bear the surname Sun? Even ten thousand years from now, people will still praise you and call you 'the Boss.' "**

Wukong laughed: **"As long as others call me 'the boss,' I'll lose my head—I'll do as many good deeds for the people as I can, until my dying breath."**

**"Very well, Great Sage. Then please make a trip to the moon to resolve this issue first. We intend to use the moon as a laboratory to improve the lives of Earth's people in the future:**

**First, we must determine the exact cause of this strange glow and assess any potential harm it poses to Earth and the Moon in the future.**

**Second, we must explore the Moon's interior to understand its origin, the substances within it, and any chemical changes occurring there.**

**Third, determine whether we can accelerate the Moon's**

rotation. If it rotates faster, the atoms that have evolved on the Moon's surface will, under the influence of two opposing forces, collide, generate friction, produce heat and electricity, and increase the number of water molecules—allowing life to gradually evolve and give rise to all things. If we cannot accelerate the Moon's rotation, it will eventually lose its gravitational pull and violently collide with Earth. At that point, the civilizations of both Earth and the Moon will vanish from the solar system, and there will be no Mount Huaguo for you either."

Wukong interjected, "That's right—the Old Man of the North truly has my best interests at heart. This old monkey of mine must protect Mount Huaguo, my cash cow. Otherwise, I'll lose all my spiritual anchor, and my source of income will dry up."

Seeing that Wukong's words aligned with his own, the Old Man of the North continued, "You're quite right. As long as there's a glimmer of hope, we must do everything we can to preserve this precious land. Now, go to the Palace of Cold Light on the Moon

and find the Fairy Chang'e first. Ask her to help you think of another solution. Your journey ahead is long and arduous, and time is of the essence. Since your birth, the Earth's temperature has been steadily rising, and hundreds of thousands of species disappear every year. If we do not pay attention to the changes in the universe from this moment on, we will be failing our descendants."

"Old Man of the North, you know full well that I, Old Sun, am a rough-and-tumble fellow who only knows how to roughhouse—I don't know the first thing about scientific data." With that, Wukong spread his hands wide, looking utterly helpless.

"Grandpa, Grandpa!" A little monkey stepped forward and called out, "Why don't you bring along that poor scientist you're sponsoring? If there's anything you don't understand, wouldn't

it be better to just ask him?"

"Oh my, I almost forgot," Wukong slapped his forehead. "Right, right, right. Quick, bring that science nerd—that little fool—over here so I can test him first. Otherwise, I can't very well take along a useless piece of junk who's no match for me." A moment later, several little monkeys led in a middle-aged man of medium build, with a slightly hunched back, a lean frame,

and deep-set eyes that sparkled with intelligence. As soon as he entered, he asked, "Boss, what do you need me for?"

Wukong said, "This is the Old Man of the North Pole. He says there's a strange glow on the moon right now and asked me to go investigate and help cure it. I don't know the first thing about this stuff, but my little grandsons say you're knowledgeable, so I'm bringing you along. Are you willing to go?"

Ke Daizi first exchanged greetings with the Old Man of the North, then turned to Wukong and said, "You helped me when I was in my greatest need. There's a Chinese proverb that says, 'He who does not repay a kindness is no gentleman; he who does not avenge

a grudge is no man.' Today, even if I had to walk through fire and water, I would charge ahead without hesitation. Besides, this is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for my research. It's better to act than to dwell on it—I'll follow your every command."

"Good, with that assurance, things will be much easier. But I'd like to test you first to see if you can answer this." Wukong thought for a moment and said, "Earlier, the Old Man of the North Pole mentioned that if the Earth's temperature rises too much, even my Mount Huaguo won't be safe in the future. Is that correct?"

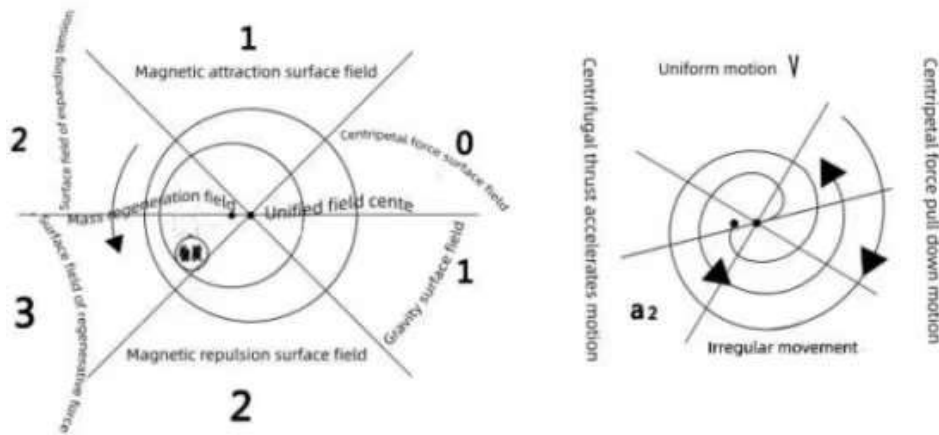
Kedaizi picked up the thread and said, "The Old Man of the North Pole is absolutely right. You must understand that the natural world is unified by the combined forces of irregularities—it is through this unity that movement, survival, and development occur.

If any one aspect becomes unbalanced, it disrupts the unity of motion within this unified field. Just as fruit trees require various conditions to grow, bloom, and bear fruit, if water is evaporated by high temperatures, where will the water come from to sustain the trees? At that point, the trees cannot grow, and your Flower-Fruit Mountain will become a barren wasteland.

As for why the Earth is warming today, there are various theories, and consequently, the problem cannot be addressed at its root. I believe the current rapid warming is primarily due to the fact that the climate has been in a warming phase for the past century,

In particular, the rapid development of industry—with humanity continuously inventing various high-speed vehicles such as ships, cars, trains, and airplanes—has generated immense pushing and frictional forces. The resulting forces, such as those that form massive waves in the ocean, along with the increasingly frequent air currents caused by human activities, all surge into the sky, forming phenomena like tornadoes, and have also intensified the occurrence of global epidemics during winter.

Ellipse movement trend chart (See the figure below)



These vortexes accelerate into the low-temperature,

eccentric cavities at the center of atoms, where they are replicated by the atom's eccentric system into small cyclonic clusters. Ejected from the center of these eccentric cavities by centrifugal force, they collide with incoming hot air currents and small molecules—such as matter or carbon dioxide—causing friction and heat generation. As a result, the temperature within atoms continuously rises, contributing to the rapid warming of the Earth's climate.

However, carbon dioxide emissions cannot keep pace with this rate of warming. Consider the Qinling Mountains in China, which have historically shaped the climate between the north and south. When hot air currents from the equator accelerate toward the mountains, they are indeed blocked by the mountain range. These hot air currents swirl in a centripetal vortex; as more atoms form, the hot air penetrates the atomic voids, intensifying collisions within the atoms and increasing the production of electron clusters, thereby evolving into a climate with distinct hot and cold conditions in the north and south.

For example, the nine planets in the solar system do not emit carbon dioxide, so their temperatures should not rise.

Of course, there are many factors contributing to global warming. This can be explained using the mathematics of elliptical diagrams in unified field theory.

1. As the Sun undergoes its entire life cycle of transformation, matter inevitably transitions from lower to higher forms. When an oxygen atom combines with a hydrogen atom to form a hydroxyl group, its energy is seventeen times that of a hydrogen atom. Simultaneously, these transformed substances, under the influence of gravitational, centripetal, and other forces, continuously accelerate in a vortex-like motion as they orbit toward the Sun's center. Just as a snowball gathers mass, these substances coalesce into spherical bodies such as sunspots, which

are then propelled outward from the center by centrifugal forces and accelerate. As they collide with matter moving toward the center, friction generates heat, raising temperatures even higher, and they accelerate toward the convection zone and the intermediate layer. Since sunspots accelerate downward from above, the greater their speed, the greater the resistance they encounter ahead. Consequently, sunspots accelerate in a periodic, centripetal, figure-eight-like orbit. When they reach the surface of the photosphere, they generate temperatures of 15 million degrees Celsius and provide the energy required for nuclear fusion.

When massive sunspots accelerate to the Sun's surface, they trigger smaller sunspots to form sunspots, inevitably leading to

a corresponding increase in the thermal energy released by the Sun. At the same time, during periods of peak sunspot activity, a phenomenon resembling "three Suns" may be observed. This could potentially cause a rise in temperatures on Earth.

Furthermore, as the Sun rotates on its tilted axis, the forces generated by friction and heat from this rotation vary significantly. For instance, when moving at a constant speed along the spiral arm, it produces the climate of early spring. When accelerating downward from the spiral arm, the friction and heat generate the intense heat of midsummer; irregular motion produces the conditions of late autumn; and when decelerating upward from below, it creates the extreme cold of midwinter. Therefore, over a cycle of approximately 200 million years, the Sun gradually moves away from the center of the Milky Way and accelerates outward along the spiral arms, causing its gravitational pull to gradually increase. Some flammable substances surrounding the Sun are captured by this gravitational force, replenishing the Sun's internal energy sources and inevitably leading to a corresponding increase in the thermal energy it releases.

The force of the Sun's rotation is actually quite similar to that of the Earth, generating more energy and driving its evolution. When the rotational speed on its surface increases, a fissure may form, and the far side of the Sun may resemble a dark night, occasionally experiencing "solar rain."

Our Earth is also a giant atom. On the side facing the Sun, the mantle plates are constantly subjected to friction and heat generated by the centrifugal force of the core pushing against them, as well as by the centripetal force of the small tectonic plates shifting on the crust. This friction transforms the hard rock at the contact points of the moving mantle plates into magma, which erupts as volcanic material. On the other hand, as atoms within the mantle are accelerated, compressed, and friction-heated, the number of photons emitted increases. When this energy is amplified to its limit, it generates earthglow and auroras. Under normal conditions, the Earth receives sunlight reflected by the solar reflector. This light is largely confined deep within the crust, where air currents and heat sources force it out of the crust. Upon colliding with electron clusters in the atmosphere, it is converted into light, gradually brightening the sky above the ground. When combined with the solar reflector, this creates daytime. The hottest period of the day is not at noon, but between 3:00 and 5:00 p.m., when the force field is strongest. Furthermore, since tectonic plate movement is fastest in Africa, the friction and heat generated by atmospheric circulation illuminate even more electron clusters, resulting in a year-round, intensely hot summer in the region.

When small, active tectonic plates on the Earth's crust rotate with the planet and move upward within the gravitational field, this movement consumes a significant amount of energy. Consequently, as

the plates contract and curve inward while decelerating, the forces generated are greatly reduced, leaving only individual electrons generated by centripetal force. The reflective synthesis of solar ultraviolet light is also lost, and light is directed deep into the Earth's mantle, gradually dimming the Earth's surface and leading to a schedule of nightfall and progressively lower temperatures until the coldest period.

Meanwhile, the Moon is also illuminated by the Sun, but only the reflective mirror created by the gravitational forces of the Earth and the Sun allows photons on the side facing the Earth to be synthesized into a temperature of approximately 170 degrees. In contrast, the Earth receives sunlight only from the far side of the Sun. Although photons are converted there, they are not so fortunate; they are converted by the distant Sun into temperatures of only a few dozen degrees. Moreover, at distances of 10,000 meters or more from the Sun, the temperature actually becomes colder. Therefore, the far side of the Sun may also experience a dark night, with occasional "solar rain."

When the Earth's rotational motion shifts toward a massive system or an even larger system during its orbit, it is inevitably controlled by the kinetic energy of that system and the larger system. For example, when the Sun orbits the Milky Way and enters a period of density waves, it moves from the lower regions toward the spiral arms. As it consumes more energy and its rotational speed slows to a minimum, energy conversion decreases significantly. This includes the various celestial bodies spinning within these spiral arms, which collectively experience the least amount of replicated force. therefore, an extremely cold winter climate characteristic of a massive ice age is produced.

Consequently, the amount of heat generated by friction and compression in different environments varies, and this heat is stored within the Earth's interior and depths. During this



period, the heat generated by friction and compression in the mantle also decreases, causing both the Earth's crust and the mantle to enter an increasingly colder phase. For instance, as the Earth continues its 25,800-year rotation cycle around its axis, seasonal variations intensify, potentially leading to a climate change akin to

a minor ice age. The magnetic poles may reverse. As the internal heat source at the North Pole intensifies, the ice layers above begin to melt. Dust particles and pathogens trapped within the ice are then propelled into the upper atmosphere. Consequently, as cold air accelerates its southward movement, it combines with environmental pollutants in certain buffer zones. For instance, this leads to an increase in smog over regions like Beijing, resulting in a deterioration of the living environment. Humankind must shift its mindset to alter the movement of nature, starting by regulating the intensity of cold air currents in the atmosphere. Just as humans work to produce more goods, the sky replicates this process. The rapid movement of various vehicles on the ground—such as ships, cars, trains, and airplanes—generates immense friction and thrust, creating air currents that surge upward into high-pressure zones in the sky. Similarly, following the economic downturn after the Wuhan pandemic, the heat generated by people's thoughts rises into the sky. Once synthesized there, it is replicated by the atmosphere and directed toward low-pressure zones on the ground, where it spirals inward to form powerful air currents—such as tornadoes.

Therefore, on the peaks of the Greater and Lesser Khingan Mountains in China—particularly on the summits flanking the Qinling Mountain Pass—we should construct a massive solar-powered air conditioning complex equipped with comprehensive facilities several years in advance. These units should be installed on the peaks on both sides of the Qinling Mountain Pass, and 20 solar air conditioning units should be activated to generate high

temperatures. These units would be aimed at the Arctic region, continuously transferring heat day and night. As a result, cold air moving southward from the Arctic would be regulated and kept in the northern periphery. As a result, Beijing would experience less smog and pollution. Furthermore, the number of people suffering from the flu during winter would decrease. Alternatively, ten jet aircraft could be deployed to fly back and forth at high altitudes across hundreds of kilometers dozens of times. Or, cold air currents could be redirected to regions in need of water—particularly during the approximately fifteen days around the Spring Festival, when there is no rain or snow, allowing businesspeople to make a fortune. Humanity would become the master of nature. Precipitation during the plum rain season would decrease.

By late July through August, the plum rain is dispersed by the strong air currents of typhoons. However, typhoons are also major natural disasters. Every 10 to 18 days, a typhoon strikes and makes landfall in places like Fujian or Zhejiang, causing devastation. If people were to install several mobile, artificial solar collectors or wave-powered generators on the ocean surface in the Pacific—such as around Taiwan—and also deploy additional manually controlled, mobile floating platforms on the ocean surface, the amount of water vapor rising into the sky due to summer heat and sunlight would be reduced. Consequently, the high-altitude thermal currents would accelerate downward in a vortex spanning thousands of kilometers, and the repeated vortex forces would be significantly weakened, greatly reducing the intensity of the tornado. Alternatively, before a tornado makes landfall or while it is still weak, chemicals could be released into the sky in a manner similar to artificial rainfall to disrupt the tornado's vortex, thereby reducing the intensity of the tornado.



The damage caused by natural disasters is greatly reduced. These measures may be more cost-effective and efficient than constructing water conservancy projects, allowing humanity to become the master of nature.

In the northern regions, particularly during the mid-phase of the Earth's five-and-a-half-year non-uniform rotation cycle when the rotation accelerates, rainfall increases starting around mid-June and may persist until late October in areas such as the eastern Northwest, Inner Mongolia, North China, Northeast China, and the northern Huanghuai region. Consequently, rivers experience flooding. However, after November, conditions shift to reduced rainfall and even drought.

On the other hand, unlike the Sun, the Earth is undergoing a process of degeneration and will gradually shrink. Since it lacks the conditions for mass conversion and replenishment, the natural energy of the Earth's core is gradually diminishing, while the mantle is gradually expanding. This causes materials within the Earth's core to be continuously pushed outward by centrifugal force. Similar to how electrons move toward the atomic nucleus at varying distances, this generates a stronger electric current and accelerates the Earth's rotation. This further increases the thermal energy generated by photons on Earth reflecting the Sun's ultraviolet rays. Therefore, the magnitude of the forces acting on Earth throughout its lifetime, causing fluctuations in climate, is an irresistible law of nature. For example, compared to today, the Moon was 1 meter farther from Earth 25 years ago (see \*Overseas Nebula\* magazine—Wide Angle, hosted by Long Ming; \*Science Discovery

News\*, June 9—15, 2009, p. A4). Consequently, Earth has undergone a process of degeneration similar to that of Venus, with its mass gradually decreasing.

At the same time, the strengthening of the Sun's gravitational pull inevitably draws the Earth closer to it, causing the Earth's climate to be shaped by this force and resulting in various climatic changes. For instance, the Sun's magnetic field reverses every hundred years, which contributes to the rise in surface temperatures. Furthermore, Venus's atmosphere (primarily composed of carbon dioxide) is thicker than Earth's.

Especially today, as the solar system moves through the Milky Way, it is in a critical transitional period from midsummer to late autumn, a time of intense competition between the two seasons. Consequently, the thermal energy stored within the Earth is being released more rapidly, making it unsurprising that the climate is not sufficiently warm.

Certain unnatural phenomena in nature can also disrupt and damage the climate. For instance, when large comets and asteroids collide with Earth or pass near it—as seen in 2001 when a millennium-return comet passed Earth—precipitation in the Jiangsu region increased significantly over a two-month period compared to the same period in previous years.

At the same time, human civilization—whether consciously or unconsciously—continually interferes with and disrupts the natural world. For instance, the indiscriminate logging of forests and the massive extraction of underground minerals, followed by their combustion and the resulting carbon dioxide emissions, have led to environmental pollution and contributed to the greenhouse effect, causing climate warming (though carbon dioxide, not synthesized within atoms, may play a role in accelerating the thermal convection forces necessary for the evolution of all living things in the atmosphere). Moreover, when you measure and calculate

the forces generated by these factors, you will realize that the massive proliferation of plants and humans, along with the vast quantities of explosives from military exercises, as well as cars, trains, airplanes, and especially ships and warships plowing recklessly across the seas and oceans, generate several immense forces that surge into the sky, intensifying atmospheric circulation. At the same time, the Earth's tectonic plates are subjected to more of these forces, and the displacement, movement, and friction are accelerating. Therefore, carbon dioxide emissions are merely a drop in the bucket.

In addition to the primary causes mentioned above, there are many secondary factors; for example, when stars in the universe orbit around galaxies, the varying qualities of the various force fields surrounding the galaxies cause the stars' movements to generate different forces as they interact with those fields. For instance, during the fastest periods of non-uniform rotation, celestial bodies, plants, animals, and human activities and movements in the universe all enter a phase of heightened activity and vigorous energy replication. The climate becomes slightly warmer, leading to distinct large-scale atmospheric circulations across different regions. This results in abnormal weather phenomena such as torrential rains, blizzards, severe tornadoes, or prolonged droughts and extreme heat in certain areas, causing an increase in the frequency and severity of various natural disasters. During the slowest phase of non-uniform rotation, the climate is somewhat colder, and natural disasters decrease in frequency and intensity. During the moderate-speed phase, the climate is normal. These are natural phenomena that arise as the natural world undergoes its self-replicating energy processes to counteract the law of conservation of energy.

Therefore, we must adopt a scientific approach. We should engage in long-term, large-scale extraction and utilization of

thermal energy from the atmosphere, geothermal energy, and thermal energy generated by ocean currents. In particular, we should construct more large-scale, artificial, plastic-shed-style floating islands in the oceans to regulate ocean water temperatures. Alternatively, we can utilize wave energy facilities for comprehensive applications such as power generation. This can also help reduce the formation of tornadoes and mitigate the extent of damage they cause to buildings. Alternatively, we could regulate temperatures within active fault zones in seismic belts. In industrial, transportation, and densely populated residential areas, we could spray water into the air during summer or frequently sprinkle water on the ground to mitigate heat. We could also extensively utilize electronic devices—much like every household uses a television—to harness the thermal energy within atoms for boiling water and generating electricity. At the same time, we should strive to reduce the operating speeds of various machinery, vehicles, ships, supersonic aircraft, maglev express trains, and warships. Alternatively, we should expedite the trial production of eccentric vortex engines to fundamentally resolve issues such as smog caused by combustion. [Of course, we must also address the growing air pollution caused by dust from crematoriums. It is possible that the ancient practice of burial in the ground, where decomposing bodies released gases into the sky, served to purify the air.]

In the long run, burial has more benefits than drawbacks.

As long as the above measures are widely implemented and properly executed over the long term, they will yield multiple benefits for humanity and will undoubtedly lead to an immediate reduction in the rate of global warming within three to five years. Otherwise, focusing solely on reducing carbon dioxide emissions will not only fail to solve the problem of global warming, On the contrary, it would play into the hands of those with ulterior

motives who seek to use carbon dioxide emissions, vehicle quality, and the cancer-causing potential of tobacco, alcohol, tea, certain fruits, vegetables, and other food and consumer goods to restrict or undermine China's economic development.

You, as a science nerd, have talked about so many things that I don't fully understand, but the fact that tobacco, alcohol, tea, and certain fruits and vegetables can cause cancer and death is an indisputable global truth—how can you claim there's a problem with that?

There are some things I cannot explain to you directly. Look at today's consumption of tobacco, alcohol, tea, fruits, and vegetables—people eat far less of these now than in the past, or even than our ancestors did. Moreover, people are much more hygienic in their consumption, and environmental pollution is being more strictly controlled.

Moreover, these products are produced by ordinary people. Surely they don't eat or drink any less than those who don't consume them? Yet their incidence of disease and even mortality rates are significantly lower. What could be the reason for this?

For example, a patient with a cough who cannot bring up a single phlegm—if they smoke just one or two cigarettes, it works faster than medicine, and the phlegm comes up immediately. Moreover, X-rays of the lungs of smokers show them to be clearer than those of lung cancer patients who have been suffering from prolonged fevers and receiving IV drips.

Furthermore, ancient poets like Li Bai composed masterful quatrains after getting drunk. Soldiers, whenever facing major battles, would eat and drink heavily to boost their spirits, and some warriors, despite having fought in countless battles, never died.

Furthermore, these products are primarily produced by people in economically underdeveloped regions, such as frontier areas,

and they also serve as a source of national tax revenue. They help solve the problems of widespread employment and poverty.

Wukong waved his hand cheerfully. "All right, all right, my little darling. I didn't let you eat my food for nothing—it turns out you really do have some skills. I understand now. Just come with me on a trip to the moon. After we return, you'll promote your successful experience on Earth. By then, you can apply for

a patent, and I'll develop Huaguo Mountain as a tourist attraction on the moon. You'll make a small fortune, and I'll make a big one!" "With that, Wukong and everyone present burst into laughter! After the laughter subsided, Wukong said to the Old Man

of the North Pole, "Leave this matter to me. I'll either not go at all, or if I do go, I'll succeed or die trying. Oh, and there's one more thing I almost forgot—could you lend me that gadget you just played? When I return from the Moon, I'd like to take another look at it and study it some more."

The North Pole Elder took out the player again: "Sure, sure. Consider it a gift to an old friend as a keepsake. Let me tell you something else: The wise ones from the planet Maya who came to Earth earlier couldn't even make their simplest tools because the supplies from their other spaceship never landed here. Their equipment wasn't compatible, so they couldn't produce even the basic tools needed for repairs—like the tool kits and Phillips screwdrivers used to fix machines." Although, through the tireless efforts of generations of scientists, they managed to advance their technology to a certain level—even possessing nuclear reactors—it was all too late. The inevitable cycle of Earth's rotation around its axis had already concluded, and the planet had entered a phase of accelerated descent from the spiral arm. The forces generated by this motion have brought about a great summer—a cyclical renewal of the climate—once again. Although this period is not as long as the two-hundred-million-year cycle



of the solar system's orbit around the Milky Way—the Great Summer begins and ends in just over ten thousand years—most of the places where they lived were either flooded by waters from the melting Arctic glaciers or, in some regions, covered once again by ice and snow. As the Earth's rotation accelerated and centrifugal force increased, the axial tilt shifted significantly. The Arctic was once again struck by catastrophic storms and torrential rains, which eventually led to the formation of massive glaciers. Meanwhile, living and working conditions had become extremely harsh, yet people remained stubbornly concerned with saving face. This led to wars among tribal leaders over resources, resulting in the deaths of many wise individuals.

Even stranger is that they also fell for rumors claiming the intense heat of the Great Summer would destroy them. Cowardly women wept all day, terrified of death, while men feasted and drank to their hearts' content, seeking a good death. The fearless heroes were all boasting that after 2019, a new ice age would gradually arrive, and major events would unfold on Earth. Moreover, humanity on the surface would possess new scientific and philosophical knowledge, establishing a new civilized world—one that no longer glorifies martial development and self-destruction, nor relies solely on energy conversion for survival and great development.

Therefore, those who have entered the Earth's underground have prepared to return to the surface to search and identify. Starting from the South Pole, they will conduct surveys and mapping work across various regions. When mapping the terrain of China, they indeed witnessed the vast lands of Yan and Huang where, during the battle between Chiyou and Fuyi, vast swathes of forests and grasslands were burned, creating a thick, blinding fog so dense that one could not see the enemy or objects across the way. The fighting on the battlefield was extremely fierce. The air was filled with ceaseless cries of battle and wailing, the ground was flooded

with rivers of blood, and corpses piled up like mountains. Yet Fu Yi still could not secure victory. He then presented the compass cart (which was actually a perpetual motion vehicle) he had been using to the righteous army of Fu Yi, which finally dispelled the thick fog Chiyou had created during the battle, bringing an end to the protracted war.

Afterward, they joined the Vilakochans in retreating deep underground at the Earth's poles to escape the heat. Those who remained hid in the depths of ancient forests, where they intermingled with certain Maya groups from Africa, as well as with Earth's hominids and primitive humans. Through various forms of genetic synthesis, they enhanced their cognitive capabilities. Particularly regarding their diet, they would first prepare the long-haired animals they had hunted according to each family's preferences, then roast them over a fire before eating. The meat, with its outer fur burned off, was consumed, and the hair that grew back on their bodies became short and fine.

Some households, however, disregarded hygiene and superstitions—much like some people today who do not believe in science—and continued to consume meat containing traces of unremoved animal fur. After cooking and consuming such meat, some members of these families or their descendants reverted to growing body hair. For instance, the *\*Compendium of Materia Medica\** warns those with a voracious appetite that frequently eating small fish—whose scales have not been thoroughly removed—can easily lead to fish-scale disease. If a pregnant woman consumes rabbit meat, her child may be genetically predisposed to cleft lip.

At the same time, parents living in different environments absorb the climatic changes generated by the Earth's approximately five-and-a-half-year non-uniform rotational cycle. If they consume excessive amounts of plants or animal meat grown during a specific year, these elements are transformed into

distinct energies during pregnancy and stored within the cells of their offspring. The boys and girls born to such parents are also likely to consume meat from plants and animals that grew under the temperature fluctuations of those specific years. This intensifies the flow of energy converted into nutrients within their bodies, which then recombines with the energy inherited from their parents, resulting in distinct personalities and life habits. These streams of habitual energy act like radio waves, connecting to the other half of the elliptical sphere from a past life. They align with the facial features that correspond to one's lifelong fortune or misfortune, or serve as the access code for a destined partner—including the ability to unlock the “sensual code” of extraterrestrials for marriage.

However, the scents evolved within some people's bodies form unique personalities and can even trigger a natural selection process that lures and eliminates others. For instance, some men, like butterflies flitting from flower to flower, are greedy for the scent and beauty of their lovers, yet like silkworms spinning silk, they often meet an early demise. Or, some facial features evolved within the spherical body may be compatible for marriage,

or as described in books on fate and marriage—such as the compatibility of a man born in the Year of the Rat and a woman born in the Year of the Rabbit—though they may easily fall in love at first sight and marry. However, once children arrive or career setbacks occur, the character flaws they lacked in their past lives—and the resulting lack of mutual understanding in this life—will surface. This is especially true during times of financial hardship, when conflicts with the husband may arise, or when serious illness, domestic unrest, or premature death occur. Because their energies clash like fire and wood, disrupting the

system's balanced development, they often quarrel, scold, or even fight over trivial matters, leading to divorce.

However, if managed well after marriage, both partners should reflect on the fact that since they have married and started a family, they must consider social impact and the interests of their children. They should be more understanding and tolerant of each other's shortcomings, working tirelessly together for the family's happiness and harmony. Even if their birth charts have slight deficiencies, they can still "make do with what they have"—as the saying goes, "When the family is harmonious, all things prosper."

Men, in particular, must be willing to be guided, for in this world, only your wife truly loves you; everyone else is merely playing a part. Women, in their daily lives, should avoid being overly nagging or stubborn. Pay attention to how you speak; be more tolerant of things you shouldn't say or meddle in. This can help make up for the shortcomings and lack of character cultivation from past lives, allowing you to live a simple, ordinary life. It can also help curb your partner's negative tendencies, reduce mistakes, and play a role in protecting and fostering their strengths. When you return, you should truly take the time to carefully reflect and strive to do better. You should also encourage your descendants to do the same.

otherwise, people will still believe that humans do not need to be artificially created or haphazardly engineered, but rather evolved naturally from apes or driven by labor to evolve into humans."

Of course, the evolution of humans—who developed from air currents and matter within the vast majority of geological fissures—is a process that is both simple and complex. The energy of the air currents replicated within these narrow fissures is significantly reduced. For example, the expulsion of carbon dioxide waste gas from a flat body is not as rapid as in an animal with an oval body. Therefore, when it diffuses out through the pores

of the skin, it merely evolves into sweat in a vortex. Meanwhile, at the head, fingertips, and toes—much like planets in a galaxy moving from the lower regions toward the spiral arms, where they expend more energy and undergo non-uniform deceleration to form density waves—the vortex-like air currents within the body, when accelerating downward to points such as fingertips and toes, are transformed by the forces of movement (such as walking) into fingernails and toenails. On one side of the head, the airflow is propelled outward in a parabolic arc by centrifugal force from the navel. When it reaches one side of the head and is driven upward by inertia, it bursts through the tiny pores on the skin, creating a force resembling ripples. The airflow on this side of the upper head then forms a vortex, continuously growing long hair.

On the side of the head near the face, as the airflow moves, it shifts to a centripetal force. The air escaping through the pores on the facial skin grows only into fine facial hair. At this point, the airflow has moved downward to the area around the eyes. Because the eyes blink constantly, applying force to them, the air escaping through the skin evolves into eyebrows, eyelashes, and other eye hairs. When the airflow moves to the area around the mouth, the mouth is constantly chewing food, subjecting it to significant force. Eventually, the cells within the oral mucosa are transformed into bony teeth, making it easier to chew hard foods. At this point, the force of the airflow diminished. However, the intensity of human labor and speech—particularly the centrifugal force generated by men—varies depending on individual physique. This led to the growth of beards in varying amounts and colors, such as black or yellow. Even physically robust men developed long, beard-like hair on their faces. Later, hair also grew on specific parts of the body.

Because women have a smaller body mass, they generate a centripetal vortex, making it less likely for them to grow long, thick beards—unless they are strong, masculine women with thick,

dark body hair resembling a beard. They should avoid applying pressure to the hair follicles or trimming it, as doing so will only cause it to grow into a beard. This powerful airflow even increases the likelihood of women giving birth to boys, and offers advantages such as robust health and lower disease rates.

From then on, God bestowed upon humanity a better appearance, wisdom, and strength. Men and women evolved physically into descendants without noticeable body hair, enabling them to fulfill their mission of unifying and harmonizing all things in nature with greater authority."

If, in the future, humans were to become like dinosaurs and other large animals—after unifying all things in nature—they would become arrogant, lawless, and indiscriminately slaughter the innocent. The energy of the deceased rises to the high-pressure zones of the sky, where Heaven replicates them into a new human form with electrons. This new being possesses powerful self-replication and transformation abilities. A set of components is installed within each person's body to record their good and evil deeds. When these exceed the limit, the body automatically dissolves into a pool of water. This water, when exposed to sunlight, transforms into vapor, enriching the natural world and continuing the cycle of evolution.

A little monkey suddenly stepped forward, grabbed the Old Man of the North's arm, and asked in utter bewilderment

"Old Man of the North, why do those who took refuge inside the Earth to escape the heat have to return to the surface to live? And now they're constantly darting around the Earth in flying saucers, as if they're hatching some kind of conspiracy."

"They aren't plotting anything. Because inside the Earth, two opposing forces have been pushing and grinding against each other for ages, generating more energy. As a result, the Earth has begun

to revolve around the tilted pole once again, marking a new cycle.

Since upward movement consumes more energy, the centrifugal force has decreased. The hot air currents from the molten mantle gradually weaken and spread toward the equatorial surface, while convection intensifies at the colder poles. At the same time, as centrifugal force decreases, the thermal energy generated by friction within the Earth's core, combined with the heat produced by the daily lives and work of people living within the crust, has increased. Just like sunlight beating down on the ground in summer, waves of stifling heat are trapped within the crust and cannot escape. This has made it unbearable for those living in the environments of the core and the crust. Moreover, epidemics have broken out and are spreading everywhere. All day long, people of all walks of life flock to government offices, demanding to return

as soon as possible to the surface where they once lived.

Consequently, they are currently researching how to return to life on the surface. However, the reports brought back by those sent to investigate are far from optimistic. For instance, the Earth today is no longer the place it was hundreds of millions of years ago when humans first lived there. Nowadays, people fleeing famine are driven away, and even beggars are arrested. Furthermore, much of the energy resources have been depleted by the massive population on the surface. Moreover, their technology has advanced significantly, making them a formidable opponent. Not to mention that with our massive population, if we all rushed to the surface at once, major conflicts with them would inevitably arise; a head-on confrontation is not the best strategy. Therefore, the priority is to resolve the issue of the hundreds of billions of people already on the surface. Some propose peaceful coexistence, while others suggest that once we leave the surface, things will become easier—whether by developing in outer space or by first destroying all their nuclear weapons.

Their decision-makers consider none of these to be optimal

solutions. For instance, destroying all nuclear weapons would leave the Earth contaminated for at least a century. Even all of us underground—and perhaps everyone—would suffer the consequences. The best course now is to exploit their cultural backwardness to provoke internal strife, or cause them to contract various diseases leading to mass deaths, then use propaganda to frame these as contagious diseases to intimidate them. As the incidence and death toll rise, we can return to the surface in five or six hundred years and reap the rewards of your immense wealth without a hitch. This will be far more effective than a nuclear war—and without any side effects.

Because these subterranean races are different from you—they fear heat but not cold, and even a slight rise in temperature kills them. Look, the heat inside the Earth is now spreading toward the poles; some glaciers and icebergs have begun to melt or fracture. That's why they keep rushing out to search for their original settlements. But no matter how hard they search, they cannot find the villages that served as their original landmarks. Instead, they see new skyscrapers, bridges, and other structures springing up everywhere. This has made them even more panicked. Many scientists have taken multiple UFOs to various locations to conduct surveys and research, preparing for where they might settle in the next 800 years or so."

"Then they'll take over my Flower-Fruit Mountain. What do you think I, Old Sun, should do?"

"That's right. They'll definitely try to compete with you for resources, so you must be careful. Don't provoke them—the consequences would be severe, and they'd fight you tooth and nail. You should hurry to the Moon and take care of that urgent

matter first. When the time comes, I'll help you guard the mountain and negotiate with them. If we can cooperate amicably, no one will

be able to touch a single asset on your Flower-Fruit Mountain, and



you ' **ll still be the Great Sage Equal to Heaven, making a fortune.**" "Having said this, the North Pole Elder handed the player to Wukong and continued, 'Great Sage, the magnetic field reversal

**in my realm of the North Pole cannot last too long, or else trouble will ensue. I entrust this matter to you.'**

Watching the Old Man of the North Pole ride the clouds away, Wukong grabbed Kedaizi' s hand and immediately soared through the clouds toward the moon.

"Boss, you can' t just leave like this. Let me get ready. Not only is there a lack of oxygen and zero gravity there, but there are also all kinds of harmful substances and even radiation that can harm the body. We need to set up some protective measures."

Sun Wukong let go of his hand, patted Ke Daizi on the shoulder, and said, "Right, right, right. I' d completely forgotten—the last time I caused chaos in Heaven, I nearly lost my life in Laozi' s furnace. Later, the Queen Mother took pity on me, saying that as a monkey, I' d likely cause trouble again in the future, so she

gave me an Eight-Treasure Robe for protection. I haven' t used this robe since the Journey to the West, but I' ll bring it along this time to protect you." With that, Wukong called a little monkey

to fetch the Eight-Treasure Robe from the trunk and pack it into the bag along with Ke Daizi' s belongings.

Seeing that everything was packed and ready, Wukong summoned the Little King, the Old Steward, and the young monkeys to give them his instructions: "Today, for the sake of humanity' s bright future and lasting peace, we' re heading to the moon with that dimwit. We don' t know when we' ll be back. Therefore, I' m entrusting all matters at home to you, Little King. As a leader, you must learn to manage and delegate effectively. You must have

a sense of ambition and honor, and lead everyone to achieve new successes in all our endeavors. As for my old steward, you must assist the young boss in managing the enterprise. Submit the

monthly income and expenditure reports to him once a month, so he can become a good boss who achieves new results every month." "When I return from the moon, I will reward you all according to your merits."

"Please rest assured, Great Sage. I will do my utmost to cooperate with the Young Master in advancing all our work. Please take good care of yourself, and I wish you a safe and speedy return."

The little monkeys shouted in unison, "We wish our ancestor a safe journey and a victorious return as soon as possible!"

"Goodbye, goodbye!"

Wukong and Kedaï waved goodbye to everyone, soaring through the clouds toward the moon. Kedaï could feel the wind whistling past his ears; the Earth grew smaller and smaller before his eyes. In the blink of an eye, they arrived above the moon. Wukong descended from the clouds, steadied his feet, and asked, "Kedaï, how do you feel?"

"Great Sage, when we first started ascending, I felt absolutely miserable—it was like being torn apart by knives. Later, I felt better and dared to open my eyes to look around. Oh, how beautiful

the universe is! What's even more precious is that when I looked toward Earth, I could only see the Great Wall of China; none of the other civilizations were visible. This truly is the pride and greatness of our Chinese nation!"

"Indeed, among the ten thousand years of world history, the Chinese nation is truly a great and remarkable people." Just as they were speaking, a man covered head to toe in iron suddenly came running from somewhere. He held a staff that made a constant "crack, crack" sound, which he swung relentlessly at Wukong while muttering something under his breath.

"Ke Daizī, what is that thing doing?" asked the Great Sage.

"He claims to be from the Heavenly Kingdom. His name is Du Jimen.

He says they were the first to land on the moon, so he holds territorial sovereignty over it. He won't allow anyone to infringe upon his interests; otherwise, he'll drive them out by force," Ke Daizi said contemptuously.

"That's outrageous! Tell him the moon is the common heritage of all space dwellers, and people from any planet have the right to develop and utilize it," the Great Sage said, stamping his feet in frustration.

Kedaizi translated Wukong's words to Du Jimen. A moment later, he turned to Wukong and said, "Great Sage, look at how unreasonable this guy is. He says their president had an astronaut announce to the world that since they were the first to land on

the moon, it's their territory. He claims our arrival is an invasion and asks who we are and what kind of power we have to dare to show such contempt for the mighty Heavenly Kingdom."

Wukong scoffed, "This fellow's babbling is truly tiresome to my ancient ancestors. Listen here, young man: steady your feet first. I won't be held responsible if my origins frighten you. Now listen carefully: From childhood I possessed extraordinary powers, Famed throughout the ten thousand miles of heaven and earth. Back then, my brilliance led me to the path of immortality; In days of old, I received the elixir of eternal youth. I vowed to devote myself to the realm of the heart, And with a devout heart,

I sought the sage's homeland. Having mastered the art of infinite transformation, I roamed the vast cosmos with reckless abandon.

In my leisure, I subdued tigers at the mountain's foot; When bored, I subjugated dragons within the seas. In my ancestral home of Flower Fruit Mountain, I claimed the throne; In the Water Curtain Cave, I displayed my might. Time and again I plotted to seize the heavens; Time and again, in ignorance, I seized the upper realms. The Emperor bestowed upon me the title "Great Sage Equal to

Heaven," And pardoned me, granting the title "Monkey King." Yet

because of the Banquet of the Peach of Immortality, I was not invited—and my nature is fierce. I secretly broke into the Jade Pool to steal the elixir, And secretly entered the Jade Pavilion to drink the nectar. I have stolen and eaten dragon liver and phoenix marrow, And tasted every rare and precious delicacy. For a thousand years I feasted on the Peach of Immortality, For ten thousand years I filled my belly with elixirs; I seized every strange object from the heavens, And hoarded every rare treasure from the Celestial Palace. The Jade Emperor sought me out with cunning, Immediately dispatching heavenly troops to the battlefield; The nine Zhai evil stars were banished by me, And the five malevolent constellations were wounded by me. The celestial generals of old were all my foes; even a hundred thousand mighty troops dared not stand against me. Under duress, the Jade Emperor issued his decree; the Little Sage of Guanjiing raised his banner. We stood locked in battle through seventy-two transformations, each displaying extraordinary prowess. Guanyin of the South Sea came to aid the fight; the Pure Vase and the Willow Branch also lent their support. Laozi then deployed the Vajra Collar, capturing me and bringing me before the Supreme Court. Bound before the Jade Emperor, the Great Emperor, I was interrogated by Cao Gong regarding my crimes. He immediately ordered the Great Strength to draw his sword and strike, The blade struck my scalp, sparks flying; Though they tried every trick, they could not kill me. They dragged me into Laozi's hall, Where I was refined in the Six Ding

Gods' furnace. Refined until my body was hard as steel, When the seventy-seven days were up, they opened the cauldron to look— I leaped out, fierce and defiant. The gods shut their doors, with no cover; The saints gathered to plead with the Buddha. Indeed, the Tathagata possesses great power; his wisdom is truly boundless. With a single somersault, he overturned the mountain that pressed down on me—I could not resist. Only then did the Jade Emperor host

a celestial banquet. The Western Regions are called the Land of Ultimate Bliss, yet they kept Old Sun trapped there for five hundred years, without a single bite of food or sip of tea. When the Elder Golden Cicada descended to the mortal world, the Eastern Land sent him on a pilgrimage to the Buddha's realm, intending to retrieve the true scriptures and bring them back to the capital. The Emperor of Tang had already passed away, but Guanyin persuaded me to embrace virtue, to uphold the teachings and restrain my wildness. Thus,

I was freed from the mountain's grip and the trials below, and set off once more to the Western Heaven to retrieve the scriptures."

"So you're a sky-stealing thief! Cut the chatter—show me your weapons!" Du Jimen's electric baton was already hovering over Wukong's head.

Wukong stood his ground, unflinching, and said calmly, "You're speaking of a bygone era. I have no interest in unreasonable politics. I seek to find a noble culture—one that addresses the advanced and the backward, the rich and the poor, and the conflicting interests and differences in understanding between nations. I aim to use culture to unify wills and balance these contradictions, fostering greater harmony and development in society. How could I possibly be a thief who steals from heaven? It's better to be good friends with you. But today, the moon is humanity's shared treasure; we absolutely cannot allow a nuclear war over the universe to break out. As the saying goes in the underworld, we all get by together. We must never take sides—it's not worth dragging ourselves into this. If we want world peace, using force to impose culture on people only makes problems more complicated. World affairs are everyone's business; let's resolve issues through dialogue, mutual compromise, and cooperation. Or let the United Nations General Assembly vote on mediation to resolve the problem.

Otherwise, we monkeys are no bookish bodhisattvas. If

peaceful means fail, we will defend ourselves by force. We will end up like the Maya, with tribal leaders waging nuclear wars over resources, destroying both the world and themselves. Please convey my views to the President: let us not act on emotion."

"Yes, yes, I'll be sure to pass it on, I'll be sure to pass it on." He slunk away.

As Ke Dazhi packed his things, he looked at Wukong and said, "Great Sage, it's not that I'm afraid of dying. I've lived for decades without ever getting into a fight, but this time, seeing that he wanted to take your life, I really threw caution to the wind—I grabbed my backpack and was ready to fight him."

"You mustn't act recklessly. In the world, one doesn't strike a smiling face—especially when dealing with internal conflicts among the people or in public places. It's best to ignore them, keep your mouth shut, and 'endure.' That's the wisest course of action; leave as quickly as possible. Evil people will inevitably be dealt with by other evil people." With that, Wukong and Ke Dazhi hurried toward the Palace of Broad Coldness.

In a short while, they arrived before the Moon Palace. Wukong pointed at the palace gates and said, "Kedaizi, look how much the world has changed. I came here once during the Tang Dynasty when

I was on my journey to retrieve the scriptures; back then, it was magnificent and splendid. Today, however, it has become cold and desolate, and the palace gates are no longer as magnificent as they once were. "The storms of the past few centuries have inflicted all manner of wounds upon China. The late Qing Dynasty was particularly bleak. Thankfully, China produced two great men, Mao Zedong and Deng Xiaoping; otherwise, it would have ended up just like this place."

"Indeed, China's millennia of feudalism were no accident. Without a centralized system of governance, the country would be in disarray. We need a powerful military, public security

forces, and the ability to govern decisively and adapt to changing circumstances. Furthermore, after seizing power, it would be even better to integrate it with China's Taijii moral culture and the Confucian, Buddhist, and Taoist traditions."

"Exactly! The Chinese are accustomed to being managed under a patriarchal structure; perhaps everything will go smoothly then! Once we're inside, you'll listen to me—don't say much, just read my cues and act accordingly."

"Yes, I'll listen to you." Ke Dazhi nodded. Wukong shouted loudly toward the interior: "Fairy Chang'e, Fairy Chang'e, your old flame is here—hurry out and greet him!"

Just as he was shouting, Chang'e came running out in a panic. Seeing it was Sun Wukong, she was both startled and delighted. "Hey, you damn monkey—why did you vanish without a word? I thought your bones had turned to dust, but who knew you were still alive."

Wukong pulled a monkey face: "That's not right of you. You're speaking ill omens the moment we meet. If something were to happen to us homosexuals, wouldn't you be wishing us dead?" With that, Wukong flashed Chang'e a flirtatious smile.

The fairy Chang'e pointed her finger at Wukong's snose: "You're a grown man, yet you're still so dishonest. Come on, let's go inside the palace."

"Hehe, you can't be young or old without talking and laughing!" With that, Wukong followed Chang'e into the palace. Chang'e invited them to sit down, and a palace maid brought tea to serve everyone.

Chang'e asked, "Great Sage, you haven't aged a bit all these years. What have you been up to lately?"

Wukong said proudly, "You don't know, Fairy Chang'e, but back on Flower Fruit Mountain—just like here in your Palace of Broad Cold—every friend who visits says I've aged a lot. But in

recent years, with the country's reform and opening-up, I've been actively participating and using Flower Fruit Mountain's natural resources to vigorously develop tourism. Plus, since I'm a celebrity, I'm surrounded by countless tourists all day long, asking me this and that. The money rolls in—I earn at least several hundred thousand a year, and sometimes even several million." It's truly 'Wealth brings vitality, and a spacious home makes one look young.

At the same time, back in my youth, I had my own regimen for fitness, beauty, and skincare. You see, when I went out in my younger days, I'd slip into a cheongsam, apply some rouge and lipstick, sit down in front of people, and strike a pose with all the air of a lady or a young miss. But once I got home, I was a different person entirely. Dressed in work clothes, I bustled about from morning till night, working harder than a maid—yet I never

neglected my beauty routine. First, I ensured a good night's sleep and maintained a calm, cheerful outlook on life. At the herbal pharmacy, I had equal parts of zinc oxide, talc, and peeled almonds ground into a fine powder. After steaming it with water, I added

a small amount of borneol, then mixed it with egg white to form a paste, which I stored in a bottle. After washing your face, apply a small amount of the ointment and gently rub it in, once or twice a day. After a month, your complexion will be as rosy and radiant as jade. If you have wrinkles, take a papaya, remove the skin and two ounces of its flesh, add one ounce of almonds and one ounce of lard, then pound them together until smooth. Rub this mixture onto your face every night before bed; after a week, the wrinkles will disappear, making you look ten years younger. For freckles, slice a lemon and rub the slices over the affected areas; this will gradually fade the freckles. For acne or pimples, squeeze out lemon juice and apply it to the affected areas several times a day; this will draw out excess oil from the skin and flush out impurities



and buildup from the pores.

When washing and rinsing your hair, add a few drops of lemon juice and half a teaspoon of white vinegar to the water; this will make your hair jet-black and shiny. If you pluck a strand or two of gray hair, rub ginger juice into the pores where the hair was plucked; this will prevent gray hair from growing back.

"Look at the gold and silver jewelry on your hands, ears, and neck. From what I understand, you were born in the You month—that is, October—a time when Metal is strong and Wood is weak. Wearing too much gold is detrimental to your health; if you fall ill, it will only worsen your condition. Remove it, and your symptoms will naturally ease. In short, avoid wearing or doing anything that makes you feel uncomfortable."

"Is that really true?"

"It's true. Long-term wear of gold and silver jewelry must be based on the individual's Five Elements compatibility. For some, wearing such jewelry is beneficial, while others must absolutely avoid it. At best, it affects one's luck and physical health; at worst, it can lead to disability or even death."

"But if I don't dress up, I won't look dignified. What should I do?"

"That's true; a woman simply can't go without dressing up. Let me go back and get some fine jade jewelry to give you. This jade jewelry is suitable for anyone and is beneficial to your health. Back in 2001, I bought a pair of jade bracelets to give to Xiao Yanzi, a great poet living at the foot of Mount Tai in Shandong who used to be an editor for the Jingmen University Journal. Little did I know that the merchant had deceived me—it was worthless jade that offered little benefit to the body. I've felt guilty about it ever since. Now that I've learned from experience, I'll definitely consult an expert to find her a piece of jade jewelry she'll truly appreciate.

As women, we must enhance ourselves in every way. In my youth, just like you now, I had flat breasts and lacked any feminine allure. 1. You can rub a mixture of lotus seed and gallbladder on your breasts; 2. Always stand and walk with proper posture—chest out and stomach tucked in; 3. Persist in exercises that strengthen the chest muscles, such as swimming. Butterfly and freestyle strokes are particularly effective for building firm pectoral muscles and achieving fuller breasts. Alternatively, doing rhythmic exercises before bed or whenever you have the chance is also beneficial.

Now that I'm older, I dissolve six qian of 芒硝 in water and wash my eyes with it once a month. After a year, my eyes are bright and lively, my vision is as sharp as a child's, and I have no trouble reading books or newspapers. I'm truly happy. Some old-fashioned people see me hopping about joyfully every day, dressed in spotless, colorful clothes, and say I've turned into an old witch. Even those strangers who originally had no intention of entering the park—especially the male visitors—can't take their eyes off me, staring intently, and they're even willing to spend wads of cash without a second thought.

"In this day and age, a monkey is still just a monkey. Why don't you take me along to make a fortune? I'm bored to death in the palace. Look at me—haven't I aged a lot?" Saying this, Chang'e pointed to the wrinkles on her face, looking dejected.

"Chang'e, don't worry. Whenever I'm making a fortune at home, I always think of my old friends—especially you. A woman without business acumen or experience will only see her family fortune dwindle the more she spends. As the saying goes, worry can turn one's hair white. Let me help you find the path to wealth—would you like me to brainstorm some ideas and come up with solutions?"

**"Is that really true?"**

**"Of course!"**

**"Then please tell me—how can I make a fortune?"**

**"You' re quite the schemer—you' re already dreaming of striking it rich right off the bat. That ' s simply not possible. The business world is a battlefield. I ' m not bragging, but don' t assume that just because you have the right timing, location, and support, you can jump into any project. As a private business owner, you must remember this: are you a strategist or a tactician? In today' s world, choosing a project requires precision—it must be tailored to the location and the people. Generally, if you lack experience in running a factory or doing business, avoid projects that require large investments and take a long time to show results. Don' t chase big, flashy, or "foreign-style" developments when you have limited funds. Also, steer clear of projects that require door-to-door sales, carry heavy responsibility, or rely on subpar equipment.**

**If everyone is opening bathhouses, internet cafes, scrap yards, weigh stations, or dance halls—swarming in like flies—I won' t jump in on a large scale. In today' s world, there are plenty of scammers and unreasonable people; being honest is often seen**

**as a weakness. To be a successful business owner, you must possess exceptional social and adaptability skills in external dealings, as well as the ability to lead employees and drive collective growth internally. Moreover, how much capital—tens of thousands of yuan—is required? You must accurately assess your local customer base and consumption volume, as well as potential sources of funding in case of emergencies. Don' t assume that your loyal friends and connections will automatically support your business. Don' t assume that your investment will yield substantial monthly profits. Unpredictable events—such as major workplace injuries, natural disasters, or being defrauded of hundreds of thousands of**

yuan—can occur.

Starting a business is easy; keeping it afloat is hard. You need to wake up to reality quickly. A gentleman may love wealth, but he must acquire it through proper means. Use your wits to earn what you deserve, but take it one step at a time—start small and develop gradually. Or, if your skills aren't up to par, just work hard and honestly as an employee; you can still save some money in a year.

I'll help you with this development project. You don't need to provide capital or labor—just the land. I've already planned this out before coming here. With more people having money these days, the first step is to develop the tourism industry. Let them come to the moon for a thrill, admire the cosmic scenery, and enjoy the bliss of a heavenly paradise. "The second step is to launch a major real estate development here, preparing for a massive influx

of immigrants in the future. We'll turn this place into a second Earth, where birds sing and swallows dance, creating a scene teeming with vitality."

Chang'e listened with excitement and said, "If that's really possible, I must thank you, Old Sun. You're truly a wonderful person."

"Of course it's true. I've even brought along a science expert named Ke Daizi." He pointed casually. "He's an expert in science and development. I brought him here specifically to assess whether

the moon is suitable for development."

Chang'e studied Ke Daizi closely for a moment before saying, "When I first met him, I thought to myself, 'What a fine young man—he doesn't look like Old Pig, nor does he look like Sandy. How did he end up traveling with you?' "

"What's wrong with that? Is it bad to be with me, Old Sun? You still think of me as that stubborn fool from my younger days, always roughhousing. Today, in a market economy, talent is the most

important thing. As the saying goes, 'A hero needs three helpers; a fence needs three posts.' Aside from cash and finances, which I never delegate, I even carry a notebook with me to record important transactions, future work plans, and other information—all clearly documented. Things like names, cell numbers, factory addresses, and product details. In other areas, once positions are filled through competitive selection, I don't

replace people lightly—only based on performance. I'm willing to invest in production, operations, technology, and management, but I don't try to do everything myself; I delegate to capable people. For example, in production and technology, I'll spend whatever it takes to hire a versatile mechanic—a master repairman who can both fix and modify machines. Furthermore, I have even mapped out the infrastructure plans and set the tone, instructing the responsible personnel to negotiate contracts with construction firms covering quality, price, and safety. Any future disputes will be resolved directly between them and the contractors. I also widely adopt sound suggestions from resourceful individuals. By adhering to the principle of "using skilled workers for their

strengths and oxen for their strength"—that is, employing people according to their aptitudes—we can create more welfare benefits for employees.

I also utilized the gatekeepers and the clinic doctors to monitor the ideological trends emerging from workers' casual conversations. Based on these observations, we either conducted ideological guidance or reported them to administrative officials for resolution, thereby addressing specific ideological or living difficulties faced by workers. This ensured that workers could work at the enterprise with long-term peace of mind.

Once, while I was negotiating a deal with a difficult client, my longtime steward saw that I'd been talking for over two hours and rushed over to say, "The boss isn't feeling well; let's

continue this discussion this afternoon.” But being an impatient man, I snapped, “Go on, mind your own business—a farmer can’t

worry about his clothes.” He got angry and said, “A man nearly 80 years old isn’t trying to curry favor with you; I’m just looking out for your best interests,” and stormed off.

From then on, he kept telling me the monthly ledger was in the red. I knew he was playing games with me. But I said, “I understand. I’ll tighten up management—including reporting any money I personally lend to clients to the general manager, or recording it in my personal diary.” From then on, he provided me with a monthly statement of accounts.

A person like Ke Dazi is extremely loyal and honest; he never gets involved with gangsters, never associates with shady characters, never misses an opportunity to learn from those more skilled than him, and never wastes money on frivolous pursuits with the opposite sex. Despite his family’s poor financial circumstances, he possesses a strong drive and a willingness to endure hardship. Moreover, he is a technical jack-of-all-trades, perfectly suited to my hiring strategy. He dared to tackle the eccentric vortex engine—a device scientists had declared impossible, essentially a perpetual motion machine—to solve the world’s future energy problems and unravel cosmic mysteries such as the Earth’s non-uniform rotation.

He has been at it for decades—working on an empty stomach, working while ill, and striving desperately under immense mental and financial pressure. It can be said that for an honest, penniless person, getting anything done is difficult. In today’s market economy, some newly minted capitalists lack even a shred of

integrity—in fact, they’re even worse. They either refuse to take on small jobs or hold their heads high and demand exorbitant prices.

Far from what the great leader said—that the wealthy would help those who haven’t yet prospered—some have even darker hearts.

### Take the foundry

who, despite having no formal education, became utterly shameless in the market economy, caring only about money. In June 1998, when faced with a request from researchers for ten castings totalling 51 pounds, he first wrote down a price of 8,800 yuan per ton. But then, turning on a dime, he tore up the note and declared, "We don't charge by the ton for small orders—95 yuan per piece, so 950 yuan for ten." Even when it came to hiring talented and virtuous college graduates, his company only hired them if he felt like it. He amassed a fortune of at least 100 million yuan, becoming a local tycoon, along with General Manager Feng of another factory and others.

Seeing how difficult it was for Ke Daizi to conduct business outside and how much he'd been bullied by others, I truly felt sorry for him. Moreover, his versatile talents made him perfectly suited for my needs—such as developing new products—so I decided to fund his inventions. "Unexpectedly, the Old Man of the North came to me and said, 'There are some abnormal phenomena—strange lights—appearing in your area. I need to come and investigate and handle the situation to prevent any trouble on the Moon.' Besides, I also want to develop tourism here, so I must first get to the bottom of this issue. If it's an illness, as the saying

goes, 'Power shouldn't make you arrogant, wealth shouldn't make you forgetful, and illness shouldn't be ignored.' So, I brought Ke Dazi along to see if the Moon is sick and whether there's any development potential."

"Great Sage, now that you mention it, I'd forgotten—I've actually noticed this phenomenon recently too. Sometimes the light inside the palace dims. I thought it was just my eyesight failing with age, or a monotonous lifestyle lacking nutrition. But since you bring it up, please ask the great scientist to help me find the cause and cure the illness. Once you start development, I'

**I'll be happy to share in the fortune you make."** With that, she glanced at the scientist.

**"Thank you, Fairy Chang' e. I' ll do my best to work closely with the boss to ensure this project' s success. But there' s one thing: we' ve debated this back on Earth. Developing the Moon involves six phases and will take about 3,000 years. If something unexpected happens to the Moon during that time, wouldn' t all our hard work be for nothing? Some have suggested jettisoning the Moon**

**or causing it to self-destruct, but our boss firmly disagrees."** With that, Science Nerd looked over at Wukong.

**Wukong picked up the thread: "Of course not. We can' t just abandon an old friend we' ve known for so many years."**

**"That really scared the life out of me. Please, as a great scientist, think of a solution quickly."**

**The scientist nodded and continued, " Based on my research, that' s also an unscientific notion. My boss back home asked me to come up with a plan, but I told him that making arbitrary decisions isn' t the way to go. We need to first get a clear picture of all the conditions on the moon before drawing any conclusions. "That' s why I came here with the Boss. Just now, after hearing what you, Fairy, described—and noticing this strange luminous phenomenon, along with the dimming of the room' s light—the Boss and I decided to hurry down to the underground palace, that is, to the core of the Moon, to investigate the matter thoroughly. Only then can we devise a solution."**

**Chang' e quickly interrupted Ke Daizi: "Good heavens! You two must not go in. It is extremely dangerous in there—there are high temperatures, high pressure, radioactive materials, and toxic gases. Once, one of my palace maids, unaware of the danger, opened the underground palace door just a crack. A powerful beam of light blinded her eyes, and she died within a few days. Since then, no one has dared to open that door again."**



"Fairy Chang' e, as the saying goes, 'A true gentleman offers coal in the snow; a petty man adds flowers to brocade.' I, Old Sun, have always been willing to go to any lengths for my friends—sharing my liver and gallbladder with them. If I have money, I' ll help with money; if not, I' ll help with my strength. Since you' re worried something might go wrong today, just give me the key to the underground palace gate, and let us open it ourselves. " As he spoke, Wukong took out the Eight-Treasure Robe from his bag and told Kedai to put it on. Kedai took the robe and asked, "Boss, what will you do without clothes?"

"That' s no problem," said Wukong. He plucked a single hair, placed it in his palm, and blew on it. Instantly, an identical Eight-Treasure Robe appeared before him.

Seeing that they were determined to go and had already donned the Eight-Treasure Robes, the Fairy Chang' e had no choice but to hand the key to Wukong with trembling hands, repeatedly warning them to turn back immediately if things went wrong. Wukong took the key and said, " Rest assured. My father was an executioner—would I really risk my life in the underground palace?" With that, Sun Wukong somersaulted through the air, instantly transporting Ke Daizi to the entrance of the underground palace. Sun Wukong unlocked the door and pushed it open. Just as Ke Daizi was about to step inside, Sun Wukong quickly yanked him aside. At that very moment, a powerful gust of wind burst through the door, blowing the entire entrance away.

"That was close!" Ke Daizi stuck out his tongue.

After the gale subsided, they peered inside—it was pitch black, so dark they couldn' t see their own hands. "Ke Daizi, I have the Golden Eyes of Wisdom. Let me lead the way. " With that, Wukong adjusted his hat, bent his waist, lowered his head, and stepped through the underground palace gate with Ke Daizi. After

walking for a while, the light improved slightly. Suddenly, something tripped Wukong's foot, nearly causing him to fall. Then they heard a strange shout: "What blind fool dares to disturb my sleep!" Wukong was startled at first, but upon looking closely, he saw a creature with a square head and square shoulders, clumsy and awkward—neither quite human nor quite ghost. He had never seen such a thing before.

"Hey, what kind of creature are you? Knocking me, the Great Sage, to the ground is disrupting my work—you won't be able to take the blame for this."

"I am the Lunar Crust Plate. Are you Sun Wukong, the one who caused all that chaos in Heaven?" "That's me, Old Sun. Now get out of my way!"

"Sun Wukong, don't take this the wrong way, but you've already gone through enough hardship protecting Tang Sanzang on his journey

to the West. Besides, now that you're a big shot, you've got plenty to eat and live comfortably—why go through all that trouble on the moon?"

"I, Old Sun, am different from the rest. I pursue personal fulfillment and a place in history. True, I became famous for accomplishing a great feat by retrieving the scriptures from the

West. But that's in the past. Today is the era of reform and opening up. As Chairman Mao said, 'Don't live off past achievements; strive for new accomplishments.' Therefore, I, Old Sun, am riding this wave too. I intend to make a name for myself in the market economy and contribute more to the Four Modernizations."

"I don't think there's any need to seek such fame. Achieving success in one's career not only requires enduring great hardships but also means offending and harming many people. Look at Xiang

Yu, the Conqueror of Chu in history. He trusted the false promises of the 'benevolent' Liu Bang and spared him. Not only did this ruin himself, but it also led to the downfall of countless relatives

and friends. In the end, his family was destroyed, and he took his own life at the Wu River.

"Take Genghis Khan, for instance. It wasn't until the bones of his enemies piled up like mountains that he unified China. Though

he became the emperor with the largest empire in history, later generations still mocked him, saying he 'knew only how to draw his bow and shoot eagles.' Think about it—what value is there in such success?" the Moon Shell Plate retorted.

"Cut the crap and let me go." With that, Wukong rolled his eyes and brandished his golden staff.

"Since you're so stubborn, just hand over the toll," the Moon Shell Plate said, playing the role of a rogue.

"You're pulling this stunt on me? Watch this!" Wukong said, swinging his Golden Monkey Staff at the Moon Shell Plate. The Moon Shell Plate didn't back down either, wielding his stone weapon as he engaged Sun Wukong in a fierce battle. Instantly, sand and stones flew through the air with a whistling roar. Sun Wukong saw that although this creature possessed boundless strength, his fighting lacked any set pattern. In no time, he spotted an opening and struck him with a single blow of his staff, splitting him in two and leaving him sprawled on the ground. Suddenly, a crack appeared in the ground, and clear water gushed upward.

"Kedaizi, what's going on here?"

"Boss, you two were fighting so fiercely, you scared the piss out of me."

"What? Is that water on the ground your pathetic urine?"

"No, no, that's groundwater! This means we've got a real shot at developing this place." Ke Daizi was thrilled.

"What are you talking about? Everyone says there can't be water on the moon, and even if there is, it's been evaporated by the sun's intense heat," Wukong said skeptically.

"That's right. While water on the lunar surface has evaporated,

the water beneath the surface isn't so easily evaporated. Because the Moon's rotational forces cause tectonic plate movements—pushing, pulling, and twisting—on its surface, generating friction and heat within the lunar mantle. At the boundary between the lunar crust and the mantle, this heat transforms into subterranean water.

Meanwhile, the lunar core is pushed outward by centrifugal forces, causing friction against the inner walls of the lunar mantle plates. This friction generates heat and electricity, transforming the mantle's rock into magma. This heat continuously flows toward the cooler regions of the lunar crust, resulting in the formation of even more groundwater at certain depths within the Moon. Just as in the arid deserts of Earth, where vast groundwater resources are generated at the boundary between hot and cold underground sources and stored beneath the surface—and may even evolve into oil—

“So, just like other rotating planets, the Moon must have water or other liquids beneath or on its surface—it's just a matter of quantity, location, and the specific minerals present!”

“I don't believe it. Let me hit it some more to see just how much water there really is.” With that, he began striking the ground relentlessly with his Golden Monkey Staff.

“Boss, stop hitting it! Stop hitting it! If you keep going, we won't be able to leave. Look, the water is getting deeper and deeper.”

“All right, all right, I'll listen to you and stop. Let me just taste this water first,” said Wukong as he bent down, cupped his hands, and drank the water.

“Boss, you can't drink that water—it's poisonous!” Ke Daizi rushed forward to stop him.

“You fool, Ke! How could the water here possibly be poisonous? Let me tell you, on my journey to the West to retrieve the

scriptures, I learned all sorts of advanced knowledge—like food safety. That's why I didn't just accept any food out of malice; I gave the meals from wealthy households to the Master, Sha Wujing, and myself. As for the haphazard handouts from poor families, I

gave those to our youngest brother, Zhu Bajie. We're paid according to our work. Every day I worry about this and that—especially Master's safety, or when we'll finally complete our spiritual cultivation, retrieve the true scriptures, and I can return to Mount Huaguo to live out my days as the King of the Grasslands, enjoying a life of peace and no longer enduring these hardships."

No matter where we look, all sorts of demons and monsters seem to be attacking us. I'm truly at my wits' end. Though my food is better than Old Pig's, it's certainly not as good as what he eats in his trough. He's content in his pen, never bothered by this or that. No matter how good or bad the food is, he eats his fill. He even finds joy along the journey to obtain the scriptures, always happy and carefree. Once, Brother Sha Wujing told him, "Next time, don't eat the food Sun Wukong gives you—just throw it all away." But he said, "What's there to be afraid of? When I'm hungry, I eat; I never turn my nose up at food. I sleep at least as soundly as a log every day. Old Pig has raised me to be fatter and more robust than all of you—that's real skill."

Later, when I was running a tour business on Mount Huaguo, some ladies and young women came to see me. Their mouths were so dry they were practically smoking, yet they refused to drink my water, claiming it wasn't purified or distilled, and that it was unsanitary and polluted. I explained to them that the human body needs various natural substances for synthesis, including the fresh oxygen rich in elements synthesized and evolved overnight—which we absorb during our morning exercises—and that the more of this we get, the better it is for our health. Besides, this lake water from the deep mountains and ancient forests has

no factories and is free from harmful pollutants. Just look at my grandchildren—generation after generation has drunk this water, and none of them have ever had cancer or bronchitis; they're all in great shape.

Besides, being too clean isn't necessarily a good thing. As one scientist explained, the London Cancer Institute conducted a survey of children from affluent families and found that their risk of developing leukemia is ten times higher than it was eighty years ago. As society becomes more developed, some parents keep their homes spotless, preventing their children from coming into contact with any bacteria to train their immune systems—which actually hinders their growth! For example, when vegetables are attacked by pests, they produce antibodies; when humans consume them, we gain the same antibacterial benefits.

So vegetables covered in black spots aren't necessarily unhealthy; on the contrary, they can actually be beneficial to our health. But they just wouldn't listen—they refused to drink it. Later, I labeled the bottles "Sun Wukong's Immortal Delight" natural water, selling them for two yuan a bottle. My goodness—at first, I couldn't sell a single one, but later, I couldn't keep them in stock. These ladies and young women said, "Drinking Sun Wukong's Immortal Delight natural water puts our minds at ease. It even has a sweet aftertaste—it really tastes better than the city tap water!"

"That's right. Until we fully understand science, it's better to relax and trust our instincts. And don't think that eating a certain food will cause a serious illness. Once, I caught a severe cold, and the doctor said it had turned into a virus. So I drank plenty of hot ginger tea, kept my bed warm, and got plenty of rest

for two or three days—and I was cured. It's much harder to get seriously ill that way."

"Actually, we have our own set of hygiene management measures

to ensure that the water flowing down from the mountains is 'contaminated' only by substances from nature that are beneficial to the human body, meeting the needs of all bodily functions. Of course, it tastes better than tap water. The real danger in this world is ignorance of science. Exaggerating facts for profit causes mental pollution and fear, which easily leads to depression and other illnesses. Many people even die of fright, and that's when hospitals, crematoriums, and profiteers strike it rich.

"Never mind. I've already taken a few sips of water, but I can't learn from the experiences of those ladies and young misses here. They fret over this and that all day long, even going to the hospital to get medicine to 'detoxify' themselves. We two science geeks are just destined for this kind of hardship. Let's just keep moving."

Ke Daizi picked up his backpack and walked forward with Wukong. In the distance, they saw a burly man with a dark face waving at Wukong and shouting, "Boss, boss! I've got a treasure to sell—interested?"

Upon hearing this, Wukong thought to himself, "If this man has a treasure to sell, I'd better see what kind of treasure it is." Having made up his mind, he replied, "What kind of treasure do you have to sell?" As he spoke, Wukong had already reached the dark-faced man.

"It's that black, shiny thing right at your feet."

Kedaozi stepped forward, picked it up with his hand, and saw that it looked like coal. He asked, "Do you produce coal here too?"

"Yes, but there's very little of it. Only a few places produce coal," the dark-faced man replied.

"It's impossible for coal to form in just a few places. My teacher explained it clearly when I was in school: coal is formed

when primeval forests undergo tectonic shifts, and are compressed and transformed year after year. The deeper the layers and the longer the time, the better the quality of the coal. I know there have never been any primeval forests on your moon—how could there possibly be coal?” Ke Daizi asked skeptically.

Wukong stood curiously to the side, listening to their debate.

The burly man with the dark face suddenly shouted, “Quick, get out of the way!” He yanked Ke Daizi aside, but by the time he tried to pull Wukong, it was too late. In the blink of an eye, a surge of heat scorched Wukong’s Eight-Treasure Robe. Wukong fought the flames while stripping off the charred robe, muttering under his breath, “Fake goods—they’re useless

after all.” With that, he tossed it to the ground, plucked a single hair, and instantly transformed it into a new robe to wear. He asked, “Ke Dazi, how could that burst of heat have been so powerful just now? It even burned my Eight-Treasure Robe.”

“Yeah, that was intense. I’m going to ask this dark-faced brother about it.”

“Young man, this heat wave originates from the ‘Lunar Core’ —the creator within our moon. Besides its own high temperature and pressure, it’s driven by the centrifugal force generated by the moon’s eccentric rotation. This force constantly pushes and squeezes the lunar mantle plates, causing friction that generates heat and raises temperatures, eventually transforming the mantle into lava. The high-temperature lava then accelerates toward the cooler regions of the lunar crust.” Inevitably, as the lunar crustal plates shift across the mantle plate surface, the cold air currents moving toward the center collide at the extreme boundaries, generating more groundwater or transforming into new substances. When the internal compression, friction, and heat generation within the lunar crust create even higher temperatures and pressures, the groundwater is transformed into “mixed



hydrocarbon" oil. As this "mixed hydrocarbon" oil is subjected to further compression, friction, and heat, generating even higher temperatures and pressures, it triggers phenomena similar to the combustion and explosion of natural gas, resulting in lunarquakes or volcanic eruptions. These events shatter and process the cold rock layers of the lunar crust. The unburned "mixed hydrocarbon" oil seeps into the shattered rock. Under the energy generated by the moon's non-uniform rotation—in an absolutely sealed, static environment—the rock is transformed into combustible "stone" coal.

Seeing that they were going on and on, Wukong muttered to himself that he had other business to attend to. He said to the burly man with the dark face, "Alright, thanks for the explanation. We get it now. Besides the factors that led to the formation of existing coal, there's also the major factor of high temperature and pressure generated by the Earth's core pushing and grinding, along with the conversion of groundwater into 'mixed hydrocarbon' oil—that's what turned it into coal. Ke Dazi, don't ask any more questions. The deal is set. We'll talk about the price when we send a truck to haul it back home. Goodbye!"

With that, he grabbed Ke Dazi and kept walking. Suddenly, a woman appeared by the roadside: "Boss, what are you doing here?" she asked warmly.

"What's this? Do you know me, young lady?" Wukong wondered. Glancing at the woman's fierce appearance, he thought to himself, This isn't someone to mess with. We'd better hurry on our way.

Just as they were about to leave, the woman spoke again: "Of course I recognize you—the famously notorious Monkey King who caused such a ruckus in Heaven. Who doesn't know you?" With that, the young woman giggled.

"Hey, young lady, why are you speaking so rudely? Thank

goodness my grandchildren aren' t here. If they heard an outsider disrespecting me like this, they' d pick up bad habits and start calling me 'Monkey' or 'Old Monkey.' Alright, I' ll concede defeat to you today. I hope you' ll look out for me in the future, but I' ve got business to attend to and no time for small talk." With that, he turned and walked on with Ke Daizi.

"Great Sage, you can' t go that way. Last time someone came here looking for treasure, they took just one step and their whole body rotted away. If you don' t believe me, go take a look—there' s still one leg left that hasn' t rotted yet." She pointed ahead with her hand.

Ke Daizi followed her gesture and stepped closer to look. Sure enough, one leg had not yet rotted away. He was startled and hurriedly said, "Great Sage, we really can' t go that way. Let' s turn back immediately."

"No way, you nerd. I never backtrack. May I ask, miss, is this place the Pool of Rebirth or a slaughterhouse?"

"No, no," the young lady shook her head hurriedly.

"Then why is there still one leg that hasn' t rotted?" Wukong asked, puzzled.

"Oh dear, that' s a long story. That leg belongs to a wise being from the planet Maya 65 million years ago. They also came here to explore and develop the area, but because they weren' t familiar with the terrain, this is what happened. That' s why I' m advising you not to go through here."

"No way. What kind of wasteland is this place?" Wukong said.

"This place isn' t bad at all—it' s full of treasures. Look, that mist rising up there is natural gas, and that black stuff down below is oil," the young lady said, pointing to the ground.

"What? You have oil on the moon too?" Wukong jumped up in

delight and shouted, "I' m going to strike it rich! I' m going to strike it rich!"

"Yes, we have oil here too, but the quality isn' t as good as the oil on Earth," the young lady told Wukong.

"Of course. There aren' t large quantities of animal carcasses here, so the quality is definitely not as good as the oil on Earth," Wukong said, feeling a bit smug.

"No, no," the young lady said, "Animal carcasses are just an external factor. Look at Earth—nature doesn' t practice family planning, yet plants and animals always maintain a relative balance. So, you can' t produce that much oil and natural gas based on just one condition. For example, why is there so much around the equator?"

"What you' re saying isn' t scientific," the nerd interjected in rebuttal. "There can be no doubt about the prerequisites for oil formation. Without the compounds from the carcasses beneath your feet, oil simply cannot be produced."

"Your theory is from Newton' s era. I believe that the combined force of different elements, within a unified field, can produce different results. Although we don' t have large quantities of animal remains here, our lunar core is constantly being pushed outward from the cavity by centrifugal force, causing friction with

the lunar mantle plates and generating heat. Furthermore, the displacement and centripetal motion of the lunar crust plates create additional friction, intensifying the convection of heat from the mantle toward the cooler regions of the crust. At the extreme boundary between hot and cold, more water molecules are converted, giving rise to groundwater. Under the extreme high-temperature and high-pressure conditions of the lunar mantle plates, this groundwater is converted into "mixed hydrocarbons"—oil. Then, within the unified field of irregular combined motion, it undergoes further processing and fermentation

through high-temperature, high-pressure confinement within the system. Ultimately, this results in the formation of petroleum."

"If I understand you correctly, this 'irregular combined motion' is quite the inventor," asked Ke Dazi.

"Of course. You must understand that the quality of a movement's structural composition is the key to success or failure. Let me illustrate this with an example from the book \*300 Examples

of Getting Rich\*. Please listen carefully. To save costs in raising pigs, farmers turn waste into treasure. They grind dried rice straw into chaff using a feed grinder or a cotton-carding machine, then mix it with appropriate other substances to create concentrated feed for pigs, fish, and chickens. Although the method is simple, even the slightest oversight can lead to failure. Here is the preparation method: Place 0.7 kilograms of quicklime in a basin, add 10 times the amount of water, and stir until dissolved. Let it sit for 15 minutes, then remove the clear liquid from the top—discard the lime residue. Dilute the clear lime solution with water to a total of 250 kilograms, then add 0.1 kilograms of baking soda, 0.6 kilograms of table salt, and 0.1 kilograms of rice straw ash (which is straw ash obtained by burning straw), and stir to form a uniform mixture. Then, add 100 kg of rice bran powder to the mixture, stirring constantly to ensure even moisture distribution. Then transfer the mixture into a pit or a bio-bag, compacting it as you go. Cover the entire pit or bio-bag with a double layer of plastic film, ensuring it fits snugly against the walls. Seal the sides tightly with soil to prevent any gas or rainwater from entering. Allow it to rest for at least 20 days under this pressurized environment.

This strictly controlled resting environment represents a momentary opportunity for functional supplementation amidst the uneven conversion of self-rotation. Only then is the mass fully transformed through the mechanisms of regeneration and

recombination, ultimately yielding energy or force derived from the replicated mass—neither of which is conserved. The resulting mass weighs three times as much as the original straw, and the evolved quality is superior: its crude protein and crude fat content exceed those of corn and rice, and it contains 18 essential amino acids, all of which surpass the levels found in corn and rice feed. Its digestibility and biological value are superior to those of grain feed, and it is highly palatable.

This is the result of synthesizing the aforementioned forms of motion and conditions within this unified field, or analyzing it through the theory of the unified field. Only by doing so can new matter be transformed and additional energy replicated. If each of us masters this principle, we can seek opportunities for synthesis, remain clear-headed in the face of events, and maintain balance in our dealings with the world. This allows things to develop in a positive direction according to our intentions, enabling life to progress along a shortcut.

"Miss, what you're saying is making me more and more confused. There's no such thing as a 'compulsory unified field' in this world that can generate new quality and replicate more energy—it's utter nonsense."

"Great Sage, why is your companion speaking so harshly? I'm not someone to be trifled with. For your sake, I'll ask him a

few questions first. If he can't answer, don't blame me for being blunt." The young lady was getting a little angry.

Wukong looked at Ke Daizi: "You little rascal, I just told you not to say much as soon as we stepped out. You were supposed to just listen to what others were saying, whether good or bad. Now look what you've done—you've gotten us into trouble."

"Boss, don't worry—let her ask," Ke Dazi said confidently.

"Fine. You're a stubborn one. If I ask you deeper

questions, you' ll say I' m deliberately making things difficult for you. I' ll just ask: Why does the Earth' s rotation sometimes appear uneven? Why do people need to sleep? And why do sunspots on the Sun' s surface fluctuate in number in a cyclical pattern as it rotates? Alright, I won' t ask any more. Just answer these three questions for me."

"Um, um..." Ke Dazī scratched his head in thought, while Wukong urged him from the side, "Hurry up and answer! If you can' t, I' m going to teach you a lesson." Saying this, Wukong rolled up his sleeves as if to strike.

"Step aside, Great Sage." The young lady pushed Wukong aside, grabbed Ke Dazī by the collar, and said, "These three questions actually have one answer. You can' t even answer them—it' s because you can' t replicate more energy. And you still want to invent a perpetual motion machine? If I don' t give you

a good beating today, you won' t come to your senses. You need to go out and read widely, or look to the natural world—like the universe' s spiral and vortex-shaped galaxies—to find a model for a perpetual motion machine. Only then will you come to your senses and be able to answer." With that, she dragged Ke Daizi off to beat him.

Seeing Ke Dazī being pushed and beaten by the young lady, looking so pitiful, Sun Wukong gradually couldn' t bear it anymore: "Miss, for my sake, please spare him this once. Don' t hit him anymore."

"No way." With that, she delivered two more slaps, one on each cheek, and blood trickled from Ke Daizi' s mouth.

Wukong was furious. He shouted, "Stop right there! How dare you treat my people like this? Even when beating a dog, one should show some respect for its master. Since you won' t give me any face, I' ll have to show you what I' m made of." With that, Wukong drew his Golden Monkey Staff and swung it at the girl' s waist. The

young lady didn't back down either; she drew her Twin Drum Swords to meet him. The two fought for over twenty rounds, but the young lady gradually found herself unable to hold her ground. She opened her mouth, and thick smoke billowed out, sending a wall of fire hurtling toward Sun Wukong. Just then, his Eight-Treasure Robe caught fire again. Wukong rolled on the spot and swept the Lady to the ground with a sweeping kick. The Lady rolled over and set the oil in the cave ablaze. Instantly, there was a massive explosion;

a sea of oil and flames shot skyward, thick smoke billowed, and the fire grew ever more intense, the heat making it hard for anyone to breathe. Wukong hurriedly pointed his Golden Monkey Staff toward the sky, twirled it twice, and chanted, "Thunder God, reveal yourself..." Instantly, a hazy fog descended, thick clouds rolled in, and a large section of the cave ceiling collapsed. There, the Thunder God was seen riding a fiery beast backward down from the Heavenly Pass, while the Lightning Goddess, in a fit of anger, wildly lashed her golden serpent as she fled the Ox's residence, amidst a flurry of thunder and lightning.

Ke Daizi squinted at the sky and asked, "Boss, that thunder and lightning, the clanging and crashing, the earth-shattering chaos—it's truly terrifying. They say this thunder specifically strikes those who do evil deeds, is that right?"

"That's right. Some lightning strikes are strange—they'll even find their way into houses, winding through every nook and cranny to strike someone. It might be those who commit evil deeds in secret. When thunder and lightning strike, their hearts are filled with such fear that the electrons in their brainwaves amplify, connecting them to the heavens and earth, causing them to be struck by lightning. As long as you do good deeds and learn

about lightning safety—avoid provoking it, don't get too anxious, don't carry conductive objects, and don't stand under large trees or seek shelter from the rain under eaves—you generally won't

be struck by lightning.

Of course, if you encounter a lightning strike generated by a massive photon sphere—which accelerates toward the ground while replicating vast amounts of energy—not only is its destructive force against buildings exceptionally powerful, but it also leaves people completely defenseless.

Additionally, women should avoid conceiving in harsh environments or during severe weather, such as strong winds, heavy fog, extreme cold, or intense heat. They should especially abstain from sexual intercourse during thunderstorms: for the chaotic energy of thunder and lightning, the darkness of heaven and earth, the partial eclipses of the sun and moon, and the earth-shaking tremors will disrupt the synthesis of the elliptical-moving energy within the human body. If this energy is discharged in large quantities, it will harm the person and bring ill fortune. It will harm a hundred men and cause women to fall ill. The child born will surely be insane, foolish, mute, deaf, crippled, lame, blind, one-eyed, or short-lived. Alternatively, the child may have poor sexual function. Most of these men are honest souls who are not skilled in intimacy; they often rush and fail prematurely. However, the young bride does not understand that she should let him rest for twenty minutes before continuing. If they engage in intimacy several times over the course of a month, premature ejaculation will gradually improve within one or two months. Yet many rush to file for divorce over such a trivial matter. [However, such men are suited for physically demanding work, such as bricklaying.] This is a fundamental solution to ensuring the birth of healthy children and a happy sexual life within the family—it is not superstition but has scientific basis.

You must understand that there are many evildoers nowadays. If the Thunder God were not here to enforce the law and mete out punishment, they would become even more lawless. Oh, Thunder God,



you really ought to strike down and publicly execute a few more of those corrupt officials who abuse their power, disobedient and unfilial children, thieves and swindlers, and those immoral, heartless scoundrels.”

“Then why do we have thunder and lightning? Can lightning rods prevent lightning strikes?”

“God does not play dice. Thunder may form when strong thermal currents and dust particles on the ground—much like the scorched waters of the Pacific Ocean in summer—rise as powerful thermal currents straight into the sky toward high-pressure zones, generating bursts of turbulence in the high-pressure zone. As they accelerate back toward the low-pressure zone at ground level, they form a cyclonic vortex. This vortex spins and replicates the dust particles and water molecules within it into particles. When these particles strike the ground, they first collide with ice formed from raindrops in the air or with dark objects, causing a flash of lightning. Some intense flashes of light directed toward the ground actually move in non-uniform centripetal vortex motion; they are aggregated and replicated into spherical photons with a central void. The matter at the center of the spherical photon’s void is pushed and frictioned by centrifugal force, thereby triggering an electromagnetic wave discharge process. For instance, when a downward-accelerating beam strikes an ice crystal, a raindrop, or dark matter, it undergoes forces similar to those acting on a tree—the interplay of centripetal and centrifugal forces—evolving into discharges resembling the branches and twigs growing from a tree trunk. This first produces a flash of light, followed immediately by a deafening clap of thunder, much like the sound of cold water being poured into a hot oil pan. Similarly, when raindrops or ice particles are subjected to high temperatures and pressure, transforming into hydrocarbon mixtures, thunderclaps also erupt.

Therefore, when electromagnetic waves are guided by forces from the ground, lightning strikes occur, destroying buildings and harming people and animals. Consider the case of a 58-year-old man in South Carolina who was struck by lightning five times, divorced five times, and was struck again—the sixth time leaving him unconscious, with burns on the soles of his feet and blisters on his legs. Think about it: if his body didn't have that "navigational object," would the electromagnetic waves really strike him nearly to death time and time again? Or perhaps lightning is truly high-voltage electricity, and it would have killed him outright.

Although the United States is a free country and divorce is generally considered disgraceful, perhaps the lightning's electromagnetic waves recognized his unfaithful behavior and were warning him to nurture his marital relationship—so he wouldn't divorce again. Of course, some people facing great hardships suffer from serious illnesses or disabilities—such as sudden blindness, muteness, or migraines—and are too poor to afford treatment or find a cure. Through electromagnetic wave therapy from lightning, the meridian blockages causing these ailments can be cleared, instantly curing conditions like blindness, muteness, and migraines, thereby granting them the happiness in life bestowed by Heaven.

For instance, on my journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, there was an occasion when I was walking under a large tree with the Golden Monkey Staff slung over my shoulder and was struck by lightning. At that moment, a surge of heat rushed into my left temple, feeling as though a warm current were massaging it. Suddenly, there was a loud clap of thunder, and I thought I was completely finished. Yet not only did I not die, but this lightning strike significantly alleviated the pain in the affected area of my left head. The pain in my other temple, which wasn't

struck by lightning, remained just as bad. Perhaps I haven't done enough good deeds yet, so Heaven hasn't granted me a complete cure for my headaches and the great happiness of life.

As for whether this small lightning rod actually works toward off lightning, I think it might just be a psychological comfort. If it were designed with a large dish, similar to a satellite dish, to deflect lightning strikes—or even better, if the large dish were mounted on an adjustable ball bearing, with the lower bearing hole fixed to the end of a spring—then even if it were struck by consecutive lightning bolts, all the strikes would hit the large dish. The force of the strikes would then cause vibrations or bouncing through the spring, making the lightning protection more effective. Plus, it could be used long-term.”

Just then, the thunder grew even louder. Seeing that it still hadn't rained, Wukong pointed his Golden Monkey Staff toward the sky and twirled it a few times, chanting, “Dragon Kings, appear...” Immediately, the Four Dragon Kings of the East, South, North, and West Seas rushed to the scene. “Great Sage, is there anything you need help with?”

Wukong replied, “Quickly put out the great fire.” The Dragon King of the East Sea immediately issued his command. Instantly, rain flooded the heavens and earth; the Milky Way poured down from above, while white waves surged below, and divine dragons lifted the Yangtze River to pour it down.

“Wow, these Dragon Kings are real friends,” Wukong remarked with admiration.

“Great Sage, we can't let them keep pouring water—the fire seems to be getting stronger the more they pour!” Ke Daizi cried out anxiously.

Wukong looked and saw that it was indeed true; the fire was growing rather than dying down. He asked, “Kedaizi, what's the reason for this? All this water can't put it out.”

**"I think it's an oil fire. You can't put it out with water—oil is heavier than water and contains oxygen. Only when a fire first starts can you douse it with a sudden deluge of water. But for a blaze this big, no matter how hard they rain, it's**

**useless—it's actually making things worse,"** Ke Daizi explained to Wukong.

**"Hey, hey, Dragon Kings of the Four Seas, stop pouring! Stop pouring! You should all hurry back now. Thank you very much,"** Wukong shouted into the air. Hearing this, the Dragon Kings swayed their bodies, shook their heads, and each returned to their Dragon Palaces.

The fire continued to rage, its flames reaching all the way to the Moon Palace. Sun Wukong suddenly remembered using sand to extinguish the fire. He pointed his Golden Monkey Staff toward the sky again, twirled it a few times, and chanted, **"Sand-Pushing Boy, appear..."** Immediately, the Sand-Pushing Boy arrived. Without delay, he and the Stone-Spreading Lord displayed their divine powers, showering the sky with sand and stones. Instantly, the intensity of the fire diminished. Ke Daizi also took glass bottles from his bag and smashed them one by one into the sea of flames. Before long, the fire was completely extinguished, though thick smoke still billowed from the ground. Seeing that the fire had been put out, the Sand-Pushing Boy and the Stone-Scattering Lord quietly returned to report their mission.

Wukong noticed that wherever Kedaizi had thrown the bottle moments ago, the fire had gone out. He asked, **"What kind of gadget is this? It's so powerful!"** **"Boss, this is a fire extinguisher specifically designed for oil fires. It creates a vacuum instantly, which puts out the fire."** Seeing that smoke was still rising from the ground, Wukong reached into his bag, grabbed one, and tossed it down.

**"Boss, for ordinary oil fires, as long as the ground**

temperature isn't too high, you generally shouldn't throw any more fire extinguishing grenades. But if a thatched house or cotton warehouse is on fire and still smoking, you need to inspect it thoroughly. "Even if the fire is extinguished at the time, it often reignites after a while—sometimes even after people have gone to sleep. With oil storage fires, you also have to watch out for oil drums exploding. Those things explode with tremendous force; they

can fly into the sky and crash down on someone, killing them instantly."

"Oh. Now I've learned a bit about firefighting. I also realize that the strange glow on the moon is actually caused by fire and smoke. Look—the color of the sky over there is different from here;

it seems to have grown darker. But why doesn't the glow fade away?"

"That's a simple question," Ke Daizi said with great confidence. "Given the current situation, there's too much smoke inside the lunar crust, and the Moon's gravitational pull is too weak, so it just won't dissipate. But the glow we see from the Alphonsus Crater on Earth—how it suddenly brightens, dims, turns red, turns blue, and emits light—might be a completely different matter. It is related to the movement of the lunar core and the displacement of the plate-like craters on the lunar crust—specifically, the amount of heat and electrical discharge generated by the friction caused by these movements, which can be fast or slow. When the rotation is fast, the friction generates more photons, which escape through cavities or irregular fissures. When combined with the light emitted by friction on Earth or the light reflected by mirrors from the Sun, the result is a bright white glow. When rotation slows, friction and heat generation decrease, causing the light to gradually fade from white to blue, then red, and finally dim—much like the shifting hues on a colorful butterfly's wings as they flutter at varying speeds. Of

course, there may be other causes, so it would be best to wait until we've thoroughly examined the lunar core before drawing a final conclusion."

"Alright, the fire's out and the smoke has cleared. Let's get moving."

"Master, look at yourself—you're a mess. You're covered in sweat, and your face is a patchwork of dark and light spots. Find some water to wash your face; there's no rush to leave just yet."

"I'm a Buddha with a weathered face anyway. We'll deal with that once we find a place with water." With that, Wukong strode forward. Suddenly, he stumbled backward a few steps, shaking his feet violently until his monk's shoes flew off. He took off his socks to reveal feet that were bright red from the burn, tingling with a dull, stinging pain. "Good heavens, I'm practically fried! Thank goodness there aren't any blisters—it's just a minor injury."

"Even if it blistered, there's nothing to fear. There are plenty of folk remedies and herbs for burns. If the burn isn't severe, just apply some toothpaste or soy sauce. You can also use: 21 grams of *Sanguisorba officinalis*, 10 grams of *Rheum palmatum*, 10 grams of *Polygonum cuspidatum*, and 10 grams of *Melia azedarach* bark. Grind the four herbs into a very fine powder, mix with sesame oil, and apply the paste three times a day. It usually heals within 3–7 days. It relieves pain immediately and leaves no scars after healing.

If large blisters are present, lancing them first is recommended before applying the ointment.

This formula is simple, highly effective, inexpensive, and easy to use, making it suitable for widespread promotion to benefit the local community. Do not underestimate it because of its simplicity; I hope everyone will take it seriously!



...the liquor can be applied topically. Soak gauze or cotton in continuously dripping liquor onto the affected area to keep it for half an hour; for severe though it may sting slightly at first, the pain will subside. The burn will not become inflamed or suppurate afterward, and saving the heart.

...illy thing to say. Do you think we'd want something to go and? Ke Daizi, this path really isn't one we should take, but I won't turn back now. I'll go check the route."

"Yes, boss. You rest for a while; I'll go scout the route." "Ke Dazi carefully examined the terrain and discovered that this area was the arc-shaped fold belt described in the book

\*On Earthquakes\*. It was composed of a straight-line compression zone located in the central part of the concave side of the arc-shaped fold belt. Its structure resembled the Chinese character for 'mountain' (ft). This oil field was situated in the central part of the concave side of the arc, featuring several straight-line compression zones with the main axis of the ridge pointing directly toward the apex of the fore-arc but not quite reaching it. Between the ridge and the fore-arc lies a relatively flat, horseshoe-shaped shield. This mountain-shaped structure is undergoing a transverse movement toward the equator.

"Boss, let's head out from the oil field in this direction, then turn back in this direction. It's a bit of a detour, but not too far."

"Alright, let's take this path," they said. Grabbing their

luggage, the two set off at a brisk pace, gradually noticing that the path was growing narrower and more difficult to traverse.

"Science nerd, how far is it to the core?"

"Theoretically, we've barely started. We've only covered about an eighth of the way. Plus, we'll have to travel for over ten days through the night before we reach daylight, at which point the path will finally widen and become easier to traverse. A single rotation of the moon is equivalent to over twenty days on Earth."

"Good heavens, I'm exhausted. People say going to the moon is hard, but I think going underground is even harder. Forget it, we're not walking any further today. Let's eat, rest, and sleep."

"What's that supposed to mean? Do you still need to eat and sleep now that you've become a god?"

"You don't know a damn thing about gods. We call upright people gods, those who practice deviant ways ghosts, and those who oppose

us the 'Demon Sect.' It's much like how you scientists rank your levels—researcher, professor, mentor, PhD, and so on.

Or take these four lines I've spoken: 'Autumn winds and frost turn leaves yellow; the laws of nature cannot be stopped; go with

the flow and you'll find clarity; live in moderation and happiness will last.' The Confucians say this is a poem; the Buddhists say it's a sutra; the Taoists say it's a hymn; but the common folk say, 'What the hell is this—poems, hymns, sutras? It's just a made-up rhyme, a couple of lines.' Meanwhile, certain low-class factions in the underworld—such as the "Guanyu Cult" or

"Underworld Messengers"—can use this to deceive ordinary people, thereby extorting their wealth. Otherwise, if they were straightforward and didn't resort to summoning spirits or catching ghosts, they'd struggle to obtain money or offerings. Of course, they do possess some abilities.

Actually, calling us "gods" makes sense—our outlook on



**Life and approach to health differ from ordinary people' s. For instance, you believe that "life lies in movement," which can prevent and cure illness. Ancient people, however, believed that "life lies in stillness" —closing one' s eyes slightly, entering a meditative state, practicing Zen, or qigong to prolong life. We gods, on the other hand, believe that life encompasses movement, rest, nutrition, healing, and doing good deeds. The scope of doing good deeds is vast. For instance, if someone in trouble asks for your help, do your best to assist them. If you encounter a shrew who points at your face and curses you as an "old fossil" who "lives off the public," just smile sweetly and never get angry.**

**Or if you suddenly feel an intense emotional distress, or a headache so severe it feels like your head is about to explode, the only way to relieve yourself—even if there is no bed and the ground is filthy—is to lie down wherever you are to rest or sleep; otherwise, you will miss the most crucial six-hour window. This is because when a person lies down to rest or sleep, the body' s physical and energetic structures are realigned. That is why a severely injured dog, after lying on the ground for about half an hour, can come back to life—yet people say the dog survived only because it was reincarnated from the planet Saturn.**

**If you handle these matters properly, you can extend your lifespan and turn misfortune into good fortune. Moreover, there is much wisdom to be found in these areas; it is truly worth studying and practicing diligently. Therefore, we who believe in God understand the comprehensive balance between eating and sleeping even better. Look at the world' s technologically advanced and wealthy nations—they all believe in "God." After all, not everyone can invent a single sheet of paper or a single character. Moreover, such creations often manifest only at specific times or through specific individuals. As for these matters**

concerning the primordial energy of the universe, I'll explain them to you in detail later using unified field theory when we have time. By the way, I forgot to ask you these past few days—why do you walk with a slight limp? And why do you keep scratching your buttocks? Do you have lice?"

"No, it's just that it's really itchy and uncomfortable."

"You shouldn't scratch with your hands. Itching comes from dirt. If you have no other options, you can relieve the discomfort by pressing down hard with your fingernail to numb the itch. Afterward, quickly apply some smelly soap to the area and wash it for a while longer, or wash it a couple more times, and the itching will go away."

"What? There's such a thing as 'stinky soap'?"

"Soap without any fragrance or medicinal scent is called 'stinky soap.' I'm poor and can't afford medicine, so I have to use stinky soap to fight inflammation and kill germs. Quick, pull down your pants so I can take a look." As he spoke, Wukong forcefully pulled Kedaizi's pants halfway down, revealing a large red bump on his white buttocks.

"You clueless fool, no wonder you're walking with such a limp—your butt's all inflamed. Good thing it hasn't burst yet. Now's the time to see what this country doctor's got. I don't like using Western medicine—injections and IVs—that cost so much to treat external conditions. All it takes is a few coins to buy two bags of Ruyi Jinhuang Powder from the herbal shop, and it'll cure you. It's especially effective for boils and skin abscesses. Just mix the powder with water into a paste and apply it to the boil—it'll be gone in five or six days at most, or as little as a day." As he spoke, Wukong waved his hand into the air, and a bag of Ruyi Jinhuang Powder appeared in his palm.

"When I was facing hardships on my journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, I was constantly short on supplies.

Sometimes I didn't even have hot water or wine to mix the powder with, and there was no one to help me change the dressing. I had to grope around behind my own back and rub it dry—wouldn't you say that's pitiful? Now you get to enjoy mixing the powder with water or wine." With that, he applied the paste to the boil, secured it with a cloth, and gave Kedaizi's buttock a light pat. "Get up. How does it feel?"

"Pretty good. The medicine feels cool and soothing when applied—it's really comfortable." "Ha! My medicine speaks for itself. Those charlatans who claim Guan Yu's 'Yin-Destroying Elixir' is a miracle cure are just out to swindle people out of their money. From now on, you'll need to change the dressing at most every two days. If the boils have spread and caused an infection, just take two more doses of Chinese medicine and it'll be completely cured."

For those who love cleanliness, there's no need to take off your shoes every time you enter or leave the house in winter or early spring. Cleanliness is a pleasure, not necessarily a standard of health. If you truly prefer to do so, you must have large, practical slipper covers to wear or provide for guests. Otherwise, prolonged exposure to the cold starting from your feet may actually lead to illnesses like the common cold.

Consider the harsh conditions I endured on my journey to the Western Paradise: no decent food, no warm clothes, and a relentless trek westward. I had to battle demons with real swords and spears; sometimes my injuries were so severe that the bleeding wouldn't stop, so I used Purple Gold Powder to staunch the blood. Even if my tendons were severed or my bones broken, it could quickly stop the bleeding and promote scabbing;

sometimes, once healed, there wouldn't even be a scar. The ancient formula **Zijing San** is actually just a single herb ground into powder—that herb is *Aquilaria sinensis*. Because *Aquilaria sinensis* has a purplish hue, it is also called "Purple Wisteria Incense." Once ground into powder, physicians referred to it as **Zijing San**. In *\*Bencao Tongyuan\**, it is distinguished from Agarwood and Sandalwood as follows:

Agarwood is black, so it enters the Northern channel and regulates the kidneys; sandalwood is yellow, so it enters the Central channel and supports the spleen; and agarwood is red, so it enters the Southern channel and regulates the blood. Furthermore, agarwood enters the blood division and descends, possessing the functions of removing blood stasis, stopping bleeding, and relieving pain. It is described in the

*\*Compendium of Materia Medica\** as follows: Agarwood can treat fractures and wounds, stop bleeding, relieve pain, reduce swelling, and promote tissue regeneration.

If you accidentally cut your finger while cooking or working, simply take a handful of **Zijing San** (Patchouli powder) and press it directly onto the wound to stop the bleeding and relieve pain. Typically, a scab will begin to form the next

day; it won' t hurt or itch, and the hemostatic effect is excellent.

Compared to using mugwort ash for hemostasis, it is clearly more effective, especially since it can relieve pain and promote tissue regeneration—capabilities that mugwort ash lacks.

I also suffered from several intractable chronic illnesses,

which was truly a great ordeal—I simply didn' t have the money to be hospitalized for treatment. My only recourse was to practice self-care day in and day out for decades. When the pain became severe, I would seek out traditional herbal remedies; when I had a little money, I could only afford to buy cheap pills or ointments from the pharmacy. I' ve successfully treated gastrointestinal neurosis, Meniere ' s syndrome, sciatica, rheumatic heart disease, and ankylosing spondylitis. It also alleviated the pain associated with brain cancer and other illnesses at the time, and I even guided those without money to overcome cancer and live for over a decade longer."

"Our boss is just blowing smoke—people with cancer can' t be cured."

"How can cancer be incurable? Science speaks through data. Take fish living in water, for example. The water they drink daily is contaminated by various industrial wastewaters and other pollutants flowing into rivers and out into the oceans. Moreover, in their struggle for survival, they engage in battles over food and other resources. However, the high temperatures generated by

**friction and movement within the fish's body are cooled by the water. Consequently, the food ingested by the fish is not destroyed by high heat but is instead converted into more nutrients. For example, white blood cells, water, sugars, fats, proteins, and**

**other compounds exist in the fish's bloodstream, allowing the fish to grow faster day by day. This is one reason why fish do not develop cancer.**

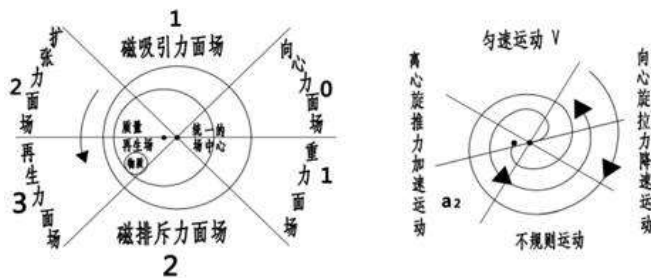
**However, it is not the absence of lungs that prevents fish from developing cancer. Rather, it is their single-circulation blood system, which expels waste directly from the body every day, that prevents them from developing cancer. Furthermore, wild bears kept in zoos for visitors to admire experience greater mental stress and consume excessive amounts of food given by visitors, leading them to develop cancer within a few years. In contrast, wild bears living in natural forests never develop cancer.**

**Furthermore, as reported in the magazine "The Vast World," Canadian scientists studied Salome, a sex worker, for 10 years. They investigated why she did not contract HIV during her 20 years in the industry, yet developed HIV after being out of work for several years and staying at home.**

**To provide a clearer answer to this question, we must first explore how cells evolved, the mechanism behind cell**

membrane rupture, and the evolution of genes. If we compare the elliptical diagram to the eccentric cavity within the heart, as shown in the illustration, when diffused air and blood swirl centripetally into the heart's cavity, they form several white blood cells [see figure below].

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



There are small cavities between any aggregated substances, and large cavities within the spherical shell. The temperature difference between the interior and exterior is not uniform. The hot airflow outside the cell flows toward the cooler center inside the cell, forming centripetal vortices that swirl into several small vortex clusters, all of which are contained within the cell's eccentric cavity field.

However, this field of eccentric cavities within the cell acts like the length of a lever arm, serving as a field that generates additional energy. Furthermore, it functions like a universal machine, accelerating, compressing, and friction-converting the numerous small vortex clusters, drug molecules, and fragments of withered, apoptotic

high cancer cells—regardless of their nature or quantity—into temperatures and pressures, ultimately transforming them into substances such as calcium carbonate or proteins. Any drug entering the eccentric cavity field becomes ineffective.

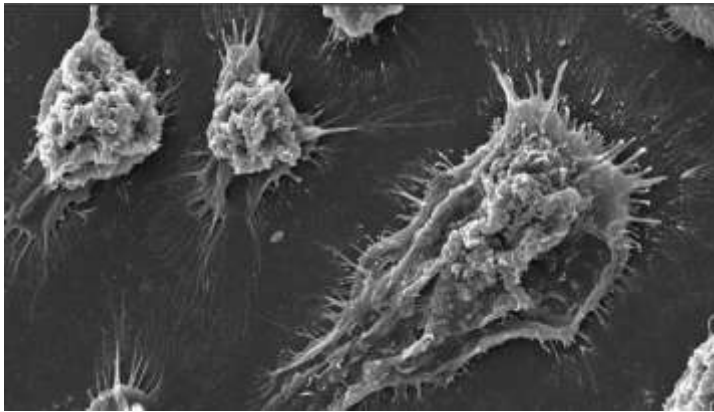
Later, as more diffuse gas, water molecules, cells, and cancer cells enter the body, they evolve into a centripetal vortex ( ) forming a centripetal vortex arm. They then swirl around the eccentric cavity field of the gene ( ), functioning much like the six force-field planes depicted in the elliptical diagram. This illustrates how, during an object's motion, the varying forces acting upon it at each location produce different outcomes. Additionally, when air, small molecules, and cells—such as cancer cells—enter the eccentric void field, they are continuously flung outward by centrifugal rotational force, evolving into another cyclonic arm of the gene that replicates to

generate more energy. In medical theory, this is defined as a set consisting of one X chromosome and one Y chromosome; the human genome contains approximately 3.16 billion DNA base pairs. A base pair is a pair of complementary bases.

The human body also contains approximately 100 trillion cells. The DNA within each cell contains a sequence of 3 billion base pairs, comprising a total of about 70,000 to 100,000 genes. Approximately 35,000



of these genes are functional, capable of gene expression and protein synthesis as well as the large amounts of oxygen required for cellular metabolism.



However, genes lack the ability to perform accurate mathematical calculations or make deletions based on their surrounding environment, such as variations in mass, speed of movement, or distance from the center. Therefore, genes function merely as tools—like photocopiers—that reproduce multiple copies of the same document. They are not multifunctional machines. If researchers rely solely on the above data—such as the fact that the genome contains approximately 3.16 billion DNA base pairs—without conducting systematic research, they may develop new drugs intended to treat conditions like cancer by inducing premature death in tumor cells. Or in neurodegenerative diseases (such as Parkinson's disease) or life-threatening conditions (such as sepsis).! Although this may cause some cells to undergo premature apoptosis due to the new drugs, such drugs that use genetic modification to intervene in biological processes will likely pose significant potential side effects—and

may even interfere with the immune system.

For example, the food people eat and the hot water they drink everyday are processed by the stomach and transformed into gas. This gas enters the eccentric void field within the heart via a centripetal vortex, where it is replicated into numerous white blood cells. Because white blood cells have a very small diameter, while the airflow entering the heart is abundant and extends far from the heart's center, the continuous vortex generates a large number of white blood cells. These white blood cells then engulf impurities within the heart. When ejected from the heart by centrifugal force, the debris phagocytosed by the white blood cells is transformed by this force into more red blood cells, enabling people to live and work with vitality and energy.

As boys and girls consume more and more food each day, it is transformed into energy and further broken down into small molecules within the cells. These small molecules are stored in the eccentric cavities of the cells. These cells evolve into cancer cells—a medical term for cells with high energy levels—which are then replicated by genes to produce even more cancer cells, all of which are stored within the body. This process accelerates a child's growth, height, and weight gain day by day. Naturally, as children consume more food day by day, their bodies produce an increasing amount of excess waste. It is similar to a smartphone that accumulates too much junk data from daily internet use.

If the phone has ample storage, not cleaning it up is not a major issue, and certain files may even be reused later. However, in medical terms, this is referred to as the development of cancer-causing viruses.

If a mother experiences high stress, hard labor, nutritional deficiencies, or environmental pollution during pregnancy, she may be unable to produce red blood cells with sufficient energy. This can be passed down to the next generation, making the child more susceptible to leukemia in the future.

There are also wealthy men and women who consume more and better nutrition, yet lack exercise, leading to the accumulation of toxic energy. This energy spirals inward to a specific part of the body, forming a lipoma, which grows larger as the body becomes obese. Additionally, some people experience itchy skin; if they scratch it with dirty hands, it can lead to external conditions such as boils. Or, if intravenous fluids are administered too quickly, it can result in a pathological condition where a fluid-filled mass forms at the injection site.



The first image shows a large orange fruit growing on an orange tree. Just like the six force-field planes depicted in the elliptical diagram, each force-field plane contains three levels of energy—large, medium, and small—and the number of small molecules replicated corresponds to these levels. As a result of this evolution, there are centrifugal vortex arms within the large cavities of the fruit. These arms align and transport energy to the various force fields surrounding the fruit, generating high temperatures and pressures through pushing, friction, and heat. This process evolves proteins, as well as more water and small molecules. Much like nuclear fusion, all these small molecules cause the orange to grow and ripen faster day by day, until it is ripe and ready to eat.

[The third and fourth images depict the evolution of the novel coronavirus within cells.] The final image shows cancer cells and the HIV virus.

Generally, children have lower blood viscosity. In contrast, the

bodies of the elderly accumulate more small molecules, red blood cells, white blood cells, platelets, water, sugars, fats, proteins, and mixtures of potassium and calcium salts over decades. This results in higher blood viscosity, making the elderly more prone to conditions such as atherosclerosis and high blood pressure.

Furthermore, increasing amounts of ash from cremated bodies rise into the sky, dispersing downward into the air, where they are inhaled by

plants, animals, and humans. For example, before China's reform and opening-up, when the Great Ming Temple in Yangzhou welcomed Japanese dignitaries to discuss the return of the Great Monk of War—who was visiting his hometown for the first time in a thousand years—he tasted Yangzhou's specialty, Pingshan Green Tea, and then asked the tour guide, "Is there a crematorium here?" This was because the tea carried the scent of cremated bodies. The tour guide contacted the Foreign Trade Bureau, and upon investigation, it was confirmed that behind Daming Temple lay the Pingshan Tea Plantation. Not far away, on a hillside, there was a small crematorium. The crematorium was immediately relocated to a remote area on Mount Maoshan. Since then, visitors have consistently praised Yangzhou Pingshan Green Tea for its vibrant green color and delicate aroma, calling it truly excellent tea.

There is an ancient saying in traditional Chinese medicine: "A thousand colds are easy to dispel, but a single dampness is hard to remove." Factors such as air conditioning, consuming cold foods, irregular eating habits, high stress levels, and living in damp environments are all major culprits that exacerbate internal dampness in the body. If not expelled in a timely manner, it will lurk within the body, creating potential health risks.

If dampness rises upward, it can cause skin blemishes, acne, and an oily complexion; if it descends downward, it can trigger a series of

gynecological disorders and harm the body. When dampness affects the skin, it can cause skin conditions such as eczema; when it penetrates the bones, it can trigger arthritis and frozen shoulder. Internally, dampness first attacks the spleen and stomach, then settles in the kidneys, and subsequently affects the heart and lungs. At the same time, it descends to invade the liver, gallbladder, and bladder—no organ is spared.

In some young people—such as those conceived during their mother's pregnancy—factors like severe morning sickness leading to loss of appetite, poverty, or emotional stress can cause energy flows and small molecules to spiral inward toward the heart. These form vortices that generate numerous white blood cells. As a result, the child's developmental process lacks the vitality and spirit of a healthy child.

This is why adolescents are prone to leukemia. As for cancer, it develops during the growth process. First, various waste products

accumulate in the body—such as fragments of cells from metabolism and apoptosis, as well as small molecules from medications—and these do not get excreted through urine or feces. Instead, they remain within the skin,

swirling inward to form what is medically termed cancer cells or evolving into viruses. For these chronic conditions—leukemia and cancer viruses—both Traditional Chinese Medicine and Western Medicine now possess new insights into their causes, as well as effective treatments and methods.

Additionally, some people who consume excessive amounts of meat and iron-rich foods, combined with factors like high mental stress and environmental influences, cause 70% of the body's fluids to transform into excessive dampness, obstructing the meridians. In some cases, patients develop pneumonia, and antibiotics are added to intravenous fluids to kill pathogens. Just as varying temperatures in steel smelting produce different grades of steel, these substances provide material for genetic replication. Since genes do not function as machines capable of transforming low-quality small molecules into new, high-quality models, they indiscriminately package and replicate all incoming material—regardless of quality or quantity—into HIV.

Alternatively, when fragments of shriveled, apoptotic cells and small antibiotic molecules circulate with the blood and qi in a centripetal vortex, they are also transformed into HIV. Therefore, HIV possesses greater potency than genetic functions and can further target lymphocytes to destroy the body's defenses, causing even greater harm to the patient.

Because the airflow within the HIV shell forces its way out through tiny pores on the outer shell, and since it is blocked by the skin, it swirls into crown-like discs outside these pores on the shell. The formation of these large crown discs enhances the centripetal vortex suction—which is also a gravitational force—causing small molecular drugs, such as antibiotics, introduced into the skin via intravenous drips, regardless of

their nature or quantity, are swirled into clusters and sequentially stored in the eccentric mass regeneration field within cells. Under the force of centrifugal rotation, friction generates high temperatures and pressures, transforming these clusters of small molecules, atoms, and air vortices into protein-based cellular shells. As a result, antibiotics lose their efficacy, or they may evolve into diseases caused by HIV and other pathogens.

Unless a virus is invented by a virologist with a specific political agenda, it cannot infect animals or humans.

How do cells die? The water people absorb daily, along with the oxygen they breathe and various nutrients, are transformed into gases, blood, and body fluids, which swirl to form more red blood cells. When the production of proteins exceeds the limit of the cell's outer shell—such as

the shell in the regenerative force field shown in the diagram—the high

temperature causes the shell to decay, disrupting the cell's systemic integrity and accelerating its disintegration into fragments, leading to apoptosis. This is not primarily caused by external factors.



Just as an apple placed in the refrigerator for several months will begin to rot once the amount of water exceeds the limit of its skin.



By understanding the origins and functions of cells, cancer cells, and viruses like HIV in this way, people need not panic.

For example, when one feels severe discomfort in a certain part of

the body, accompanied by pain and a low-grade fever, and feels increasingly listless and lacking energy to do things. Furthermore, this may manifest internally through darkening of the skin and excretions,

**1. Black stools:** This is commonly seen in stomach cancer and small intestine cancer. Because the tumor is located far from the anus, bleeding is minimal and occurs slowly, mixing with food residues and being expelled with the stool. Since the blood remains in the gastrointestinal tract for an extended period, it oxidizes, resulting in black stools. These stools are coated with mucus and have a glossy, tar-like appearance, medically known as melena;

**2. Skin darkening:** If skin folds darken, this may be caused by endocrine disorders resulting from tumor growth. This can be seen in pancreatic cancer, liver cancer, and cholangiocarcinoma, manifesting as brownish-black or grayish-black discoloration in skin folds such as the armpits, back of the neck, and groin, accompanied by thickened and rough skin. Additionally, in cases of liver cancer, patients may develop a dark or yellowish complexion. If dark patches appear on the skin—especially if they appear suddenly—or if existing moles undergo changes in size, color, or borders, malignant melanoma should be

suspected.

Therefore, if the body exhibits the above darkening symptoms or other abnormal signs, one must be highly vigilant for potential pathological changes, although darkening in a specific area does not necessarily indicate cancer. It is recommended that patients seek medical attention promptly for examination and a definitive diagnosis. The first step is to visit a major hospital for treatment by a Western medicine physician. Typically, initial tests include X-rays, blood tests, and CT scans. If diagnosed with conditions such as leukemia or cancer, even the DNA strands are fragmented, with the genetic chain damaged by viruses. This may be due to factors such as smoking, drinking alcohol, consuming unsuitable fruits and vegetables, or excessive night work. Treat it as leukemia or cancer; it is not an acute or infectious disease, but a systemic chronic condition. Currently, modern medicine cannot immediately cure conditions like leukemia. Furthermore, Western medicine has not yet identified the exact cause of leukemia.

At this stage, patients must mentally prepare for long-term cooperation with their doctors. Whether hospitalized or at home, they should first commit to treatment under a single physician. According to Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) analysis, the condition boils down to internal deficiency and external pathogens. Phlegm, blood stasis, heat, toxins, and deficiency—these factors are related to cancer. Consequently,

the clinical manifestations of cancer are highly variable; it is possible for opposing pathological phenomena to occur simultaneously within the same body. The fundamental pathogenesis lies in the disharmony of Yin, Yang, and Qi. Cancer is not a specific tissue or structure, but rather a manifestation of the body's state—specifically, the balance between the body's internal environment and the external environment. Against the backdrop of this disharmony, the body's vital energy ( Zheng Qi ) gradually depletes. The mutual transformation and influence between the depletion of vital energy and the spread of cancerous toxins are key factors in cancer progression and tumor metastasis.

Take dampness, for example: 1. Dampness is characterized by heaviness and turbidity; these two aspects can be considered separately: one is heaviness, and the other is turbidity. Heaviness can be further divided into profound heaviness, oppressive heaviness, and aching heaviness. Some people may experience a sensation of heaviness in their bodies, as if they were carrying a thousand-jin weight on their backs. What is going on here? It turns out that when the spleen is deficient, it cannot properly transform and transport fluids and dampness, causing them to seep into the muscles—this is what is referred to as “sinking heaviness.” As for “oppressive heaviness,” it refers to a constant feeling of fatigue, extreme exhaustion, and an overwhelming desire to sleep. For example, many students' parents report that their children feel

drowsy in class and cannot focus on what the teacher is saying. It's the same for adults: constantly yawning at work, collapsing onto the couch the moment they get home, and waking up every morning with a foggy, heavy-headed feeling, as if their head were wrapped in a wet towel. This is essentially the state of "drowsiness and heaviness."

Since there are no organic pathologies, even if you go to the hospital for tests, they won't find anything. Western medicine calls this "fatigue syndrome." But from a Traditional Chinese Medicine perspective, it's actually spleen deficiency with excessive dampness. Dampness is a yin pathogen that specifically opposes yang energy. When dampness traps your yang energy, preventing it from rising, you naturally feel drowsy and may also experience dizziness. Soreness and heaviness primarily manifest in the joints, making it difficult to bend or straighten them, and preventing them from moving forward or backward. As for "turbidity," it can be understood as impurity or a lack of clarity. Dampness is turbid yin; when turbid yin rises to the surface, it manifests as oily hair and a greasy complexion. This isn't something that can be solved simply by washing your face more often—where does the root cause lie? In the spleen and stomach. When the spleen and stomach are weak, the complexion becomes dull and impure. If we look at a meridian chart, we can see that the Yangming Stomach Meridian runs across the face. When the spleen and stomach are weak in their ability to eliminate waste and clear away

impurities, these impurities travel up the meridians to the face and manifest outward—this is what we commonly refer to as “oiliness.”

Dampness can also cloud your sensory orifices. When dampness obscures the eyes, vision becomes blurry, as if veiled by a layer of mist. When dampness accumulates in the ears and interacts with the ear canals, it causes tinnitus.

**2. The Sticky Nature of Dampness** This sensation is similar to when it's extremely hot in summer, and you've broken out in a heavy sweat, leaving your clothes clinging uncomfortably to your body. Of course, when dampness adheres to the tendons, bones, and muscles, the sensation isn't as immediate as clothes sticking to the skin, but it triggers a series of reactions. For example, your mouth may feel sticky. If you stick out your tongue and look in the mirror, a normal tongue coating is a thin layer, like a layer of white frost on a fresh grape. If the coating starts to become sticky and slimy, your tongue feels slippery as if there is a lot of saliva, and there are tooth marks on the edges of your tongue, this is a sign that there is dampness in your body. Your stools will also become sticky and slimy, often loose and unformed, clinging to the toilet bowl and difficult to flush away. You may even feel like you haven't fully emptied your bowels.

**3. Dampness Tends to Descend** Some people also mention that they can't lift their legs or experience persistent swelling. Swelling occurs when dampness descends and accumulates there—it's like having two large

water bags tied to your legs. Many other embarrassing issues are also caused by dampness, such as abnormal vaginal discharge, perianal eczema, and scrotal dampness. For all these conditions, you can try brewing some *Atractylodes macrocephala* in water to drink. Here's how to do it: Take 15 grams of *Atractylodes macrocephala*, decoct it in water or steep it in boiling water, and drink it as a tea. *Atractylodes macrocephala* has a cousin called *Atractylodes lancea*. Can you steep *Atractylodes lancea* in water to drink? Yes, you can. *Atractylodes lancea* has a strong, pungent aroma that can drive dampness out quickly, while *Atractylodes macrocephala* tends to be more "defensive." It firmly guards the middle jiao, preventing dampness from running rampant.

Cang Zhu, on the other hand, is more dynamic and dispersing; its spleen-tonifying effect is relatively weaker, but its ability to dry dampness is stronger. If you have particularly heavy dampness in your body and are on the heavier side, Cang Zhu is a better choice—use 10 grams of Cang Zhu steeped in water. For slender individuals with heavy dampness, add Poria. When using *Atractylodes* and Poria together, use 15 grams of *Atractylodes* and 6 grams of Poria. Jokingly speaking, Poria is like a "water management expert." See how it eliminates dampness? Poria clears a channel, allowing the body's dampness to flow out through it. Where is the body's drainage system? It's in the bladder—dampness is expelled through urination. *Atractylodes* acts as the commander-in-chief,

while Poria clears the channels, and a massive operation to eliminate dampness from the body begins.

If, after taking the medication, you still experience stiffness in the limbs, pain in the lower back and legs, or numbness in the hands and feet, you may first take Tianma Pills, a product from the Li Shizhen Pharmaceutical Group. Since there are many varieties of Tianma Pills, this particular formula may be suitable for treating headaches, dispelling wind and dampness, unblocking meridians to relieve pain, and tonifying the liver and kidneys.

If you have kidney deficiency, drink hot water every night and take eight pills of Liuwei Dihuang Wan. Take the two medications at separate times; generally, there will be no side effects. If, after taking Tianma Pills, the stiffness in your limbs and the pain in your lower back and legs have eased, you may consult a doctor to prescribe medication suitable for your current condition, or purchase Chuanxiong powder from a Chinese herbal pharmacy, which is effective for treating headaches.

For urinary urgency, frequent urination, or incomplete emptying: Peel and finely chop one pound of loofah, then boil it in a pot. Add white sugar and simmer until the liquid reduces to a broth. Drink the hot broth and eat the loofah while still warm. Take this once in the morning and once in the evening; there is no strict dosage—continue until the symptoms subside. Loofah provides rapid relief.

If urination is painful, boil pig's trotters in water and drink the broth. Boil two trotters daily. Use about 150 grams of water, and drink the hot broth twice a day—about half a bowl each time. The pain should subside after a few days.

If you experience frequent urination due to prostate issues, dig up a few pounds of purslane from the fields (it's also available online). Wrap about half a pound in a cloth, crush it, and squeeze out the juice. It is best to drink the hot purslane juice twice a day, about half a bowl each time; the condition will clear up in a few days. Alternatively, cut half a pound of purslane into several pieces, place them in a pot with a large bowl of cold water, and boil for a few minutes; drink about half a bowl of the hot broth. This also has therapeutic effects.

Compiled by the Folk Remedies Studio of Wang Zhen Sheng and Hu Bing in Xinzhuang Village, Jintan Town, Daming County, Handan City, Hebei Province. Contact Wang Zhen Sheng, the "Bane of Intractable Diseases," at 15033071445:

Boil apples, red dates, goji berries, and hawthorn berries together for 20 minutes. Drink about half a bowl of the hot broth before each bowel movement; it is highly effective for relieving constipation. Boiling white radish with red dates can invigorate the body's qi and blood. Boiling white radish with Chinese yam can tonify the spleen and stomach,

Boiling white radish with winter melon helps eliminate dampness



from the body, while boiling white radish with ginger helps dispel cold and dampness.

If you suddenly catch a chill and develop a fever, do not take tonic herbal medicines such as Liuwei Dihuang Wan, Ren Shen Di Wan, or Quan Lu Wan. [Wait until the fever has subsided and your body has returned to normal; then determine the specific illness and choose the appropriate medication.]

At this time, focus first on treating the fever. If a cold snap hits in winter, and I've been out running errands or have been in the shower, wearing light clothing for too long, catching a chill, or even developing a fever, I'll put on a thick cotton coat as soon as I get home to stay warm. I'll slice seven or eight pieces of ginger, add two teaspoons of ground pepper, and even two teaspoons of brown sugar, placing them all in a teacup. I'll pour a cup of hot water over them and set it on the table. Next, fill a footbasin about halfway with hot water and soak my hands and feet for two minutes. Then, I drink the remaining hot ginger tea from the cup while it's still warm. If there's no hot water bottle in the bed, I go to sleep without taking off my undershirt or socks, and I keep a hat on my head—this prevents me from running a fever during the night. If you already have a fever, it will subside by the middle of the night. However, rest at home or sleep the next day, and drink a cup of hot ginger tea in the morning and evening; the cold should clear up in about two or three days.

Even when you don't have a fever, you can drink hot soup made from red dates, astragalus, and goji berries once or twice a day, adding a little brown sugar. Alternatively, you can have a cup of the nutritional meal "Spirulina and Goji Berry Powder" produced by Yangzhou Perfect Daily Necessities Co., Ltd., prepared by mixing it with boiling water. This provides nutritional supplementation and helps regulate the body, aiding in recovery.

If you seek treatment from Western medicine doctors, they specialize in treating acute and infectious diseases. For chronic diseases such as cancer, there are differences depending on the analysis of early symptoms and the specific location of the disease. It is generally believed that tumors are lifestyle-related diseases. Cancer exhibits ten major biological characteristics, including: self-sufficient growth signaling, insensitivity to anti-growth signals, evasion of apoptosis, unlimited replicative potential, persistent angiogenesis, tissue invasion and metastasis, evasion of immune destruction, promotion of tumor inflammation, cellular energy abnormalities, and genomic instability and mutations. External factors that cause cancer include: excessive ultraviolet (UV) exposure, which can lead to skin cancer; mineral fibers such as asbestos, which are associated with lung cancer and pleural mesothelioma; and ionizing radiation, such as X-rays and nuclear radiation, which is linked to the development of many tumors.

heavy smoking is associated with the development of lung cancer, oral cancer, laryngeal cancer, esophageal cancer, and bladder cancer; aflatoxins are associated with liver cancer; excessive alcohol consumption is associated with esophageal and liver cancers; and betel nut chewing is associated with oral cancer.

**Lung Cancer:** Early symptoms may include persistent cough, coughing up phlegm, blood in sputum, chest tightness, and chest pain. Smoking is a major risk factor for lung cancer, so long-term smokers should be particularly vigilant if they experience these symptoms. **2. Breast Cancer:** Early symptoms include breast lumps, abnormal breast skin (such as dimpling or "orange peel" appearance), and nipple discharge. Women should perform regular breast self-exams to detect abnormalities early. **3. Colorectal Cancer:** Early symptoms may include changes in bowel habits (such as alternating constipation and diarrhea), blood in the stool, and abdominal discomfort (such as abdominal pain or bloating). Individuals with a family history or high-risk factors should undergo regular colonoscopies. **4. Liver Cancer:** Early symptoms may include pain in the liver area, jaundice, loss of appetite, and fatigue. Long-term alcohol consumption and chronic viral hepatitis infection are major risk factors for liver cancer. **5. Stomach Cancer:** Early symptoms may include stomach pain, bloating, loss of appetite, nausea, and vomiting. Individuals with a history of stomach ulcers or chronic gastritis.

Certain viral infections are also associated with cancer development. For example, the hepatitis B virus is linked to primary liver cancer; the human papillomavirus (HPV) is associated with cervical cancer; the Epstein-Barr virus (EBV) is linked to nasopharyngeal cancer and Burkitt's lymphoma; and *Helicobacter pylori* is associated with gastric cancer and gastric mucosa-associated lymphoid tissue (MALT) lymphoma, among others. Parasitic infections are also associated with cancer development. For example, liver fluke infection can lead to liver cancer and cholangiocarcinoma; schistosomiasis can lead to colorectal cancer and bladder cancer. Certain medical factors can also increase the risk of cancer. For instance, patients who require long-term oral immunosuppressants following organ transplantation have a significantly higher risk of developing tumors than those who have not undergone organ transplantation.

The development of cancer is also linked to genetic factors. Certain tumors have a familial history; the incidence of cancer among family members is approximately 20% higher than in the general population, and the age of onset is generally earlier. The sites of tumor occurrence are not limited to a single organ or tissue; such families are referred to as cancer families. This situation may be a coincidence, or it may be related to the living environment,

or it may indicate the presence of a familial genetic syndrome. The

relationship between gene mutations and various cancers is still being explored; while evidence linking certain genes to cancer development has been established, the mechanisms for others remain unclear. Additionally, emotional states are also associated with the development of tumors.

Cancer is, in fact, a systemic disease resulting from the combined effects of internal and external factors. Cancer is a disease of the elderly, and its incidence exhibits distinct age-related patterns. Between the ages of 0 and 50, the incidence rate is relatively low; after age 50, it enters a period of rapid increase. As people age, the functions of their organs decline. In youth, the body's natural defenses typically prevail over pathogens; however, in old age, the accumulation of various metabolic waste products within the body leads to a reduced ability to resist disease... It is important to note that the symptoms mentioned above are not specific to cancer and may also be associated with other conditions. Therefore, if any of these symptoms appear, one should seek medical attention promptly for relevant examinations to ensure an accurate diagnosis and early treatment. At the same time, maintaining good lifestyle habits and a healthy diet can help reduce the risk of cancer.

If a patient has been receiving intravenous drips for some time without their fever subsiding, one should not assume that this is simply the medication fighting the virus and continue the treatment for a few more days. It is possible that the virus has been completely eradicated, and the

illness has resolved. Alternatively, cancer is a pathological product that cannot evade the cell death program. It is necessary to use new drugs to modify genes to effectively cure cancer.

Holding onto this belief and persisting with IV drips for several more days will only cause the illness to worsen day by day.

If patients switch to drinking hot Chinese herbal decoctions, or take Western medicine tablets with hot water, or apply Western medicine in the form of far-infrared patches, or apply Western medicine plasters to the affected area, or even administer Western medicine via intramuscular injections in the buttocks or upper arms—allowing the medication to reach the site of the disease directly—recovery will be faster with no side effects. Moreover, treatment costs are lower, and Western medicine can effectively cure diseases such as lung cancer.

It is also important for patients to take good care of themselves and cooperate with their doctors in the treatment process.

If you have developed a lipoma, you should avoid high-fat foods and increase your physical activity to reduce the likelihood of developing more lipomas. Alternatively, seek treatment at a hospital.

Second, remember that “there are no dutiful sons when a parent is chronically ill.” Do what you can for yourself. For example, if you feel discomfort in a specific area of your body, use your hands to massage or tap the area several dozen times, starting gently and gradually increasing

pressure. Before bed, place both palms over your ears and rub them quickly 10 to 20 times, and run in place about ten steps every day; Third, avoid wearing tight-fitting clothes and underwear; the looser the elastic waistband, the better. Alternatively, pull the waistband of your underwear down below your buttocks before sleeping. [But make sure the bed isn't cold.] For boys over six years old, it's best to use a fabric belt instead of an elastic waistband. Or make sure children don't tie their belts too tightly.

Additionally, whenever a cold snap hits, be sure to put on an extra layer of clothing promptly. Do not remove winter coats too early in the spring, otherwise children may be prone to fevers, colds, or whooping cough. Take a hot bath once a week, soaking and scrubbing the entire body for a few minutes. After bathing, ensure the body does not get chilled; avoid drinking cold beverages from the refrigerator or eating cold food.

I once saw on Baidu that a prominent American doctor had issued a medical report diagnosing President Clinton with various serious and intractable illnesses, stating that he had no more than six months to live. At the time, although I didn't know the specifics of his condition, based solely on information online about Clinton's work and life after leaving the presidency, I immediately posted a comment stating that the doctor's diagnosis was unscientific as it relied solely on the symptoms. Although President Clinton was seriously ill, he still traveled across the country,

going out of his way to court wealthy donors, raising a substantial amount of funds that were entirely dedicated to AIDS and cancer prevention and research—including a donation of over 100,000 yuan from his own family. This was a great act of kindness that accumulated immense merit. Engaging in more good deeds helps eliminate accumulated dampness and toxins from the body. Furthermore, the friction and movement of iron elements in the blood generate magnetic energy, amplifying the impact of these good deeds and transforming this magnetism into electromagnetic waves.

These electromagnetic waves function much like a universal medical device, providing massage and therapeutic treatment to affected areas, thereby harmonizing the functions of the body's organs and alleviating pain. They can also preemptively receive important signals transmitted by magnetic fields, serving as an automatic alarm for the brain or spiritual system, enabling appropriate preventive measures to ward off harm from sudden disasters.

At the same time, he has a virtuous and capable wife, Hillary, who cares for him with great devotion. Her contribution to extending his life should not be underestimated. If President Clinton were to read the revised edition of the novel *\*Taiji Talks About the World\** to prevent and treat illness, and if he were to truly let go of fame and fortune in his daily life, focusing instead on reflecting on the happiest memories of his life to



nurture his health, living another ten years or more would be no problem at all. You'll see that not only will he still be alive ten years from now, but he'll also be running around nonstop, busy with Hillary's campaign for the U.S. presidency.

Meanwhile, another American tech tycoon—younger than Clinton and without the multitude of complex ailments he suffered from—possessed assets worth billions of yuan. He spent tens of millions of yuan solely on his own medical treatment, yet he still passed away suddenly and unexpectedly.

Third, family members should consistently pay attention to the patient's physical and mental state, or encourage them to adopt a different mindset or change their environment to alter their state of mind. Under no circumstances should you, when the patient grows increasingly weak after surgery, chemotherapy, or radiation therapy and begins to voice complaints, respond with harsh words. Instead, use gentle words to help the patient open their mind; do not argue with them or show indifference. Otherwise, not only will the patient's condition worsen, but it may also cause psychological stress for family members when they look back on these events in the future. Additionally, certain unhealthy lifestyle habits among family members may lead to serious health consequences—which are not necessarily due to genetic factors.

For leukemia patients, it is advisable to consume more foods that

nourish kidney qi, as well as fruits and vegetables, and to pay close attention to physical and mental well-being. Avoid eating leftover fish or meat that has been stored in the refrigerator for a long time, as well as charred meat, cold dishes, and cold beverages. Additionally, twice daily—morning and evening—peel 3–4 ounces of Chinese yam, slice it into small pieces, soak it in honey, heat it, and consume it; this can aid in the treatment of leukemia. [This is recommended by a doctor on a health blog.] For leukemia, one may also take a daily dose of 55 grams of *Milletia reticulata*, combined with ten large red dates and 20 grams of *Astragalus membranaceus*, boiled into a hot decoction. Drink half a bowl of this hot decoction once in the morning and once in the evening. Do not drink the decoction cold. Additionally, sleep on your left or right side each day, or lie face-down on the bed to take deep breaths. This allows more air to enter the lungs, and when exhaling gently, the airflow spreads out, thereby promoting health, enhancing immunity, and strengthening the body.

Try this regimen for one week. If your condition improves, continue drinking a large bowl of the hot decoction twice daily, once in the morning and once in the evening. This decoction is not unpleasant to drink and has no side effects. Additionally, take eight Liuwei Dihuang Pills with warm water every night before bed to replenish kidney yin deficiency and accelerate recovery.

If you have lung nodules, the Kazakh people of Xinjiang have

traditionally consumed camel milk to treat lung diseases since ancient times. Camel milk is a true treasure—a natural, eco-friendly remedy for dissolving nodules. It is highly effective in boosting the body's resistance, reducing lung inflammation, and eliminating lung nodules. According to the *\*Compendium of Materia Medica\**, camel milk is warm in nature and possesses the following properties: it dissolves blood stasis and disperses nodules, breaks up masses, reduces cysts, eliminates phlegm and turbidity, regulates qi stagnation, strengthens the root and nourishes the essence, and replenishes vital energy. It effectively purifies the internal environment of the lungs and rapidly boosts lung immunity. It can be said to address lung nodules at their root cause and also has excellent regulatory effects on various cysts.

Camel milk is refreshing without being cloying, featuring a subtle milky aroma with a hint of saltiness. Overall, its taste is more pleasant than that of cow's milk. Drink one teacup of hot camel milk with every meal. The product sold on the market is camel milk powder produced by manufacturers. After purchasing it, scoop two spoonfuls into a teacup, pour in a cup of boiling water, stir briefly, and drink it while still hot after about a minute—do not consume the camel milk powder mixture cold. After about seven or eight days, I noticed an improvement in my chest tightness, and my mental state was significantly better. Gradually, my sleep quality improved, my anxiety subsided, and the chest tightness and

shortness of breath gradually lessened and disappeared. Eventually, the coughing stopped, and I felt much more energetic. Dr. Huang 09-20 22:16Introduces Dietary Therapy Methods for Lung Nodules

What if it's diabetes? Dr. Wang Zhen Sheng publicly shares folk remedies, effective methods, and secret formulas for treating diabetes. All are formulas verified by patients as effective. Ruan

An old folk remedy passed down from our ancestors: leaves from a small-leaf guava tree. I've had diabetes for 11 years myself. I've been drinking this small-leaf guava tea daily—the large-leaf variety doesn't lower blood sugar. Take 10–15 grams per serving. Drink it in the morning, at noon, and in the evening. Re-boil the leaves repeatedly. My fasting blood sugar used to be 16.8, and 19.8 after meals. After drinking the decoction, my blood sugar dropped within two hours. If your blood sugar is high, use 15 to 30 grams of guava leaves, boil them into a strong decoction, and drink it like tea—this will lower your blood sugar quickly. Even after your blood sugar returns to normal, you must continue drinking this daily and watch your diet: avoid sweet foods and don't eat until you're full—stopping at 70% fullness is sufficient. Once the pancreas is damaged, it is difficult to restore. This is a very effective traditional folk remedy for lowering blood sugar. It has no side effects and is safe. However, all information is for reference only! Since everyone's constitution differs, results may vary. Please use this remedy with caution

and under the guidance of a doctor or professional; otherwise, neither the person sharing this remedy nor I will assume any responsibility.

For women suffering from chronic illnesses such as cancer, especially those with a stubborn temperament or who dwell heavily on a single issue—including adolescents—If they refuse to listen to others' advice, family members should try a different approach—even resorting to superstitious language or stories to open their minds. For example, tell them that their ancestors from three generations ago know how much you have suffered, and that others fail to recognize what a good person you are. Explain that these ancestors kneel before the statue of Guanyin everyday, praying for your swift recovery and for all things to go well.

Alternatively, if the patient has committed wrongdoings in the past, they can burn incense regularly, silently recount past events, pray for divine protection, and offer a personal confession. This can help relieve some of the patient's mental stress. Of course, you and your family must also reflect on the key factors that have caused the patient's excessive mental burden. Whether it was the stress and lack of nutrition your mother experienced while pregnant with the patient, or issues like chemical pollution, these must be clarified to effectively address both the symptoms and the root causes of this illness.

The following points should also be addressed, although smoking and drinking are not necessarily the primary causes of the illness. For

example, during the 2020 Wuhan pandemic, American scientists released two sets of X-ray results: the lungs of smokers appeared clear on the images, while those of patients infected with the novel coronavirus were dark and highly blurred. Additionally, people who drink alcohol do not necessarily have a higher incidence of disease or shorter lifespans compared to non-drinkers.

However, it is best to smoke less when ill. Additionally, those who drink should avoid cold alcohol in winter; it should be warmed before consumption, but intake should be limited to about one or two shots—excessive drinking is prohibited. If you have liver cancer, you must absolutely avoid alcohol, as it can worsen the condition and even pose an immediate threat to life.

You should also check the area under your bed and at the head of the bed to see if there is an excessive accumulation of clutter, books, or asbestos; these items must be removed and the area thoroughly cleaned. This is because the chaotic text in books stored under the bed emits varying frequencies that can disrupt the patient's sleep. Furthermore, bedding should not be made of unsterilized synthetic cotton. During winter, the room should not be too cold or drafty; otherwise, patients suffering from headaches, ankylosing spondylitis, or severe colds should wear a hat on their head and socks on their feet while sleeping. This will help them recover sooner.

- **AI Guide: A Quick Overview of Key Points Wearing a hat**

in winter isn't just about staying warm: it stabilizes cerebral blood flow by 37%, reduces migraine episodes, blocks 60% of the causes of cerebral hypoperfusion, and prevents blood pressure spikes and immune system breakdown—wearing a hat is quietly protecting your nerves, blood vessels, and immunity.

When you don't wear a hat, cold air stimulates the scalp, potentially causing temporary cerebral vasospasm. Clinically, this often manifests as dizziness, temporary vision loss, or even cerebral hypoperfusion. A study published in the *\*Chinese Journal of Neurology\** indicates that nearly 60% of patients with winter cerebral hypoperfusion had a history of head exposure to cold prior to their onset.

You don't like wearing hats. Do you think a cold head will at worst just give you a cold? In fact, for some people, it may trigger blood pressure fluctuations. Cold activates the sympathetic nervous system, causing blood vessels to constrict and blood pressure to rise. If the head isn't kept warm in time, this stimulation becomes even more intense. Especially for patients with hypertension, a cold head is often a trigger for sudden blood pressure spikes in the early morning; in

severe cases, it may lead to cardiovascular or cerebrovascular accidents.

While wearing a hat cannot cure the condition, it serves as a highly effective physical barrier for clinical protection. A study published in the journal *\*Neurological Research and Clinical Practice\** found that migraine patients who consistently wore hats during the winter saw their attack frequency decrease by an average of 37%. Therefore, it is recommended to choose hats made of breathable, moisture-wicking materials such as pure cotton or wool.

If you are feeling depressed due to marital issues, you can place a copper gourd or a "knot of unity" by your bedside. If you feel you have been affected by evil spirits, hang a Bagua diagram above your door. If you are feeling down due to concerns about academic achievement or career, place a small Wenchang pagoda or an ornament depicting a soaring great peng on your desk to lift your spirits. You can also choose an ascent you like for the room or use moxibustion with aromatic herbs. If you





have experience treating illnesses, you can purchase common medications and topical plasters related to your condition from a pharmacy and keep them at home. Examples include Liuwei Dihuang Pills, Gui Fu Dihuang Pills, Tianma Pills [Li Shizhen Pharmaceutical Group products], Compound Danshen Drops, Dalian Shenglygu Engineering Co., Ltd.'s Ginseng Drops, Qixiang Zhengqi Water, Chuanxiong Powder, a few ounces of *Atractylodes macrocephala* to treat dampness, Yunnan Baiyao, cold and fever remedies, and topical plasters. Examples include Musk Bone-Strengthening Plaster, Tongluo Pain-Relieving Plaster, Zhenjiang Plaster, and Scorpion King Activating Meridians Plaster. Keep pressure-sensitive adhesive tape and Wind Oil on hand as well. Additionally, purchase books on acupuncture points, massage hammers, and medical reference books to keep at home. [For instance, place plasters and Scorpion King Activating Meridians Plaster by the bedside or next to the pillow so they can be applied or rubbed onto the affected area at anytime.]

Patients should stop overthinking. Let the past be the past. Create a relaxed environment—this is how you cultivate vitality. If, while ill, your liver qi is excessive and you cannot harmonize with society or your family, and you cannot find joy, you must learn to let go of everything, not dwell on trivial matters, and use physical and mental relaxation to reduce mental stress. Cultivate more tolerance to prevent and treat all kinds of

illnesses. You may also read books or newspapers that are beneficial to your recovery. Alternatively, recite “Namo Amitabha Buddha” with reverence and sincerity, repeating it continuously several hundred times to achieve a therapeutic effect. This is because the sound of the word “Buddha” serves as a signal to nourish the body and relieve mental stress, helping to expel toxins from the body. You may also chat with someone of the opposite sex for a while. Alternatively, focus your mind on the word “relax” several times, or clasp your hands together and use your thumb to gently and rhythmically rub the middle section of the second joint of your index finger, moving up and down at a slightly faster pace without stopping for about 15 minutes. Meditating on the lower abdomen or navel can also help relieve mental stress and support the healing process. Additionally, research by American scientists suggests that reducing food intake by 12% may extend life expectancy by more than 10 years.

Furthermore, when anyone performs this massage for health maintenance while sitting, standing, or lying in bed, it strengthens the body's ability to resist disease. For some conditions, it can lead to faster recovery than medication, without any side effects. First, the practitioner should mentally direct the ten toes of both feet to curl backward forcefully for about ten minutes. Afterward, mentally spread the ten toes of both feet apart for about ten minutes. Then, move the big toes of both feet up and

down repeatedly, as if nodding, for about 8 minutes. While performing these movements, maintain a relaxed state of mind and avoid distracting thoughts to ensure the smooth flow of qi and blood through the body's six major meridians. This routine can be performed twice daily. Alternatively, vigorously rub and scrape the ten toes, the Yongquan point on the soles of the feet, and the Zusanli point twenty to thirty times with your fingers to prevent illness.

If possible, have someone assist the patient by performing this twice daily, once in the morning and once in the evening. Have the patient lie face down on the bed. Start from the back and gradually work toward the feet, combining light and rapid tapping, pinching, and kneading in sequence. During the second round, apply slightly heavier pressure and increase the speed of the tapping, pinching, and kneading. While pinching and kneading, the patient should feel a slight soreness, which accelerates the circulation of qi toward the affected area, thereby relaxing the tendons and promoting blood flow. However, the intensity of the massage, tapping, and kneading should be adjusted according to the patient's tolerance and the specific needs of the affected area. [For pain in the chest and abdomen, use a lighter touch—scratching in a circular motion with your fingernails about ten to twenty times—but avoid massaging or tapping the painful areas directly. This helps expel dampness from the body. Each session lasts about an hour, and patients will immediately feel

relief that comes faster than taking medication.]

When the patient is seated on a chair, begin with the shoulders and back. Use both fists to move downward with light, rapid tapping or kneading toward acupoints such as Shenshu and Huantiao. [Shenshu is located on both sides of the middle of the lower back; this helps strengthen the constitution. Huantiao is located on both sides of the upper thighs and buttocks; regular tapping or kneading of these points plays a crucial role in relaxing the tendons and promoting blood circulation.] Next, rub your palms together rapidly until they become warm. Then, cup your ears with your warm palms and rub them until they feel warm. Move up to the temples, the top of the head, and the back of the head, then down to both sides. Use both hands to knead and massage the area back and forth about

10 to 20 times; this will alleviate a foggy or dazed sensation in the head. Next, proceed to tap, pinch, and massage your arms in sequence. Then, focus on the area about three centimeters outside the armpit and the hollow of the elbow, pinching and massaging these spots a dozen or so times to expel toxins from the cardiovascular system. Finally, press the key acupoints for lung detoxification: first, locate the base of the thumb on one hand—specifically, the midpoint on the lateral side between the first and second metacarpal bones. Press your finger against this point; when the patient feels soreness or a sense of fullness, apply a little pressure and massage it for about 10 to 20 times.

Next, move to the point where the tip of the little finger curves toward the palm. Use the thumb of the other hand to press down on the area just below the tip of the little finger. When the patient feels soreness, distension, or a slight pain, apply a bit of pressure to massage the area, or hold the pressure for about 15 minutes. It is best to perform this while lying on your side in bed. You can also take a deep breath; as you exhale gently, you can expel toxins from your mind, clearing the foggy state. This works faster than medication and has no side effects. The patient can also focus on relaxation; even when holding their breath, if they relax to the point of expelling a slight amount of toxins from their mind, they will immediately feel revitalized and ready to work. Since the body's qi and blood are constantly in motion, restlessness and agitation often cause the mind to release toxins into the bloodstream. Therefore, if you wake up the next day feeling mentally foggy and physically weak, you can repeat this process. Alternatively, take one spoonful of Chuanxiong powder. After about 40 minutes, the mental fog will clear significantly, and you'll feel energized enough to work.

Next, proceed to tap, knead, and massage down the legs. When reaching Zusanli and Yongquan on the soles of the feet—which encompass over 200 acupoints throughout the entire foot—[regularly massaging Zusanli is a crucial acupoint for treating all chronic illnesses, enhancing disease resistance, and promoting longevity. Yongquan is also a

vital point for strengthening the constitution and expelling toxins from the body through this acupoint. Focus on kneading and massaging it several dozen times. If one hand becomes fatigued from massaging the entire body, switch hands or use both fists simultaneously. Next, locate the groove at the base of the top of the foot between the big toe and the second toe. Press down on this area with your finger; if the patient feels a dull ache, knead or hold the spot. The patient should also mentally focus on relaxing this area for about 8 minutes. Over time, this helps expel toxins from the liver and supports liver health.

Then, repeat the process described above, moving from the shoulders and back to all parts of the body, performing the kneading, tapping, and rubbing massage back and forth about three to five times. For patients with severe conditions, perform this only once or twice a day. [If possible, perform this in pairs] While the patient is being tapped, pinched, kneaded, and massaged, they should remain mentally relaxed and refrain from speaking. The patient may also massage their partner. The purpose is to relieve mental stress, relax the muscles, and promote blood circulation to accelerate the elimination of excess dampness from the body, thereby speeding up recovery.

For example, when I was treating a 95-year-old stroke patient who was seriously ill, I performed therapeutic massage on specific acupoints three times a day. First, I placed two wooden stools of different heights on

the floor so that I could sit while tapping, kneading, and massaging the patient's affected areas, thereby conserving my energy. You can also buy a massage hammer for ten yuan and use it to tap the shoulders, back, waist, legs, and feet to reduce the physical strain on the masseuse while achieving good results. During the massage, use both hands flexibly, alternating between tapping, kneading, and rubbing. I also focused my mind on relaxing the affected areas. Sometimes, after massaging the patient for about an hour, I would be so exhausted that I would break out in a sweat.

After finishing the massage, I wash my hands once with soap and hot water. Afterward, I lie down in bed to rest or take a short nap. By engaging in these various forms of moderate exercise for two years—to promote blood circulation, regulate qi, dispel blood stasis, and eliminate dampness from the body—as well as to enhance a sense of well-being—I have helped relax the nervous, respiratory, and digestive systems and lower blood pressure, thereby playing a supportive role in treating the illness and achieving positive results. For instance, my own health has steadily improved, and after six months, the elderly stroke patient was able to walk normally again. Of course, I also took care of the stroke patient. Even when he was lying in bed, I used the power of my mind to control the flow of energy, preventing his arms or legs from bending. I directed the energy to flow forward, forming the posture of a healthy person's limbs. If I sensed through my mental focus that a certain part of

his arms or legs felt sore or swollen, I would use my fingers to apply gentle pressure and knead the affected area, which had a stronger effect of relaxing the tendons and promoting blood circulation. Over time, this made it easier for the patient to move his limbs and improved his walking posture. I also encouraged the elderly stroke patient to persist in eating on his own, rather than being fed by others. Eventually, his progress accelerated, and after three months, his hands had recovered enough for him to eat independently, and his legs were able to walk.

I deliberately let the elderly woman try to stand up on her own for her exercises each time. In reality, I was completely focused and didn't dare to let my guard down, always ready to step in and help her stand up. I would support her as we walked for about half an hour, which helped relieve her mental stress.

Although I supported her with both hands while walking, I actually used only one hand to gently guide her. Whenever I sensed she was struggling to walk, I would use both hands to firmly support her arms, acting as if I were holding a cane for her. We walked in the courtyard two





or three times a day, each time for about half an hour, to exercise and strengthen her physical condition. This approach even helped a veteran colleague at our factory recover more quickly from a stroke.

If you experience aches, pains, or numbness in your body—provided it is not an inflamed, ulcerated wound or an area unsuitable for applying medicated plasters—you may apply plasters such as Tongluo Qutong Plaster or Zhenjiang Plaster. You may even apply several small plasters to the affected area. These plasters are typically applied continuously for several months, or even decades, to alleviate numbness and pain at the site of the condition. [However, generally avoid massaging the area where a plaster is applied, as this can damage the skin over the affected area. Alternatively, gently tap, knead, or rub the affected area for one or two minutes before applying the plaster. If convenient, place a hot water bottle over the plaster to enhance the penetration of the medicinal properties deep into the affected area.] As long as the skin does not itch, the plaster need only be replaced once a week—typically when taking a hot bath.

Unless the condition is severe—in which case the patch should be replaced daily—you may also use a musk pain-relieving ointment or ZhuiFeng Fu ointment. Rub the affected area vigorously several dozen times, then apply the ointment again for better results. If the pain stems from a previous injury that has been aggravated by weather changes or excessive fatigue, applying Zhenjiang plaster to the affected area provides

exceptionally strong pain relief. Alternatively, split the Zhenjiang plaster into two pieces and place them on two 15-centimeter-square sheets of thin plastic. Apply these to the affected area; as the plaster dissolves, it won't easily transfer to clothing. When changing the plaster, press a plastic bag over the dissolved black plaster—this will gradually transfer the residue adhering to the skin onto the plastic bag. [If the plaster melts onto clothing or bedding, sprinkle laundry detergent on the affected area multiple times, dampen it, and scrub vigorously several times; the residue will eventually be removed by the detergent.] While using the plaster, avoid exposure to cold drafts. Do not consume spicy foods. In winter, wear lightweight, warm clothing such as down jackets; avoid heavy garments like leather jackets or leather shoes.

Additionally, for inflamed or even suppurating cancerous lesions and itchy areas around wounds, do not touch it with your hands. You must treat it with medication, or first wash the itchy area with warm salt water. It is also essential to wrap and protect the affected area with gauze or similar material. Furthermore, when lying in bed, focus your mind on the area that feels most uncomfortable or is suppurating, allowing the pain to intensify. When it reaches its peak, the affected area will immediately release toxic gases, thereby alleviating the pain. Regularly focusing your mind on relaxing the suppurating area can accelerate blood circulation in the affected site, leading to a faster recovery. You may also visit



. Alternatively, consider the example of Venerable Master Guolin of the Shaolin Temple, who is currently 103 years old, with the ethereal demeanor of a sage. He possesses a sharp mind, a voice like a great bell, walks with the agility of a young man, and appears to be in his sixties. When asked about the secret to longevity, the Master replied: “A bowl of hot, nourishing multigrain porridge every day.” It can even cause malignant tumors to disappear completely! Venerable Master Guolin passed this secret recipe on to Dr. Xu Shangde. Ingredients: A mixture of equal parts brown rice, black glutinous rice, millet, wheat, buckwheat, water caltrop, oats, lotus seeds, wheat flakes, and red coix seeds. All ten of these can be cooked together.

You may cook a larger batch to last three or four days. Method 2: In the evening, soak three cups of the mixed grains in water for 3 hours, place them in a rice cooker, add 5 cups of water, and cook until the grains are tender. Let it cool, then store it in the refrigerator. The next morning before work, take an appropriate amount, add 4 cups of water, and cook it into a thin porridge. Serve it with a flavorful savory side dish, and drink the remaining hot porridge.

Note: If children dislike the texture, add a few dried longans or raisins. The flavor is excellent, memory improves significantly, and academic performance becomes outstanding.

According to scientific analysis, this five-grain health porridge contains over 100 substances beneficial to human health, such as B vitamins (B1, B2, B6, B9, B12), vitamins C, A, E, K, and D; minerals (calcium, iron, magnesium, potassium); trace elements (zinc, molybdenum, manganese, germanium), enzymes, antioxidants, fiber, amino acids, and biotin. It helps lower blood pressure and cholesterol, dissolve blood clots, and soothe the nerves. Its effectiveness against constipation, high blood pressure, skin diseases, appendicitis, insomnia, and angular cheilitis rivals that of medication, and most importantly, it has no side effects.

White rice, having had its bran and germ removed, consists only of carbohydrates and provides only calories; its nutritional value is far lower than that of ten-grain rice. To achieve health and longevity, one must

supplement daily with the enzymes required for metabolism. Eating more ten-grain rice can help prevent modern lifestyle diseases such as arteriosclerosis, stroke, gout, myocardial infarction, and cancer. PS: Brown rice, black glutinous rice, millet, wheat, buckwheat, water caltrop, oats, lotus seeds, oatmeal, and red Job's tears are mostly available at supermarkets; only water caltrop might require a trip to a Chinese herbal shop, where it is generally stocked.

The kidneys are the foundation of one's innate constitution; only when kidney qi is abundant can one have a robust constitution. In the theory of TCM wellness, nurturing the kidneys is synonymous with nurturing life!

Also: [Walnut, Sesame, and Black Bean Porridge] [Recipe Ingredients]: 10g walnuts, 10g black sesame seeds, 10g black beans, 5g hawthorn berries, 5g goji berries, 10g black rice (this serves two people). [Preparation Method] Soak the black beans and black rice for at least one hour in advance. Grind the walnuts into a fine powder. Place the black beans, black rice, hawthorn, black rice, and walnuts in a pot, bring to a boil, then turn off the heat and let it sit for at least half an hour. Add the black sesame seeds and goji berries, bring to a boil again, and simmer for another half hour. Once it reaches a porridge-like consistency, add rock sugar and it's ready to eat.

Nowadays, people frequently use air conditioning in both winter and

summer and enjoy cold beverages, causing excessive cold energy to accumulate in the body. This leads to an increase in dampness within the body's cells, forming a "haze." If this dampness is not expelled in a timely manner and the meridians become blocked, it can easily trigger various ailments, such as generalized weakness and drowsiness. Those suffering from eczema can consume red bean and Job's tears porridge to help regulate their condition. In daily life, overlooking small details may inadvertently become a trigger for tumors. So, what else should we pay attention to in order to prevent tumors? What foods should we avoid? Let's take a look. The following three poor dietary habits are prone to triggering tumors:

1. Excessive consumption of "warm-heat" foods. "Warm-heat" foods refer to two categories: first, foods that are physically too hot or scalding; second, foods classified as "warm-heat" in traditional Chinese medicine. Because they are overly pungent and hot, they can easily damage cells in the digestive tract mucosa, making such foods the most likely to trigger tumors in the digestive system.
2. Imbalance of the Five Flavors: Traditional Chinese Medicine holds that a diet should harmonize the five flavors—sweet, bitter, sour, pungent, and salty—and that these should be consumed in balanced proportions. An excessive focus on any single flavor can lead to illness. Among the factors contributing to tumors, an overconsumption of rich, greasy, and sweet foods, as well as excessive salt

intake, are common culprits. 3. Consumption of spoiled or moldy foods: Aflatoxins are widely recognized as potent carcinogens, and *Aspergillus flavus*—the fungus responsible for producing them—is abundant in moldy grains, corn, and peanuts. This fungus thrives in warm, humid environments, and studies have shown it can induce various tumors in laboratory animals. This factor is a major cause of high cancer rates in certain regions of Asia and Africa.

For those under significant mental stress or suffering from rheumatic diseases, you can purchase appropriate Chinese herbal ingredients online from Pinduoduo to make herbal wine, or drink a small amount of wine daily (but it must be accompanied by a full meal; do not drink alcohol on its own. Additionally, in winter, place the wine glass in a small bowl, then fill the glass with hot water, pour the hot water from the glass back into the bowl, and place the empty glass back into the hot water in the bowl. Then pour in the wine, drink it warm in small sips, and pair it with a good meal. Limit consumption to about one or two shots per meal, and especially avoid drinking cold beer. This approach adds enjoyment to daily life and helps dispel impurities and dampness from the body. However, excessive consumption of spirits can damage the body. After drinking, rest in bed for a while; this will help patients regain their vitality. However, those with liver disease must absolutely avoid alcohol.

Alternatively, grind at least half a pound of black beans in a small

German-made steel grinder for about ten minutes, then transfer the mixture to a glass jar and cover it with water. After soaking for about a week, take a small spoonful daily. This not only enhances beauty but also helps prevent colds and cardiovascular diseases. Drinking hot black bean porridge can boost heart and brain immunity, aiding in disease prevention and treatment.

However, black beans should not be consumed daily, as they can lead to the following issues: Gastrointestinal strain. Black beans are high in dietary fiber; moderate intake helps promote intestinal motility and alleviate constipation. However, excessive daily consumption significantly increases dietary fiber intake, potentially exceeding the digestive capacity of the gastrointestinal tract. This can lead to increased strain on the system, resulting in discomfort such as bloating, abdominal pain, and indigestion.

Strain on the liver. Black beans are high in protein. Although protein is an essential nutrient for the human body, excessive intake can increase the metabolic burden on the liver and may also affect liver health.

The liver is the primary organ responsible for protein metabolism; it breaks down proteins into amino acids and then synthesizes the proteins the body needs.

Excessive consumption of black beans increases the risk of gout. As a legume, black beans contain high levels of purines. When purines are



metabolized in the body, they produce uric acid. If uric acid is not excreted efficiently, it accumulates in the body and can trigger gout. Gout is a disease caused by abnormal uric acid metabolism, characterized by symptoms such as joint pain and redness. For individuals with gout or hyperuricemia, daily consumption of black beans is not recommended.

Additionally, it can lead to nutritional imbalance. Although black beans are nutrient-rich, they do not provide all the nutrients the body needs. If one relies solely on black beans or consumes them in excess, it may result in insufficient intake of other nutrients, causing nutritional imbalance. To maintain good health, one should focus on dietary diversity and balance, consuming a variety of foods to obtain a comprehensive range of nutrients.

**Impacts mineral absorption.** Black beans contain a certain amount of phytic acid, which binds with minerals such as calcium, iron, and zinc to form insoluble phytate, thereby impairing the absorption of these minerals in the intestines.

**Hormonal imbalance.** Black beans contain a certain amount of isoflavones, which have estrogen-like effects. However, long-term or excessive consumption can disrupt the body's hormonal balance.

Additionally, patients should adopt a mindset of accepting death without fear, or focus solely on happy memories from their past; this will help alleviate mental suffering.

Furthermore, patients should resolve to face death without fear, or simply reflect on the happy memories of their lives, which will help alleviate their mental suffering. For instance, I once fainted from an allergic reaction to a penicillin injection at the factory infirmary and was rushed to West Lake Hospital for emergency treatment. Another time, when I couldn't shake off an illness, I took the seeds of a medicinal herb prescribed by an elderly Miao ethnic group itinerant healer from Guizhou—they were only as big as broad beans, and I ate just a small piece. About two minutes later, I felt a dryness in my throat, so I went to bed. Three minutes later, my hands and feet gradually grew cold, and I felt a terrifying sensation as if I were falling from a great height before losing consciousness. The factory doctor arrived with a blood pressure cuff and other equipment to try to revive me. He kept pricking my nostrils with a needle, but I remained

unconscious. Since he couldn't identify what I had ingested, the doctor immediately left without attempting further resuscitation. At that moment, my mother and wife were both weeping, lamenting that I hadn't lived a long, happy life. I knew in my heart that I hadn't done anything wrong, and that realization made me feel much better. Finally, I came back to life the next day, but I was completely weak for eight days afterward. The illness never fully

went away.

Ankylosing spondylitis is a chronic inflammatory disease that primarily affects the axial skeleton and peripheral joints; it falls under the category of rheumatic diseases and, for the time being, cannot be completely cured or eradicated. The condition may result from a combination of genetic factors and environmental influences (such as frequent exposure to cold, excessive physical strain and hardship, prolonged exposure to ultraviolet or arc light that damages cells and proteins in the body, infections, or regular cold-water baths). The disease primarily affects young men and women in their twenties and thirties, though it is more common in young men. Early symptoms include chronic lower back pain, which can progress from the lumbar spine to the thoracic and cervical spine, and may even affect major joints such as the hips, knees, and shoulders, leading to increased pain, limited mobility, and even partial stiffness in these areas.

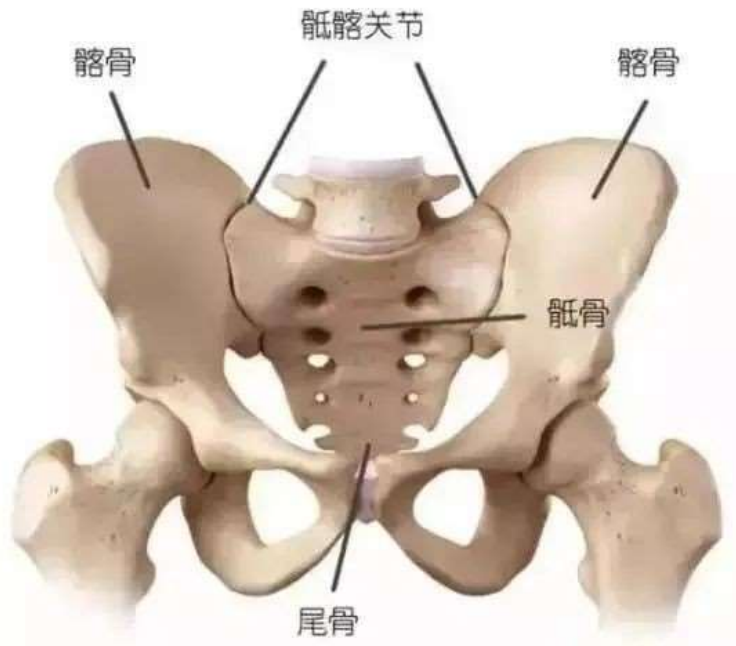
At this stage, imaging studies may reveal the presence of osteophytes (commonly known as "bone

spurs" ) between the vertebral bodies. Gradually, these bone spurs lead to ankylosis of the spine and joints, resulting in a "hunchback. "

The disease has a high prevalence and disability rate, and ankylosing spondylitis can also lead to various complications. Approximately 25% of patients experience conjunctivitis, iritis, choroiditis, or uveitis, while 2% to 10% exhibit cardiovascular symptoms. The condition often leads to loss of working capacity and severely impacts daily life.

Although ankylosing spondylitis is not fatal, it is extremely debilitating and

is therefore often referred to as the "incurable cancer."



The sacroiliac joint bears the entire weight of the upper body

The progression of ankylosis is a gradual process; it does not happen overnight. Kyphosis:

Immune dysfunction leads to inflammation → Recurrent inflammation leads to the formation of pathological new bone → The pathological new bone continues to grow and fuse → Bone fusion and ankylosis.

“Pain” is merely the “surface” manifestation of the disease, but treatment must not merely “address the surface” ; it must also “reach the root” : controlling inflammation.

Since pain is caused by inflammation, controlling inflammation is key to alleviating symptoms; Inhibiting the progression of bone structure: “ Pathological new bone formation ” is the foundation leading to bone fusion, ankylosis, and even disability; therefore, close monitoring of bone structure progression is essential. Currently, there are numerous therapeutic drugs available in clinical practice, primarily falling into the following categories:

Nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory drugs (NSAIDs): These are the well-known anti-inflammatory and

analgesic medications. They serve as first-line treatments for ankylosing spondylitis and help relieve joint pain and swelling; II. Biologics: Many biologics have been approved for marketing in China for the treatment of ankylosing spondylitis, transforming the treatment landscape for this condition. Based on their targets, there are currently two main categories of biologics: anti-tumor necrosis factor- $\alpha$  (TNF- $\alpha$ ) inhibitors and novel interleukin-17A (IL-17A) inhibitors. Both can rapidly and effectively control inflammation and alleviate symptoms. Disease-modifying antirheumatic drugs (DMARDs): These offer certain benefits for patients with concomitant peripheral arthritis [2]; Corticosteroids: Commonly referred to as "steroids," local injections may be considered for patients with peripheral arthritis, but systemic, long-term, or high-dose use should be avoided [2].

Because ankylosing spondylitis is an inflammatory, progressive disease, patients should not simply rely on whether they "feel pain" to judge the effectiveness of treatment. It is still necessary to visit the hospital for regular follow-ups, so that doctors can use blood tests

and imaging studies to determine whether inflammation is under control and whether bone damage is progressing.

Medically, ankylosing spondylitis is not considered a simple case of lower back strain or sprain; “rest” is nothelpful, and scientific exercise is more beneficial for disease control! Regular low-intensity exercise (such as walking, swimming, strength training, and yoga) can reduce pain, enhance mobility and balance, improve health, and enhance overall quality of life.

Due to prolonged exposure to cold, physical exhaustion, and

UV damage from welding that destroyed many cells, as well as financial hardship and a difficult life, I have gained experience in self-managing ankylosing spondylitis. For example, the angular momentum generated by the weight of winter clothing and shoes can be calculated mathematically; the increased weight places additional strain on the lower back, making it easier to develop a hunched posture and serving as one of the factors that exacerbates the pain.



An old photo of my hunched back. The second photo shows my back after more than 30 years of forced treatment—I would lie face-down on the bed whenever I had a moment—and my back has finally straightened out.

In the past, doctors at major hospitals all said this was a condition that modern medicine couldn't cure. When the pain was severe, I could only take steroid medication for a few days to relieve it, but that didn't address the root cause. Long-term use could also damage my stomach. Dr. Chen Qiliang, Director of the Orthopedics Department at Yangzhou City Hospital, said the only solution was to lie face-down on the bed and gradually straighten my back through forced therapy.

From then on, I stopped working and focused on recuperating at home while adopting a multi-pronged approach. For instance, I kept the bed surface spotless every day and made sure it was warm. Since my back was bent at about a 90-degree angle, it was difficult

to lie face-down on the bed, and I couldn't straighten it for three to six months. Therefore, I placed a pillow at the head of the bed

that extended beyond the edge. I rested half my face against the pillow, lying on it or on the edge of the bed each day—with my mouth and nose hanging over the edge—to facilitate gradually straightening my lower back. Each time I lie face-down on the bed for about an hour, or even spend over ten hours a day in this position, I perform exercises to force my back to straighten. While lying face-down, I place one hand on the most curved part of my lower back and tap or rub it dozens of times until the discomfort at the most prominent curve subsides, then I get out of bed to do housework or take care of the children.

Each time, I lie face-down on the quilt on the bed, and depending on how I feel, I roll over to sleep on my left or right side, doing whatever feels right. After lying on your side for



a while and your body has relaxed, lie face down on the bed again and use your fingers to locate the most prominent part of your lower back. First, apply Snake King Penetrating Bone Ointment to the acupoints and affected areas, then rub the area with some pressure over the "abacus beads" on your lower back about ten times. You should feel a warm, pleasant sensation in your lower back. Or, when rubbing the lower back with your hands feels slightly painful, lie face down on the bed again and focus your mind on relaxing the most prominent part of the lower back—relax, relax, relax.

Immediately, my body shook violently once, and I felt the curve of my lower back become much more relaxed. After breathing normally for about ten minutes, whenever I lie face-down on the bed for a short nap each day, I take a deep breath until my lower abdomen expands, providing a burst of energy to the cells throughout my body. As I gently exhale repeatedly, my lower abdomen naturally relaxes, boosting the immunity of my internal organs and my entire body. Repeating this several times further relaxes the entire body. Whether dozing off or lying face-down on the bed, I occasionally sing a few songs; the rhythmic inhalation and exhalation during singing helps release toxins from the body. This also infuses the body and mind with new energy while reducing the energy expended on breathing. If I lie face-down on the bed for more than half an hour, I often feel immediate relief from discomfort in my lower back. Only then do I roll over to sleep on my left or right side; I rarely sleep on my back. This accelerates the relaxation and rest of the central nervous system, cervical and lumbar vertebrae, and internal organs,

**allowing the patient to immediately feel revitalized.**

However, during winter and spring, when lying face-down on the bed, one should cover the back with a blanket and even wear a hat and mask to prevent dust and cold air from entering the lungs.

After breathing normally for about ten to fifteen minutes, continue lying face-down on the bed with a quilt over you.

Alternatively, while sleeping on your side, grasp one of your wrists and use your thumb to mechanically stroke up and down the area between the first and second joints of your index finger about a hundred times. This often

triggers a sudden, violent shudder throughout the body, which releases internal dampness, leaving the lower back feeling light and relaxed.

I also lie on my side in bed to rest quietly or repeatedly hold my breath, relaxing the painful areas. I do this several times a day, which helps release moisture from the body's cells. It also

boosts the patient's vitality, much like a nutritional supplement, as breathing is the body's greatest energy expenditure. Whenever

I had a spare moment over the years, I would persistently practice these various methods—lying face-down on a soft bed or similar surfaces—combining them for about an hour each day, repeating the routine several times daily. I also forced myself to keep my eyes closed while mentally focusing on my navel. [Otherwise, tilting

your head backward will cause your eyes to feel dry and painful, making the discomfort even worse.] I have adhered to this regimen without fail for decades, even striving to keep my back straight and neck upright while walking, which has allowed me to recover to a state nearly comparable to that of a healthy person. [However, the root cause cannot be completely eliminated. If I become fatigued or when rain is approaching, and my body feels uncomfortable again, I first tap the painful area of my lower back with my hand several dozen times, then apply medicinal plasters—such as the Wanyingjin Health Plaster—one on the most painful part of my cervical spine and one on my navel. I change them once a week. These are health plasters from the Yanjin County Yishantang Biotechnology Center. I also take Jingfukang Granules and take a hot bath every week. After scrubbing my entire body for a few minutes, I get dressed immediately to avoid catching a chill and avoid drinking cold water or taking cold oral medications. This helps expel dampness from my body's cells and ensures the smooth flow of qi and blood. Of course, I still avoid wearing heavy clothing or shoes and sleep on a wooden bed.

Once my back straightened, the condition progressed to the head and lower body, becoming even more uncomfortable. For instance, my lips and extremities went numb, and my bones had

calcified. If not properly addressed, the central nervous system would face further compression, and conditions like vertigo could lead to death. As a patient in my 70s, I'm concerned about the consequences and am working to wrap up or finalize some pending matters as quickly as possible. For instance, I've been busy refining the content and abstracts of my forthcoming book. The biggest problem is that even with 500-degree glasses, I can't make out the text clearly, and a magnifying glass doesn't help much either. My head feels heavy, my body is weak, and the discomfort

is even worse. Every single character I edit is a struggle. My only source of mental strength comes from the story of the Foolish Old Man who never stopped digging through the mountain, and from the author of *\*How the Steel Was Tempered\**, Pavel, and his experience writing the book. Time and again, they inspire me to refine the book's content—it's a matter of responsibility both to the readers and to myself.

Therefore, I also pay close attention to treating my condition that makes it difficult to turn my head. Every day, I start by nodding my head a dozen or so times. Then, using my mind's eye, I trace a

figure-eight motion with my head from left to right about ten times. Next, I follow the figure-eight path and twist my head to trace another ten figure-eights, followed by another dozen or so nods. I also force my head

down toward my chest as much as possible. With my eyes closed, I focus my mind's eye on my navel without breathing, waiting until I expel a burst of toxic air—which causes my body to tremble slightly. Then, I rotate my head to the left several times, followed by several rotations to the right. Although I am unable to rotate my head or nod, I persist in doing these exercises. For over thirty years, I have been lying on my stomach in bed, forcing my lower back to straighten, which has caused my head to tilt backward and become stiff. Descending stairs is particularly difficult. I must grab my hair and pull it downward to shift my body weight forward in order to go down the stairs. After decades of lying on my stomach and forcing my lower back to straighten, it has finally straightened.

As for my treatment of sciatica, I relied on acupuncture and medication, but the hospital was far away, and after two months of treatment, I ran out of money. I have come to realize that this condition is caused by overwork and exposure to cold, which affect

the meridians. It is also due to the patient's deficiency of kidney qi, where one's vital energy cannot overcome the hundred evils.

At this stage, patients must strictly rest in bed at home, minimize standing, and avoid sleeping on cool mats in summer—they

should even wear **light long pants and long-sleeved shirts**. Each

day, while **lying in a warm bed**, **first apply "Scorpion Venom King Meridian-Activating Ointment"** and **rub it vigorously over the affected leg more than 20 times**. You may also **apply it to the Kidney Shu points on both sides of the lower back to strengthen the body**. Next, **apply the ointment to the buttocks and the upper outer sides of the thighs, rubbing it into the Huantiao acupoints more than 20 times**. Whenever pain occurs in that leg, **apply the ointment to the affected area and rub it in more than ten times**. Every time you **lie down in a warm bed**, use some force to **pull the painful leg's knee toward your chest**. Then, use your fingers to **firmly pinch the most painful spot on the leg**. Focus your mind on **relaxing that spot**. At this point, **hold your breath and relax it**, making the pain in that spot feel even more intense. When you hold your breath, enter a state of meditation, and relax until the pain reaches its peak, the neuralgia may stop within a minute or at least be alleviated. Afterward, when resting or sleeping on your left or right side, place the painful leg on top of the pain-free leg. If the pain returns the next day, repeat this process two or three times daily. Apply firm pressure to the painful spot while mentally focusing on relaxing it, using pain to alleviate pain.

**In winter, wear lightweight, warm clothing such as down jackets**

and appropriate footwear. Do not place heavy objects in your pockets. Avoid heavy clothing like leather jackets and leather shoes. Even in summer, avoid wearing leather shoes and heavy clothing. Minimize standing and allow the painful leg to rest as much as possible. You may drink hot ginger tea regularly, as ginger helps dispel cold and dampness and offers various health benefits. You can also apply a pain-relieving plaster to the area of neuralgia on the affected leg, starting from the Waishu and Huantiao acupoints on the lower back and extending all the way to the heel. You may need to apply more than ten plasters; if you use one less, the pain-relieving effect will be reduced. You can change the plasters every two or three days, but after applying them, do not scratch or rub the area where the neuralgia is located, as this may damage the skin and lead to infection. About every five or six days, go to the bathhouse and soak in a warm pool. After bathing, avoid getting chilled and do not drink cold water. Each time, soak your entire body in the warm pool for about 7 minutes to expel dampness from your body's cells, promote the smooth flow of qi and blood, and accelerate the recovery from neuralgia. Of course, you should also minimize the use of air conditioning. Prolonged exposure to hot airflow from the AC causes convection with the body's internal temperature, turning bodily fluids into dampness and

worsening the condition. Additionally, electromagnetic waves can disrupt the nervous system's rest. Paying attention to these factors will help alleviate sciatic nerve pain and lead to recovery within a few days to a month at most.

For tachycardia or arrhythmia, if you feel discomfort, slight pain, or unease in a specific area when touching it, first use your fingernail to gently rub the affected area up and down, or trace about ten circles with your finger. You can also apply a large pain-relieving plaster or Zhenjiang medicated plaster to the area above the heart to alleviate cardiac discomfort; the condition should improve in about two to three days.

Under no circumstances should this be mistaken for a virus causing uncontrolled growth of cancer cells. If intravenous drips are administered over a long period, a new molecular structure of the body is formed to ensure an environment conducive to the survival and recovery of living cells.

The human body is a complex system. Factors such as the volume of fluid, its temperature, flow rate, and whether it is injected into the skin or processed by the stomach all require careful consideration.

While fluids can alleviate pain, they can also exacerbate the condition.

Moreover, this approach does not address the root cause of the illness. This can easily cause genetic mutations, leading to the



sudden evolution of a new gene from the original form.

Alternatively, chemotherapy drugs entering the body may kill many viral fragments that cannot be excreted through urine or stool; if these accumulate excessively in the body, side effects may become more severe than those of IV drips after about four months.

If the fever has not subsided, it may be due to other causes, and intravenous fluid therapy should be used with caution. Since the fluid is cold—below the patient's body temperature—it can easily lead to complications such as pneumonia or tuberculosis. Therefore, when administering intravenous fluids daily for treatment, neither Western medical practitioners nor patients realize that for chronic patients, if Western medications are administered via IV drips every day for about four months, the fluids do not enter the stomach to be processed, nor are the useless fluids excreted through urine or feces. Instead, when the infusion fluid is injected into the skin, it enters through the tiny pores on the cell membranes. Absorption is slow, so excess fluid accumulates in the spaces between cells, blocking some of the tiny respiratory pores on the cell membranes. This is what Traditional Chinese Medicine refers to as “excessive dampness obstructing the meridians”—a condition that

**results in cellular dysfunction and the patient's difficulty breathing.**

**In Western medicine, for treating infectious diseases and acute surgical conditions—such as when antibiotics are administered via IV—the infectious pathogens are eradicated within 48 hours. As a result, the fever from pneumonia subsides, and the patient regains vitality and energy. If intravenous therapy is continued for a period to consolidate recovery, the total fluid intake can be calculated. For example, assuming a patient weighs 130 pounds, the total additional fluid accumulated in**

**the body should not exceed the patient's body weight. If the patient receives an average of one pound of fluid per day via intravenous infusion, five consecutive months of treatment would amount to 150 pounds of fluid. The small molecules of moisture and medication in this fluid may total two or three pounds. Cells killed by radiation therapy cannot be processed and excreted through urine or stool. They remain in the patient's**

**body, circulating with the blood and qi. If they enter the lungs, they can block the tiny pores in the lung walls through which air passes.**

**Consequently, the small molecules from the water and medication swirl and accumulate outside the lung membranes, forming fluid-filled masses that obstruct the flow of water into these tiny**

pores. Meanwhile, the small amount of fluid in the patient's lungs, transformed into thick phlegm by the fever, causes the patient to cough and may even lead to conditions such as tuberculosis, making breathing even more difficult. If a ventilator is used to force the thick phlegm produced in the lungs into these tiny pores, it can easily worsen the condition.

During World War II, there were so many wounded soldiers that their wounds could not be treated in time and became infected with bacteria. This led to the invention of injectable solutions and antibiotics, which proved highly effective against bacteria. When applied to infected wounds, these Western medicines immediately reduced inflammation and lowered fever.

The side effects of using intravenous drips and infusions for chronic conditions over the long term are not immediately apparent.

Today, the incidence and mortality rates of leukemia, cancer, AIDS, and various viral diseases have increased worldwide. My personal recommendation is to strictly limit the use of intravenous drips and chemotherapy to four months. After that, treat illnesses by drinking hot Chinese herbal decoctions, or convert radiation therapy drugs into oral Western medications. After passing through the stomach, ineffective components are excreted through urine and feces. Alternatively, convert them into far-infrared patches and

apply them to the affected areas. This approach also minimizes side effects.

Otherwise, the heat currents and small drug molecules within the patient's body may, when spinning inward, form a new gene. This gene carries new memory codes. In the future, if events such as war, injury, or terror attacks occur, this could cause individuals who previously received frequent IV drips to experience reduced physical resistance, compromised immunity, and worsening of their conditions. Due to the presence of more small molecules in the body, if these combine with the painful energy flows experienced during treatment, they may be replicated by the vortex of the new gene into individual, fully formed cancer cells with poor quality. Or, in the case of viruses such as HIV, the water used in IV drips over a three-month period actually undermines the efficacy of chemotherapy and radiation drugs, while also promoting the generation of treatment-resistant cancer cells. Furthermore, medical theory lacks detailed explanations regarding this phenomenon or the strict requirements for the water used in

IV drips. Medical instruments cannot observe how air moves within the body or the microscopic movements of water as it enters the body. Therefore, doctors must prescribe

medications and treat patients strictly according to medical

theory. Otherwise, no one can bear the responsibility for medical accidents.

For example, thousands of doctors in Wuhan have been wearing heavy protective gear for extended periods, facing immense mental stress while working day and night to treat patients with COVID-19. Exhausted to the point of falling ill themselves, they were treated with the same medications, yet several doctors have passed away. Therefore, while every doctor hopes to cure patients as quickly as possible, the issue does not lie with the doctors themselves, but rather with the imperfections in medical theory and methodology.

For some illnesses, administering intravenous glucose allows the body to absorb it, and the patient's condition improves immediately.

When a patient has a high fever, it is actually the body's emergency response mechanism at work. Due to previous exposure to cold or prolonged mental stress, excess moisture has accumulated in the body. The fever acts as a cleansing process, reducing the energy required for cellular rotation and respiration. As a result, friction between cells is minimized, and the high fever subsides. If a patient drinks hot tea two or three times a day, or consumes hot herbal decoctions, or takes oral Western medicine with hot water

two or three times a day, and rests in bed for a few days, the body will generate billions of high-quality new cells daily. This regulates the circulation of qī and blood and optimizes energy metabolism, thereby boosting immunity and accelerating recovery. Otherwise, if the patient does not develop a high fever, does not rest, and merely takes some medication or receives a few IV drips, the illness may be dragged out. In such cases, the patient is likely to catch a cold again in about 20 days. In patients with high fevers, dampness within the body and cells is eliminated. Furthermore, fragments of apoptotic cells—driven by the body's self-organizing mechanisms—undergo continuous chemical reactions triggered by high temperature and pressure. These fragments, along with cancer cell debris, waste products, and viruses, are transformed into proteins, accelerating the patient's recovery of vitality and energy. This ensures they will not catch a cold for at least a month, thereby regulating the circulation of qī and blood and the body's energy structure, and strengthening immunity.

Otherwise, cancer cells in the patient's body will compete with other cells for water and oxygen, disrupting the body's metabolic and energy systems. This exacerbates the imbalance in the patient's tissue structures, making it even more difficult

to restore coordination.

Just as high temperatures in summer, thunderstorms, and overcast skies create low atmospheric pressure, causing fish in rivers to die from oxygen deprivation. Summer is also the season when bacteria multiply most easily, making it a time when people are prone to contracting diseases and dying. Furthermore, summer is the peak feeding season for fish; since they are voracious eaters, they are prone to overeating and dying from indigestion.

Specifically, if radiation therapy and chemotherapy kill 5,000 cancer cells per day, that amounts to 150,000 cells per month. Over five months, a total of approximately 750,000 cancer cells are killed. These are not expelled from the body through urine or feces. These killed cancer cells become dehydrated, desiccated fragments that remain stored within the patient's body. Some of these fragments, as they circulate through the blood and enter the heart, are captured by the heart's eccentric function and continuously replicated into at least dozens or hundreds of empty white blood cell shells, which also contain fragments of apoptotic cancer cells. These fragments lack nutrients and cannot be converted into substances such as calcium carbonate or protein. Yet they accumulate in increasing quantities throughout the patient's body, causing the patient's physical condition to deteriorate.

progressively. Yet, daily radiation or chemotherapy continues, killing more cancer cells and cells containing these fragments, all of which remain within the patient's body. Some of the apoptotic fragments are large in size, but as they circulate with the blood and qi, they re-enter the heart and are replicated into even more white blood cells—sometimes twice or three times. When expelled from the heart, they fail to transform into high-quality red blood cells and instead enter various structures of the body, leading to side effects.

Furthermore, the body naturally eliminates hundreds of millions of apoptotic cells daily, which accumulate in the skin, causing people to age year by year. Genes also continuously replicate these large apoptotic cells—sometimes in the billions—which can easily block the tiny airways in the lung membranes, further weakening the patient's body and making even breathing difficult. Because these shriveled, fragmented cells lack regenerative capacity, they can easily lead to conditions such as Alzheimer's disease or a vegetative state.

These four issues are all characteristic of the elderly and patients with fevers. First, the temperature causes the intravenous fluids administered to the patient to transform into what traditional Chinese medicine refers to as "excessive



dampness.” This makes cells prone to oxygen deprivation. If, after three or four months, the patient is still receiving intravenous fluids daily, toxic side effects will result. Cells will become even more oxygen-deprived. Furthermore, small molecules from medications and vaccines accumulate in the patient’s body tissues in increasing quantities, potentially causing the

body to become overloaded, much like a fish that has eaten too much.

Furthermore, these accumulating small molecules—much like bacteria that proliferate rapidly in summer water—can lead to infection. At this stage, the patient’s fever may even cause various substances, such as iron-rich meats and processed potatoes, to be converted into a plasma-like state, resulting in excruciating pain throughout the body. If the patient then takes painkillers, they may suffer from poisoning or worsening of their condition, leading to coma. If the ionic state is suddenly halted, the patient’s survival becomes difficult. This is the core issue of this article.

Some experts believe that problems arise from specific genetic defects and have developed various new drugs; however, long-term use of these drugs often leads to new incidence rates and makes the condition even harder to treat. They also use social media to shift the blame onto today’s ecological environment and dietary habits, claiming these are the causes of the increasing number of

patients.

If Western medicine were to delve into the microscopic realm and discover that radiation and chemotherapy kill many cancer cells, yet these fragments are not expelled from the body through urine or feces—much like the small molecules in vaccines that remain in

the body—there would be room for improved treatment methods. Alternatively, new drugs could be developed to clear waste from the skin,

or even remove waste from within cancer cells. Chemicals could be introduced into cells to dissolve those apoptotic fragments into gas or a new form of water. Alternatively, these fragments could be transformed into proteins through high-temperature, high-pressure processes within cells, thereby enhancing human physical constitution.

However, scientists still need to invent a heating device to maintain the temperature of the intravenous solution at 2 degrees higher than body temperature. Additionally, intravenous drip regulations stipulate that for infants and children under 10 years of age, the medication should be administered via injection into the buttocks for treatment. For children aged 10 to 18, the intravenous drip is limited to one small bottle, approximately half a pound. The recommended limit for intravenous fluid administration in adults is approximately 500 grams per pound of body weight. For chronic conditions, the attending physician determines the treatment duration—such as a course of ten or twenty days of intravenous

therapy—based on the patient's condition. Following this, patients should switch to drinking warm herbal decoctions or taking Western medication with warm water. It is also recommended that the water temperature be around 60 degrees Celsius; adults should drink about half a bowl of warm water when taking medication, as this enhances therapeutic efficacy and minimizes side effects.

These are points that should be noted according to Western medical theory and are provided for expert reference only.

Why should elderly or frail patients wear thin long-sleeved undershirts and long pants, along with a hat and socks, while sleeping during the summer? This is because such patients have excessive internal dampness. Although drinking hot herbal decoctions can help flush out this dampness, However, if the patient also wears long-sleeved undershirts and long pants, a hat on their head, and socks on their feet, this prevents the body's internal heat from escaping through the top of the head and the soles of the feet. When the patient sleeps on their left or right side under the covers, they may even wake up feeling much better, accelerating the recovery process.

Otherwise, if the patient sleeps under the covers while wearing long-sleeved underwear, the surface muscles of the legs will cool down, and this chill will travel to the temples, causing the patient to feel drowsy and lacking in energy. This also affects the efficacy of the medication.

Of course, caregivers must observe the patient closely and, even in winter, understand the patient's constitution and tolerance levels.

If a patient with a cerebral infarction experiences difficulty breathing and is in critical condition—to the point where even drinking hot soup or liquid causes them to choke and they cannot eat—they should be fed a liquid diet through a nasal tube. However, the patient can take steps to help themselves. For example, the patient should try to turn themselves, or family members or nurses should assist the patient in turning onto their side or lying on their side, or even lying face-down on a pillow or directly on the edge of the bed, with their mouth positioned outside the bed to prevent dust from the bed from being inhaled into the respiratory tract.

The patient must no longer be allowed to sleep on their back. Intravenous drips or infusions should also be discontinued.

Sleeping on the left or right side, or in a prone position, allows bodily fluids to move downward, accelerating the circulation of fluids, qi, and blood. You can also purchase two pounds of Chuanxiong powder (*Ligusticum wallichii*) from a Chinese herbal pharmacy at and . Place about one and a half pounds of it in a gauze bag and position it on the bed surface directly against the temple affected by the cerebral infarction. The strong scent of Chuanxiong powder will help clear the blockage in the cerebral infarction after about forty minutes. Alternatively, place a small spoonful in your mouth and

drink a few sips of hot water; the strong scent will directly target the blocked area. Or, pour two small spoonfuls of Chuanxiong powder into a bowl, add half a bowl of boiling water, stir a few times with chopsticks, and drink the remaining hot mixture. After about 30

minutes, it will begin to eliminate excess dampness in the patient's head. The blockage will clear, and the patient will regain vitality and energy. However, for the next two days, the patient should still drink this hot Chuanxiong powder decoction twice daily, and rest quietly in

bed while lying on their left or right side or on their side, keeping warm.

The cerebral infarction will then be cured.

Patients may also drink warm water and take appropriate health supplements morning and evening, followed by a bowl of multigrain porridge with a small portion of savory side dishes. After getting a full night's sleep, patients may get out of bed and do about 20 steps of on-the-spot walking or running, choosing an exercise intensity that suits them. However, the patient should not go to work or work flexible hours, but rather stay at home each day

to focus on recuperation. If possible, take a hot bath once a week, scrubbing the entire body for a few minutes. Afterward, dress warmly,

wear a hat and socks to avoid catching a chill. Avoid cold beverages and cold meals, and minimize or avoid exposure to air conditioning. Running in place for about ten steps daily, and resting and sleeping on the bed

while lying on the left or right side for a total of about 15 hours, will help regulate the body's qi and blood circulation as well as its energy structure—including the dampness generated by IV drips—over several months. This will enhance the patient's overall immunity and accelerate a complete recovery.

Radiation therapy and chemotherapy are effective in the early stages for killing many cancer cells. However, after about four months of chemotherapy, the accumulation of small drug molecules reaches a limit, releasing even stronger toxicity. If the patient has already lost their hair, chemotherapy should no longer be administered. Have the patient lie on their left or right side or lie prone on the bed, allowing the body's qi and blood to swirl downward in a centripetal vortex during rest, thereby generating more new cells.

Artificial stem cells and proteins can also be generated because, in cancer patients, the body's qi and blood swirl inward toward the heart every day, potentially forming thousands or even tens of thousands of cells. As long as the patient consumes the appropriate foods, the body can synthesize proteins. The key is to clear out the debris and waste from the dead cells within the body. It is also important to switch to drinking hot herbal decoctions or

taking Western medication with hot water, as well as to ensure proper self-care for the patient.

There are many excellent articles and case studies on Zhihu regarding current cancer treatments and cures; choose the ones suitable for your condition and follow them to recover. You can also learn Taoist fasting methods online at home. For example, Zhang Xiang from Linfen, Shanxi, practiced internal cultivation until, after five days, his qi was sufficient and he no longer craved ordinary food. By depriving cancer viruses of nutrients, the shriveled, apoptotic fragments naturally wither away. Carried by the circulation of qi and blood, they spiral inward toward the eccentric void field within the heart or the genetic eccentric void field, where they are spun into several new cells. These cells contain numerous shriveled, apoptotic fragments, making them heavier than normal cells and lacking the vital force of qi. These new cells, evolved through starvation, become sources of numerous side effects within the patient's body, causing the person to age rapidly, much like someone with two legs who can no longer climb stairs.

Yet, like all things, cancer cells are subject to the

natural laws of birth, aging, sickness, and death. Even within the body, they are not incurable: after eight days, a batch will naturally undergo apoptosis through metabolic renewal. If one practices the art of abstaining from food, this differs from fasting or starvation, which harm the body. Through focused meditation during practice, one achieves a state akin to that of the Venerable Huineng, who passed away over 1,300 years ago. archaeologists used knives to cut open his chest and abdomen to remove his heart and other organs for study. Why, after more than 1,300 years, not only had his body not decomposed, but his muscles retained elasticity? When his heart was scanned, it was found to be faintly moving. As the tip of

the knife approached Huineng's heart, the anatomist felt a sense of awe, yet the Buddha's face immediately broke into a smile, showing a willingness to face death. The dissection proceeded, and the moment was immediately captured on



camera.



I won't delve into whether this smile was real or not, but in my essay on the soul—written at least eight years ago—I described a centripetal vortex of energy within the temporal-parietal junction of the human brain. This vortex forms the soul within the nervous system. When the vortex within the soul is flung toward the heart by centrifugal force, it is intercepted just outside the heart, where it coalesces and replicates into a micro-particle—also known as the material soul system—which is stored near the heart.

When an anatomist opens the abdomen, the first thing they see is an egg-shaped mass near the heart. Most people do not have one this large, let alone a micro-particle resembling their own vortex.

It may be that the Buddha, through profound spiritual cultivation, evolved subatomic particles that powered the soul and the heart, thereby enabling the deceased's body to remain incorrupt for a thousand years. This also proves the validity of the theory of the soul.

It may be that when Daoists practice fasting meditation, their focus is single-minded and their food intake minimal; once their vital energy is sufficient, they no longer crave food. Indeed, the fragments of cancer cells that undergo premature apoptosis due to oxygen deprivation are not

expelled from the body through urine or feces. Instead, they become dehydrated, desiccated fragments that remain within the patient's body. Some of these fragments, as they circulate with the blood and qi toward the heart, are captured by the heart's eccentric function and continuously

replicated into dozens or hundreds of empty white blood cell shells, which

also contain these apoptotic fragments. These fragments lack nutrients and cannot be converted into substances such as calcium carbonate or protein. These fragments accumulate in increasing quantities throughout

the patient's body. Current medications may be unable to address them, particularly the numerous dehydrated, waterless fragments within the skin and inside cells.

To cure cancer as soon as possible, if one does not wish to learn the practice of fasting—which involves going without food for several days and can easily harm the body—the patient may instead try the following: first,

clean the bed thoroughly; when sleeping, wear socks on the feet, a hat on the head, and long-sleeved underwear and long pants. This helps retain the body's internal heat, preventing it from escaping through

the top of the head, the thighs, or the soles of the feet. One must sleep

on one's side or lie prone on the bed. Begin by taking deep breaths, then exhale gently, repeating this cycle twenty to thirty times. Afterward, focus your mind to hold your

breath and enter a state of meditation, relaxing your attention on the cancer virus—or the area where you feel the most discomfort or pain—without breathing, simply focusing your mind on “ relax, relax, relax. ” When you reach the limit of relaxation, your body may begin to tremble. This indicates that the cancer cells are no longer receiving oxygen, causing them to suffocate and die off in large numbers. The patient will immediately feel a surge of vitality. Rest quietly for a moment, or roll over to lie on your left or right side—whichever you prefer—and repeat the breath-holding exercise. Do this daily while sleeping in a warm bed. After five or six days, you will feel even more energetic and revitalized, indicating that the viruses in your body may have even disappeared. However, the fragments from the dying cancer cells have not been excreted through urine or stool. These fragments, along with those from cancer cells killed by chemotherapy and radiation therapy, circulate with the blood and qi, spiraling inward toward the eccentric void field within the heart, where they are swirled into white blood cells. Alternatively, they spiral inward toward the eccentric cavity field of the genes, where they are replicated into more cancer cells

containing several fragments of apoptosis, which are then released into the patient's body.

Patients should not lose heart; they should continue to perform this practice once each in the morning, afternoon, and evening, with each session lasting about an hour. Many fragments within the cancer cells are sealed inside the cells. The internal energy within the cells generates friction and pressure, creating high temperature and high pressure. This first heats the cellular fragments; once heated to the extreme, it becomes easy to transform these fragments into proteins. The patient will immediately feel revitalized and regain vitality, and the cancer will not be able to regenerate. This effectively cures cancer. This machine, which utilizes the cell membrane to create a sealed environment for transformation, can convert large quantities of cellular fragments within the body into substances such as calcium carbonate and protein, thereby eliminating cancer cells. It is worthy of in-depth research and refinement by scientists, and could help rid many nations of the burden of cancer.

Anyone over the age of fifty who frequently suffers from colds, or who has hypertension, cardiovascular or

cerebrovascular diseases, or epilepsy, as well as patients currently hospitalized for treatment, should prioritize wearing silk pajamas—knee-length summer pants and a hooded windbreaker—every night before bed. They may remove them in the morning, but wearing this sleepwear while sleeping on one's left or right side, or in a prone position, accelerates recovery from various illnesses. It also helps prevent myocardial infarction, cardiovascular and cerebrovascular diseases, and cerebral hemorrhage during sleep, ensuring they do not occur. Furthermore, waste fragments from cancer cells within the body are transformed into proteins through high-temperature and high-pressure processes within the cells, allowing patients to wake up feeling more energetic and revitalized.

If all men and women over the age of 50 were to wear pajamas and pajama pants to bed during the summer and fall, Assuming they sleep every night in pajamas and long pants that reach the knees, the elevated temperature inside the cells will first disperse the moisture from the waste fragments of cancer cells, then metabolize

500 of these fragments. In one month, this process reduces the number of cancer cells containing waste by

15,000. If this practice is maintained daily for thirty years, by the age of 80, all waste fragments within the cancer cells will be completely cleared, and the elderly person will feel rejuvenated, walking with renewed vigor. This mechanism, which utilizes the cell membrane for sealing and transformation, can mass-convert waste fragments within the body into substances like calcium carbonate and protein, thereby eliminating cancer-causing agents.

This approach warrants in-depth research and refinement by scientists, which could help countries shed the label of being "cancer-prone nations." It makes it less likely to develop cancer and contributes to health preservation and longevity by several years.

Patients should drink hot water morning and evening, take appropriate health supplements, and follow up with hot multigrain porridge accompanied by lightly salted side dishes to strengthen their constitution. Of course, patients should also drink hot black tea two or three times a day and drink half a bowl of hot water every night. They should take supplements such as Liuwei Dihuang Pills to replenish kidney yin deficiency. Additionally, they should wear long-sleeved undershirts and long pants, keep their

heads covered with a hat, wear socks on their feet, and rest or sleep in a warm bed. They should also select suitable activities from the images provided and perform them diligently, adhering to the principle of “30% medication and 70% lifestyle adjustment” to achieve a full recovery.

For instance, I use four methods to address the fragments of apoptosis within the body and cells. The first method involves selecting approximately twenty types of precious Chinese herbs, such as *Desmodium styracifolium*, chicken gizzard membrane, sea sand, plantain, corn silk, *Chuanxiong* powder, *Salvia miltiorrhiza*, dragon's blood, *Angelica sinensis*, *Dehuo*, *Qianghuo*, *Dipsacus asper*, *Cordyceps sinensis*, and *Gastrodia elata*. I grind these herbs into a fine powder, mix them with honey to form a medicated paste, and apply this paste to a piece of far-infrared fabric. I create a large medicated patch with a circular diameter of about 8 centimeters and a thickness of approximately 4 millimeters, which I then apply to the affected area. After bathing each week, I immediately replace the patch with a new one.

First, external cold air is prevented from entering the affected area. The aromatic properties of these precious Chinese herbs penetrate the painful site, relaxing tendons and unblocking meridians, promoting blood circulation, dissipating blood stasis, and relieving pain. They also dispel

wind and dampness through rapid high-molecular-weight penetration. The patch generates heat without irritating the skin and contains absolutely no capsaicin or white peony root. It helps expel internal dampness through urination and defecation. Ginseng and other ingredients replenish qi, address deficiencies, and provide thermal energy. In addition to applying the large medicinal patch, patients wear a thick, German-style self-heating bodysuit that fits snugly—much like a woman fastening her bra tightly—to prevent the heat from the patch from escaping the body. The large medicinal patches are also applied to key acupoints on the legs, such as Zusanli (ST36) and Sanyinjiao (SP6), which are important for treating gallstones. Next, a sleeve-style cover is placed over the legs to protect the large plaster and retain heat. The flow of herbal medicine energy provides targeted acupoint care, clearing dampness and fragments of dead cells from within the body and cells, as well as debris left by viruses killed during chemotherapy and radiation therapy. These substances are broken down into gas within the cells and, as the cells breathe, are directly expelled from the body. Through the continuous transformation facilitated by the large medicated plasters, the viruses and waste fragments within the cells are eventually converted into calcium carbonate. Alternatively, the cellular waste and viruses are transformed into proteins, enhancing vitality and well-being. This process turns waste into treasure, creating the most affordable and effective health



supplement available, capable of curing cancer without side effects. For seniors over 55, regularly applying the plaster to acupoints such as Zusanli(ST36) allows the plaster to continuously clear waste and debris from the body, boost overall immunity, and even reverse the aging process, significantly extending lifespan. It also helps prevent future illnesses such as cancer and kidney stones.

[https://pic3.zhimg.com/v2-09162364e080cd4c9d74926f6acc1782\\_qhd.jpeg](https://pic3.zhimg.com/v2-09162364e080cd4c9d74926f6acc1782_qhd.jpeg)

Today, cancer incidence and mortality rates are high. The countryside is no longer what it was before 1960; intravenous injections administered in the buttocks now carry far fewer side effects and risks. About four years later, hospitals in both urban and rural areas began treating patients with intravenous drips, and medical diagnoses were made based on data from medical equipment, meeting high standards. However, each

person's tolerance for pain and resistance to illness varies.

Some people claim that smoking, alcohol, tea, certain fruits, and vegetables can make one prone to illness, and that even freshly cooked meals from restaurants are unsafe to

eat. Yet why is India's population now larger than China's?

According to UN data, India's gross domestic product has surpassed China's, which further suggests that India has

more industrial pollutants. Moreover, in the Ganges River—India's dirtiest waterway—people bathe in droves. Street food stalls and small restaurants across India are bustling with business, and some diners even eat flatbreads with their bare hands without washing them. Yet India's cancer mortality rate is less than half that of China's.

Chinese people are more hygienic than they were forty years ago, and even smoking and drinking have decreased. The mortality rate from illness and various traffic accidents should have decreased significantly. It shouldn't be increasing year after year. It's just that some people, in order to make a living, use social media to spread misinformation, claiming that even the cleanest food cooked fresh in restaurants is unsanitary. This causes people great mental stress, leading to an increase in various illnesses. They have fallen into the strategic trap set by interest groups.

Currently, the mortality rate in rural China is slightly higher than in urban areas. This is due to elderly people over 70 in rural areas voluntarily choosing to forgo treatment.

Based on the above examples, Western medicine, such as treatments for infectious diseases and acute surgical conditions,

certainly accelerates recovery. However, Western medical theory may have exaggerated the functions of factors like genes. If chronic patients are administered cold-water IV drips over the long term, this can lead to major problems with numerous side effects. This is a problem arising from the imperfections in medical theory.

In contrast, Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) demonstrates excellent efficacy in treating systemic chronic diseases such as cancer. Yet, for thousands of years, TCM has based its theory solely on the concepts of "qī" and "blood." It overlooks the fact that approximately 70% of the human body consists of warm water, while "qī" and "blood" constitute only a fraction of it. Furthermore, the replenishment of primal energy ultimately stems from water

being transformed into "qī" and "blood." Of course, in TCM, herbs are decocted in water, and patients are given hot herbal decoctions to drink. The heat from these decoctions permeates the body, enhancing the

patient's vitality and spirit, thereby accelerating recovery.

Therefore, a three-pronged approach combining Western and Traditional Chinese medical theories with the patient's self-care is essential. This must be unified and grounded in physics or natural science, and both medical theories must be refined and improved. When treating illnesses, one must flexibly adjust the amount of water used. In particular, special attention should be

paid to patients who cannot take medication with cold water; they should take it with hot water and rest in bed or sleep for a while afterward to maximize the therapeutic effect.

The actual viral load depends on factors such as the duration of the animal's fever, the number of intravenous fluid administrations the patient receives, the types and doses of medications used, and the patient's physical condition or environmental factors. For instance, in Africa's hot climate or in cold regions, the quality of viruses evolved within the patient's body differs. Within the cellular vacuoles, the virus replicates into more and more small molecules or cyclonic clusters. Under the high temperature and pressure inside the cell, regardless of quality, they are transformed into protein-shelled viruses. Even autopsies fail to detect them—for instance, if the heart is infected by the virus. Without any external force acting upon it, the virus is inert and non-infectious.

The claim that viruses are contagious stems from inaccurate experimental procedures. It has nothing to do with eating vegetables

or drinking tea. Yet why isn't this thoroughly investigated online?

Despite hospitals utilizing all the most advanced medical equipment, the incidence and mortality rates in the United States today are several

times higher than they were two hundred years ago.

Some truths come with consequences. For instance, after President Bush replied to my email, I realized that every few years, someone fabricates a major news story! If patients also understand

this—that cancer cells undergo apoptosis approximately eight days after the body detects them, with diseased and aged cells being the first to die—

They can simply focus on self-care at home—eating well and

getting plenty of rest—for up to a month! Patients must avoid mental stress, drink hot tea two or three times a day, and eat vegetable

congee or hot bean porridge morning and night, using it as both tea and a meal, accompanied by flavorful, lightly salted side dishes. Once a week, take a hot bath and scrub the entire body for a few minutes. Dress warmly to avoid catching a chill; do not drink cold beverages or eat cold food. If feeling down, hum a few songs. Singing helps expel toxins from the body through breathing. In winter, avoid heavy clothing such as leather jackets, wool coats, and leather shoes; instead, wear down-filled or cotton-padded jackets and lightweight cotton shoes. When going out in winter, wear a mask and a hat; even while sleeping, wear socks, a hat, long-sleeved undershirts, and long

pants. This helps retain the body's internal heat, preventing it from escaping through the top of the head, the thighs, and the soles of the feet. If

you are ill, drink effective hot herbal decoctions. Alternatively, drink hot water and take Western medicine tablets orally. In particular, do not undergo radiation therapy or chemotherapy after four months. Run in place about ten steps every day, then rest and recuperate by lying on your left or right side in a warm bed. By following these guidelines, the circulation of qi and blood within the body and its energy structure will be regulated, boosting overall immunity. This helps prevent illness, heal existing conditions, and promote longevity!

To prevent epidemics, add a layer of clothing promptly when a cold snap hits. Bathe in the bathroom once a week, sitting in a warm tub and gently scrubbing your entire body for three to five minutes. Avoid cold food and drinks, and do not wear heavy clothing or shoes. Drink hot tea twice a day and run in place for about ten steps. Minimize air conditioning use in both summer and winter, and you will be less likely to contract epidemics and other illnesses.

I was seriously ill with no money for treatment or food. For over seven years, I suffered from brain cancer and a persistent low-grade fever, spending most of each day in a semi-comatose state. I was too afraid to even speak a single word; I couldn't keep my eyes open or make out the words on a page. My teeth fell out, and I became deaf. The pain was so severe that I had to take several breaks just to finish a single bowl of rice. However, I

persisted in flexibly choosing treatments suitable for my condition at the time, such as drinking hot herbal decoctions or taking Western medicine tablets with hot water. I also took good

care of myself in every aspect, including resting in bed frequently. This allowed the circulation of qi and blood within my body, as well as my energy structure, to be adjusted, thereby boosting my immunity and extending my lifespan.

For instance, I first cured my sciatica and Meniere's syndrome on my own. Shi Qiaoyin, a master who rented a room from me, gave me two pieces of Tianma (a Chinese herb) and advised me to boil them together with a black-feathered old hen. After cooking, I consumed the hot broth and chicken meat while still warm. Since then, my vertigo has truly disappeared. I also recovered from rheumatic heart disease, post-surgical intestinal adhesions, and ankylosing spondylitis—my back finally straightened out—and I even overcame the pain of brain cancer. I have lived for over forty years and am now 78, still busy with research.

Meanwhile, among my classmates, factory colleagues, and friends and relatives—more than 30 people in total—none of them suffered from as many or as severe illnesses as I did. They were all financially well-off and younger than me, yet one by one, they passed away. It is precisely because I know how to take care of

myself.

Social media must also leverage its strengths of being concise, timely, and impactful. Just as during the 2020 Wuhan pandemic, when the National Health Commission reported the incidence and mortality rates of the novel coronavirus daily on its platforms, the rates in Wuhan eventually declined day by day. Once they dropped to zero, Wuhan immediately lifted its city-wide lockdown and road closures. The media plays a regulatory and motivating role and has

made significant contributions to the public's health! You can also

read the article on 360.com titled "Cancer Isn't a Disease? A Groundbreaking

View That Challenges Traditional Medicine."

A Zhihu expert asked: "Where does your theory come from? Modern medicine is a system built brick by brick over millions of years of human history, founded by billions of people through animal testing and clinical trials. You can't just wave your hand and dismiss it. Newton stood on the shoulders of giants; your mere century of experience hasn't even made a ripple in history.

How many ancient texts have you examined? How many experiments have you conducted? How much of the content in those ancient texts can be verified as true? Truth comes from practice. A medical student undergoes 12 years of basic education, 8 years of higher education, and 3 years of hospital residency training, not to



mention the additional 3 years for a master's degree and 3 years for a doctorate. The number of papers they've read and written is well over a million. Moreover, among the world's 8 billion people, China has

15.78 million medical professionals, accounting for 1.1271% of the total population. Even if we take just 1%, there are nearly 100 million healthcare workers worldwide. Even if each person studies for an average of 10 years, the cumulative study time amounts to 1 billion years, and the number of characters read and written reaches tens of trillions. Master, please broaden your perspective—have you seen all

t

his?

I have observed that there are 100 million healthcare workers

worldwide, and the state has allocated tens of billions of yuan for vaccine injections and mass nucleic acid testing, yet the incidence and mortality rates of the Wuhan novel pneumonia continue to rise year after year. The Eastern Sage waved his hand grandly, requiring not a single penny nor any medication—merely a few key sentences from an article on the pandemic. Not only did China announce the end of the Wuhan novel pneumonia outbreak on December 5, 2022, but there have been no suspected or positive cases since then.

Later, after the World Health Organization saw the English-language

article titled “Ending the Pandemic,” published by Mr. Sun from Yangzhou in a U.S. scientific journal on February 16, 2023, it finally

announced the end of the global COVID-19 pandemic at the end of February 2023. The European Union also destroyed large quantities of vaccines and ceased PCR testing. To this day, the world has not seen a major resurgence of the pandemic. If readers of this article could help spread the word, I would be grateful to you all.

It's possible that experts both at home and abroad face different circumstances and are in different positions, so their approaches and outcomes are bound to differ. Even if they make mistakes, new developments require a process of trial and error. Moreover, they have the strength of a team, which allows them to defuse major issues and resolve minor ones. But as an elderly person with a disability certificate, I don't receive a single penny; I still have to pay internet fees, and if I make even the slightest misstep, I'm kicked off the network by the administrator. In severe cases, I could be arrested, imprisoned, or even face the death

penalty—it's simply two different worlds.

No doctor in the world can restore a patient with ankylosing



spondylitis and a 90-degree kyphosis to the state of having a straight back, as I have now.

Since each person's condition is different, and even self-care methods vary, this content—due to its sensitive nature—only scratches the surface. It is provided for patients to reference and adapt as needed, with the hope of a speedy recovery and happiness every day. If you have any questions, please add me on WeChat to discuss.

Mail-order copies of the popular science book \*New Highlights in Natural Science\* are available for 60 RMB per copy (including shipping; payment upon delivery). Patients with disability certificates or those facing financial hardship will receive one free copy; they need only pay for shipping.

Mail-order address: Sun Chunwu, Room 805, Building 20, Shuxiu Garden, Xihu Town, Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province, China 17306271565 Email: yzscw0514@163.com WeChat ID: scw20171020

If this is a hoax, you won't receive the attached: President Bush's reply letter from November 2008

On behalf of President Bush, thank you for your correspondence.  
We appreciate hearing your views and welcome your suggestions.

Due to the large volume of email received, the White House cannot respond to every message.

Thank you again for taking the time to write.

My suggestion was finally published ten days later in the December 5, 2008, edition of the Yangzhou Evening News. U.S. researchers said on the 2nd that they had found that frequent exposure to CT scans increases the risk of cancer in patients.

Additionally, if you suddenly feel extreme discomfort in your chest while sleeping or during a busy speech, and can no longer continue working for even five seconds—such as in the case of patients with heart disease or high blood pressure—you should immediately perform self-rescue by lying down wherever you are, either on your side, face down on the ground, or on a bed. Focus your mind to relax your heart and mind, immediately take a deep breath and exhale gently several times; you may even experience a violent tremor throughout your body. This helps clear out toxic gases, small molecules, vaccine residues, or fragments of apoptotic cells blocking the heart or brain, leaving the patient feeling a sense of relief in the heart, mind, and spirit. Continue this for another ten to fifteen minutes. However, do not lie on your back. Alternatively, follow your own proven health practices for quiet rest and recuperation. This will help adjust the body'

s circulatory and thermal energy systems, thereby boosting immunity, averting life-threatening danger, and preventing a cerebral hemorrhage. You will have survived a major crisis without lasting complications and may live several more years.

At this stage, the patient's breathing becomes significantly more difficult, and they may feel as though their mind or head is about to explode, creating an urgent need to lie down and rest. If resuscitation methods are improper, they will only increase the pressure on the patient's heart or brain, placing the patient in even greater danger.

Additionally, life insurance companies should provide policyholders—especially those in high-risk occupations such as truck or train drivers, or staff with significant responsibilities—with a handbook on safety knowledge or the popular science book *\*Tai Chi Talks About the World\**. If everyone understood that within the body's 45-day cycle, there is a 15-day period of low energy that poses a risk,

those in hazardous occupations should be especially cautious when working between 2:00 and 9:00 a.m. and 3:00 and 9:00 p.m. Furthermore, they should drive more cautiously and slowly between 9:00 and 10:00 p.m. each night, or take the night off, as this is when the Earth's rotation causes significant shifts and fluctuations in tectonic plates and irregularities in the geomagnetic field. This can lead to unusual phenomena or weather conditions. For instance, under identical terrain and speed conditions, loss

of control may occur, resulting in various accidents. Particular attention should be paid during years when the Earth's rotation is at its fastest, as this can help reduce accidents and minimize unnecessary injuries or fatalities among passengers.

This phenomenon also has a particularly pronounced effect on plants in nature, especially the seeds of the medicinal belladonna. For instance, the germination trends of seeds across different years show that the first generation of seeds accelerates in germination starting in the 1st, 2nd, 4th, and 7th years. The second generation of seeds begins in the 2nd, 3rd, 5th, and 8th years. The third generation germinates in the 3rd, 4th, 6th, and 9th years. While the germination timing of each seed appears irregular, if we examine the entire process using this elliptical motion

evolution diagram, their entire process essentially follows an accelerating motion from small to infinite, and the seeds evolve and develop in the sequence 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. In this way, they can form a combined force across the various force fields within this elliptical evolutionary diagram to resist the harm caused by the laws of nature's motion, ensuring that seeds sprout year after year, thereby sustaining life and achieving the conservation of energy. [Please refer to the article "Mysterious Seeds" by Tang in the April 2005 issue of <Encyclopedia Knowledge>]

You may also observe the people and events around you more

closely. If you maintain close relationships with friends and frequently give them gifts to strengthen your bond, occasionally asking them to do small favors for you, and if you haven't known them for long, they may encounter minor mishaps. This is God's way of telling you to be cautious. Although they might help you with trivial matters or offer verbal advice on how to proceed, they will not take the initiative to act on their own. In the future, you cannot rely entirely on them for everything. If you truly need their help, you must remind them frequently. Otherwise, no matter how many gifts you give, it will still hinder your important matters.

Of course, if you habitually interact with others in this manner, within about twenty years—due to a lack of the friction and friction caused by doing good deeds—the long-term accumulation of this will result in less iron in your blood being converted into magnetism and electromagnetic waves. This affects the strength of your physical health. You may even fail to sense danger in certain situations or, in a crisis, be unable to generate the right mindset to prevent an accident from occurring.

If one acquires ill-gotten gains or windfalls—such as through gambling or money mistakenly given by others—within about three years, one will, through a twist of fate, lose this external wealth in another form, and may even end up paying out additional money. If one borrows money from others and fails to repay it without just cause, the resulting energy

may—even before the next life—disrupt the body’s internal energy flow in this very life, manifesting as illnesses such as chronic sores in certain body parts, or a persistent streak of bad luck that refuses to lift. Yet the creditor will find it difficult to recover the debt, as repayment serves only to avert future calamities. Just as those free from worry and anger are less prone to heart disease.

This is why Buddhism teaches people to accumulate virtuous deeds: by doing good and performing acts of kindness, one can protect one’s health, avert misfortune, and ensure a long life. It also brings peace of mind at the end of life, minimizing suffering. This is the true purpose of striving for success and fame in life—to secure a peaceful passing for oneself and to cultivate blessings for a virtuous rebirth in the next life. It truly yields far greater rewards than saving money in a bank.

Therefore, educated and wealthy people are willing to engage in charitable deeds. However, some filthy-rich individuals, who do not believe in these intangible matters, would rather spend vast sums of money on prostitutes for momentary pleasure than engage in small acts of charity in their daily lives. Moreover, those who are so stingy that they would rather lose a single coin than risk their lives often encounter robbers and, because of their stinginess, suffer the ultimate calamity of losing their lives.

Take Zhuge Liang, the military strategist of Liu Bang during



China's Han Dynasty. He prided himself on his great abilities and frequently used fire attacks to win battles, yet each time, tens of thousands of innocent soldiers perished in the flames. Later, realizing the grave consequences of his moral failings and the shortening of his lifespan, he attempted to borrow thirty years of life using the Seven-Star Lamp. However, General Wei Ran accidentally extinguished the lamp, and Zhuge Liang died of illness on the campaign trail before his ambitions were fulfilled.

Meanwhile, Sima Yi, the commander trapped by the raging inferno with no escape, fell from his horse in despair and wept bitterly. Suddenly, a three-foot-deep red rain fell from the sky, extinguishing the forest fire and saving the lives of Sima Yi, his son, and the entire army. Later, Sima Yi even became emperor.

At that moment, Zhuge Liang sighed deeply to the heavens, "Mandates, but Heaven decides."

"It was because of his ruthless nature that the fire blazed so fiercely toward the sky, causing the hot and cold air to collide and rub against each other, which in turn brought about the heavy rain."

"Sun Wukong, you're right. When I was cutting the steel plate with an oxygen torch, I noticed water vapor at the boundary between hot and cold. If I controlled the torch's movement just right, a torrent of water would flow down."

“You dimwit, I’ve earned both merit and hard work for you today. Now it’s up to you to see what tasty treats you’ll offer to honor your old ancestor.”

“My boss, you’re really putting me on the spot! There’s no fine food here to offer you—just a few dry rations and cold buns to nibble on.”

“It’s still better than going hungry. Actually, I’m used to this kind of life. On the journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, there were times when I was so hungry I couldn’t even get a sip of water. After slaying demons, vanquishing monsters, and fighting desperately, while others rested, I still had to go begging for alms to get food for my master, or scrounge for money for travel expenses—it wasn’t an easy task. Even the minor demons I once saved and showed mercy to have now become wealthy, wearing proper trousers and employing many servants. Some of them even exchange a few pleasantries when we meet. Knowing I had come to beg for alms, his face darkened as he said, “Things look good on the surface now, but with workers’ wages at ten yuan a day, daily expenses run over a thousand yuan. Plus, business is tough these days—low profits and plenty of bad debt. I was hoping the Great Sage could lend a hand one more time and arrange a loan so I can make even more money.” Besides, even if I had money, I wouldn’t need to spend ten to twenty yuan on superstitious trinkets like love knots, copper gourds, and sutras to get rich.

Some people are even worse. When they see me in my shabby robes, holding a love knot, a brass gourd, or a sutra to beg for alms, they turn their backs on me and shout, 'No work here,' 'Go, go, go,' 'No money, no money.' Not only do some people refuse to give me a meal or a few coins, but they also spew a whole lot of offensive remarks. For instance, they claim that we monks and beggars are national parasites and vermin of society, that we harbor exploitative class ideologies, that we're mentally ill, that we're just looking to make a quick buck, and that we're forever looking down on them—even going so far as to say we're bringing shame to the face of the Emperor of the Great Tang Dynasty. Even local officials, unwilling to find the best solution to these matters, have joined in with red-eyed zeal, posting notices instructing passersby not to give money to beggars. As a result, some wealthy individuals—who earn over a million yuan a year and are naturally more astute than the average person—would rather spend their money on entertaining dogs for amusement than give a single penny to a beggar. They are even reluctant to give money or gifts to their own parents, let alone donate to beggars or contribute to charitable causes.

Once, I was so famished I could barely walk. I lingered a while at the entrance of a house, repeatedly calling out, "Kind lady, kind lady, please show some mercy and give me something to eat." But the wealthy woman actually poured a basin of dirty water over my head, soaking me

from head to toe. This made me furious, and I cursed, “Don’t you have eyes?” “It’s exactly what I meant—get lost!”

“Watch your mouth! My husband isn’t someone to be trifled with.” She grabbed a toilet brush and swung it at me while shouting, “Someone, come beat this old rogue!” Several servants came out of the house wielding sticks and knives, charging at me like demons and beating me wildly. I knew this was bad. When dealing with a violent shrew, the best strategy is to avoid her, but this time I couldn’t dodge. I had no choice but to use my agility to outmaneuver her. I parried the attacks from several henchmen’s clubs, then seized an opportunity to calmly and suddenly crouch behind the shrew. The clubs chasing after me struck her squarely on the head; blood gushed out, and she collapsed to the ground. I then darted forward and leaped in front of the henchmen. Just as I heard the retreating henchman being knocked to the ground by another, the sound of his wailing and screaming alerted the old wealthy landowner.

I saw the old miser reporting the incident to the authorities while simultaneously ordering the office clerk and over a dozen others to attack me. I grabbed the old miser by the collar and demanded, “Are you being reasonable?” He replied, “Reason my ass—I’m just going to beat the shit out of you.” I pressed my index finger hard against his throat and warned, “If you don’t give me food, I’ll kill you.” But the old miser remained defiant, waving his hands to signal his men to attack me. However, when

the men saw how fierce I was and that the old miser was collapsing, unable to breathe with his throat pinned, they shouted, “There’s a right and wrong way to fight! There’s a right and wrong way to fight!” One by one, they were too scared to step forward and strike me.

Just then, the constables arrived. I quickly released my grip and explained the situation to them. But the old miser, having regained his senses, fired a volley of darts at me—which I dodged—only to accidentally wound the constables and a few of his men. Instantly, the men turned on me, chasing after me to beat me. I dodged their attacks while pretending to hide behind the constables and shouting for help. The chaotic brawl was finally brought under control by the constables, who took me to the county seat for processing. My master was brought there as well, which actually pleased me. After all, resolving this matter would rely entirely on my master’s eloquence to prevail; my fighting skills were of no use. You see, he doesn’t just bow to every Buddha he sees; when facing officials, he doesn’t resort to cursing or striking first to argue his case. He sticks strictly to reason and the law, nitpicking at the other party’s words to defend his position. Not only did he help me argue the case according to the law with ample legal reasoning, but he also secured a substantial sum of money for my medical expenses.

But this time it’s difficult. He said, “Your Honor, when my disciple, a beggar, asked for food or travel money, they not only refused to give

alms but also had twenty or thirty of them beat him up alone. The shopkeeper's wife who was beaten unconscious was struck by the clerk whose leg was broken. The other clerk who was seriously injured was accidentally struck by the boss's flying dart; it had nothing to do with my disciple. The damaged goods are valued at 5,700 taels of silver. We simply cannot afford to pay that. We monks travel a thousand miles without carrying grain or rice, and ten thousand miles without carrying lamp oil—where would we get the money to pay? You must not detain my disciple; you must also give him some money to treat his injuries. Otherwise, he won't agree. You must handle this according to the law."

Just then, the dog-like wealthy man gave the constable a nod, motioning him aside to hand over a gold bar. The constable shouted, "According to the law, if we break someone's leg, we must compensate them with a leg. Since you have no money to pay, you'll have to break a leg to make amends." As he spoke, the dog-like wealthy man really did strike my legs with all his might. I lifted my leg and kicked the dog-like wealthy man to the ground. The men who rushed forward swung their clubs wildly, but their blows landed on him instead. I heard the dog-rich man curse at the constable, "Even a dog wags its tail after eating; what good are you lot?" "If we had the authority to let you beat her, that would mean you're incapable of doing it. Enforcing the law is difficult; it's not worth losing our jobs or going to jail over a few pieces of gold. Besides,

even the Jade Emperor couldn't figure out what to do with this penniless wretch—he had to ask the Buddha for help. But the law only allows her to be imprisoned under Mount Wuzhi for five hundred years; she can't be killed."

Suddenly, the dog-rich man fired five darts in quick succession. I dodged four of them, but one struck my scalp, and blood streamed down my face. I heard my master pleading with the constables in a voice that rose and fell, "Please, don't hit my disciple anymore. You must do a good deed—you must do a good deed!"

But their rain of clubs and staffs kept coming at me, showing no sign of letting up. Furious, I shouted, "Master, it's no use for you and these people to recite any more sutras! Get out of the way—let me deal with this bunch of scoundrels with all my might!" With that, I swung my Golden Monkey Staff, beating them until they were terrified out of their wits, begging for mercy. I grabbed that dog of a rich man by the collar again and demanded, "Will you give me food and travel money, or else I'll kill you first, no matter the cost?" Look at that dog of a rich man—he was trembling all over with fear, repeatedly saying, "I'll give it, I'll give it, I'll give it—I'll give you as much money as you want." "You rich folks are like candles—you won't light up unless someone strikes a match. Besides, if it weren't for Guanyin persuading me to embrace virtue and go to the Western Paradise to retrieve the scriptures, I wouldn't be here peddling books just to scrape together a little travel money. I'd be living the life of a minor king, sipping fine wine and listening to music—a life fit for a god."

"Look at how hard it was for me to get things done before, and how much my reputation suffered. Everything in this world is an illusion. It's those rich folks who are the real villains—who can understand us? From now on, you and I must take good care of ourselves. We can't be foolish—we must treat money as a matter of principle and not squander it. We must rely on ourselves; relying on others is unreliable." After speaking, Wukong took a few steamed buns from his satchel and began eating. Glancing around at the rocky cliffs and barren soil, he then noticed Ke Daizi struggling to swallow his cold buns without water, and a pang of sorrow welled up in his heart.

Just then, Ke Daizi asked, “Boss, why is Chinese culture called ‘moral culture’? When did it originate?”

“As experts Zhao Yuwen and Wang Dekui from Mianyang have researched, Chinese culture originated during the virtuous cycle of politics in the ancient United Nations from approximately 6390 BC to 3151 BC—a period characterized by ‘the wealthy aiding the poor and the lower classes supporting the elite.’ It was then passed down through Shennong, the Yellow Emperor, Yao, Shun, and Yu; Shang Tang and Yi Yin; King Wen of Zhou and the Duke of Zhou; and Confucius, among others, for 4,500 years. This tradition has been handed down for over 7,000 years without interruption, and it was not until approximately 2,500 years ago, during the Qin and Han dynasties, that it was finally compiled and completed.

The Bagua diagram and the concepts of Yin and Yang in the I Ching and the Tao Te Ching are, in fact, terms from physics: Yin represents centripetal force, and Yang represents centrifugal force. It is through the interplay of these two forces—their opposing strengths—that the myriad things in the universe and the outcomes of their movements are manifested. Just as a chaotic crowd walking on a road must follow traffic rules—stopping at red lights, proceeding at green lights, and adhering to left- and right-hand traffic—to significantly reduce the occurrence of traffic accidents. When individuals with great strength or authority violate traffic rules and force their way through, causing accidents or conflicts, there are established guidelines to address the issue.

Therefore, traffic rules and the like represent the shared moral principles to be observed when travelling on the road. This makes it convenient to formulate and solve problems. This is why China’s Taiji culture is profound in meaning, practical in application, and free of side effects.

However, using laws as enforcement standards presents



problems. For example, China ' s traffic regulations—which require vehicles to drive on the right—fundamentally differ from Japan' s system of driving on the left. Moreover, once laws are established, they cannot be adjusted on a whim. In contrast, the concept of "virtue" (德) has a broader scope and embodies greater scientific and civilized principles. In any country, at any time,

and regarding any matter, if you apply the principles of virtue, conflicts will be minimized, and society will be stable and harmonious.

Therefore, the ancients, based on their own circumstances and understanding, flexibly applied the Taiji and Bagua diagrams to develop their respective cultural theoretical systems for governing the state and resolving various complex issues.

For instance, King Wen of Zhou utilized the 64 hexagrams of the \*I Ching\* to outline methods for handling 64 major affairs.

Each hexagram' s six lines describe the six key points or six stages for addressing that matter. For example, the \*Shi\* hexagram discusses how to wage war; the \*Song\* hexagram discusses how to litigate; the \*Xun\* hexagram discusses how to protect wealth; the

\*Dui\* hexagram discusses how to ensure safety through joy; the "Well" hexagram explains how to meet the people' s needs; the "Treading" hexagram explains how to navigate relationships with ministers; the "Approaching" hexagram explains how to oversee the realm; the "Breaking" and "Meeting" hexagrams explain how to assess rebellions; the "Adornment" hexagram explains how to arm oneself; the "Revolution" hexagram explains how to carry out a revolution; The "Family" hexagram discusses how to manage one' s wife, children, and the intricacies of human relationships. As Li Mingzhong, a Guangdong-based master of the Eight Trigrams, has stated, these are the political theories of imperial statecraft—creative teachings on state-building and world governance—developed by King Wen of Zhou.

Laozi of China drew upon the law of centripetal motion—represented by the fish-shaped arrow at the bottom of the Bagua—to establish the Five Elements (Yin-Yang, Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth) as the basis for the evolution of all things. He elevated this to the philosophical heights of Daoist thought, emphasizing the unity of opposites and the fusion of conflicting aspects.

Confucius, drawing on another arrow-like symbol in the Bagua that represents centrifugal motion, established Confucianism—based on benevolence, righteousness, propriety, wisdom, and integrity—and the Way of the Mean, which advocates active engagement in the world, as the highest realm of moral cultivation, teaching people to live virtuously and bring honor to their ancestors. Unfortunately, their approaches to analyzing and viewing issues were fundamentally different: one from a macro perspective, the other from a micro perspective. Without a genuine

physical understanding of Fu Xi's Bagua diagram—and consequently, without identifying the source of the Dao or elucidating the diagram's full significance regarding the nature of things—it cannot play a significant role in science and technology.

Although, decades ago, Professor Wang Xiyu of the Chinese Academy of Sciences dedicated his life to painstaking research and ultimately used the Eight Trigrams to solve 162 difficult problems in the natural world, offering insightful explanations, he did not truly comprehend the Yin-Yang diagram of the Eight Trigrams—specifically, the various data points within the elliptical diagram of the unified field theory—to formulate and solve problems. Consequently, his work lacked the necessary strength to be recommended for the Nobel Prize.

In summary, the Taiji and Bagua use the simplest method to unveil the laws of motion in the microscopic world of all things,

while also establishing a standard of virtue to guide people in conducting themselves according to the rules of virtue in social interactions. and that relations between nations must also be conducted in accordance with the rules of Dao and virtue. To solve all the puzzles of the natural world, one must properly formulate and solve problems by following the principles of centripetal and centrifugal forces, as well as the friction between these two forces of Dao and virtue. In other words, governance can follow the methods for handling the 64 major affairs described by King Wen of Zhou. When analyzing macro-level issues, one must adhere to the Taoist philosophy of "non-action in the world" established by Laozi, emphasizing the unity of contradictions and the integration of opposites. In addressing ideological education, we should follow the Confucian "Way of the Mean"—which emphasizes benevolence, righteousness, propriety, wisdom, and trust—as well as the Buddhist precepts against killing, stealing, sexual misconduct, false speech, and alcohol. Such education in ideological and moral culture contributes to social stability and unity. Therefore, China's Taiji and Bagua culture is, in

essence, a culture of morality. Yet today, people worldwide have not sufficiently studied or applied Chinese moral culture, and as a result, the world is not very stable.

Indeed, Chinese moral culture is both profound and practical; we

must thoroughly study, explore, and develop it.

“Boss, I’ d also like your guidance on this: does the ‘soul’ truly exist in this world?”

“Lenin once said that whether

the soul exists is a question for future science to answer. Meanwhile, during his philosophical debate with Feuerbach, Marx opposed the idea of an immortal soul as the foundation of a new religion. He was perplexed: where does the soul go after a person dies?

But I believe the soul does not mean that when a person dies,

they become a ghost or a god. If you trace the origins of the concept of God, you’ ll find that what we call atheism today has been a subject of debate ever since the time of Laozi and Taoism. To put it simply, theism speaks of a temporal difference—that good and evil will ultimately be rewarded or punished. Atheism speaks of a spatial difference—that man can conquer nature.

Moreover, recent scientific research has discovered that there truly exists a spiritual system—the soul—within the

temporo-parietal junction of the human brain, generated by external air currents entering the center. When the vortex is pushed and frictioned by centrifugal force to a certain speed, it forms a spherical mass that moves in a centripetal direction. In other words, depending on the mass of the air, it aggregates and replicates a micro-particle of corresponding mass—also known as the material soul system—which is stored near the heart. It exerts force to drive the continuous flow of blood, among other functions.

For instance, three days after death, the deceased’ s soul is

reluctant to leave home, as the cells within the deceased' s body  
 continue to absorb the blood and the faint air within the body. Once the air and  
 blood in the corpse are fully absorbed, the cells absorb the foul odors and small molecules emitted from  
 the feces in the large intestine, as well as the air in the small intestine. Generally, it takes about twenty  
 days for the cells to complete this absorption. After the corpse swells to its maximum limit and explodes,  
 it decomposes into

water vapor. Rising into the sky, the deceased' s soul seeks its  
 destiny—whether to be reincarnated or to contribute a part of its energy to the  
 evolution of all things.

Some of these gases swirl inward, forming new cells. However, once these new  
 cells have absorbed all the water vapor from the  
 corpse, they too wither and die.

That is why, when I was gravely ill and living in poverty with no money to buy  
 food, an old colleague remarked that I had a sullen  
 complexion and would not survive past the end of 1970.

Perhaps the cells, unable to absorb the vital energy within the body, drew upon  
 the energy from the large intestine, which manifested as a sallow complexion on my face.

Just as hot air currents generated by activity and movement on the ground, when  
 unable to rise into the high-pressure zones of the sky, spiral downward in a centripetal vortex to give rise  
 to certain plants.

Within these plants, different scents evolve, and around them, new species emerge—some to grow together in companionship, while others, like insects, come to socialize or gather nectar.

If a person's talent attracts a larger circle of friends, these are friends who have evolved naturally through the forces of the universe.

However, one must learn to discern and select those who are suitable

for you; avoid negative energy to minimize detours and setbacks in life.

If a person spends their life doing good deeds, or spends long hours in their home deep in thought, gaining profound cultural insights, and then, after much refinement, organizes these thoughts into written works for publication, even their living space will be imbued with an invisible spiritual essence. This will benefit both themselves in the future and their descendants. This

is why the concept of the "soul" was introduced in ancient times: on one hand, to serve political purposes; on the other, it may reflect how certain gaseous substances from a previous life synthesize and transform into specific qualities, much like genes.

The wisdom data encoded in these genes will inevitably, as the physical body decays, revert to gaseous form and disperse into the cosmos. These various gaseous forms of wisdom data then combine with the energy or fields of nature, giving rise to the continuous emergence of new species and phenomena.

For instance, spherical clusters of gaseous matter with particularly large mass, when encountering forces under specific environmental conditions, project the original images of past-life events as if playing a slide show; people call these "ghosts." Since they lack energy replenishment, their movement in the air resembles that of clouds or mist in the sky—they gradually disperse and lose mass, or after recombining with other air

currents, they are transformed into a new form of soul. For instance, the air currents inside the Egyptian pyramids are subjected to vortex-like movements. This prevents food stored within from spoiling easily, and even rusty iron placed inside the pyramids begins to glow due to these swirling air currents. This phenomenon resembles the workings of a soul: even after a person dies or their body decays, the subatomic particles and cells within the body continue to release energy or force. Particularly for those of greater spiritual substance who have performed many good deeds in life, the energy released during this period is abundant. When the release of energy is especially intense, the cells within the body undergo a transformation of mass. Once a certain level of new mass is attained, it can enable a person to be resurrected and gain knowledge of matters in the unknown world beyond death.

For instance, when I was gravely ill, I took a highly toxic herbal remedy made from seeds by an itinerant old woman from Guizhou in the afternoon. Seven minutes after ingesting it, I first felt a dryness in my throat, followed by my hands and feet gradually growing cold. I experienced a terrifying sensation as if falling from a great height, and then I lost consciousness and died. Even the factory doctor could not save me and left, carrying his medical bag.

Yet the cells within my body retained information from my time on earth, giving rise to hallucinations and insights. I heard my



family' s cries of grief, lamenting how they had suffered to preserve our property, and how I had never enjoyed a single day of happiness. I felt no remorse; instead, I saw a bright light and was fortunate enough to experience moments of joy and pleasure. My soul felt no pain. The next day, I came back to life.

Moreover, today' s computer cameras have captured authentic footage of people' s souls leaving their bodies, providing concrete proof to settle the centuries-old debate over the existence of the soul. Buddhism teaches that if a deceased person' s soles are warm, it means they accumulated little merit in life and will descend into hell—symbolized by earth and stone—or end up with nothing at all. If the navel is warm, they will be reborn as animals or plants. If the heart is warm, the soul will be reborn into the family of someone with whom it has a karmic connection—as a descendant—to collect a debt or repay a past-life debt of gratitude. If the crown of the head is warm, after cremation, it will transform into a relic (sarira), and in the next life, the soul will be reborn as a monk dedicated to spiritual cultivation or in a similar vocation.

From a cultural perspective, the Taijij diagram drawn by the Chinese sage Fuxi, with its two arrow-like symbols representing Yin and Yang, also tells us that if a pregnant woman has a large appetite and eats a nutritious, rich diet, her body will be strong. She is more likely to give birth to a Yang [male] child. If, however, she lacks proper nutrition and her body is weak, the energy generated will be centripetal, making it more likely to give birth to a Yin [female] child. All of this stems from the subtle energy accumulated and transformed by your parents over time, including cosmic energy flows and the spiritual energy of those with certain merits, which combine to form subatomic particles—or what can be called the spiritual essence of the soul.

This requires parents to lead by example in all aspects,



leaving behind a legacy of fine moral and cultural values for their children's subatomic soul systems. For humans are not like plants or trees that care not for beauty or ugliness; death does not mark the end of everything. Otherwise, the next generation will bear the brunt of your mistakes.

Alternatively, if a child commits misdeeds in the future, it will wound the parents' hearts—their souls. Or, in the future, you may use medical means to replace their soul system with a healthy one, thereby altering the negative outcomes of your children's actions. Or, from their earliest years, parents must educate them through long-term moral and cultural guidance to transform and cultivate the souls within their original spiritual systems, thereby elevating them. [The energy flow directed by the spirit toward the heart is replicated by vortices to create more new cells. This also refers to how various societal influences during their growth process affect their consciousness, which is stored within the cells and the soul.]

Therefore, if a mother wishes to give birth to a child who will achieve greatness—becoming a pillar of the nation, a great scientist, or a talented artist—and lead a happy life as a filial and virtuous child, she must first cultivate a happy life and a moral heart herself. The spiritual environment during the mother's pregnancy, the quality of her life at that time, and her mindset

throughout her life already determine seventy percent of her child's

for the children to learn and correct through their own includes giving them a good name that will benefit them for a ls, it is best for the mother to begin educating them from the age



teaching them to speak first and telling them various stories. When children receive a good education and later encounter various aspects of society as they grow up, their comprehension improves, their lives become more structured, know how to manage interpersonal relationships, and be more inclined to help others. This process generates a warm current within the body that spirals inward toward the heart, where it is swirled into numerous healthy cells. These cells are then flung outward by centrifugal force, evolving into an abundance of red blood cells, resulting in a person brimming with vitality, energy, and spirit. The friction and movement of these internal energy currents transform ingested foods—such as potatoes and meat—into magnetic energy and electromagnetic waves, which are more reliable than security guards. For instance, before a car accident occurs, these electromagnetic waves receive advance information from the shifting magnetic fields of the North and South Poles. This information is transmitted to the subatomic particles in the brain, allowing one to proactively alter their fate and avoid a potential accident.

Moreover, the body's internal hot air currents spiral inward, generating healthy cells that are systematically distributed throughout the body's structures—not in disjointed, fragmented patterns—thereby extending one's lifespan and increasing the number of happy and joyful experiences in life.

You must also teach your children the ability to adapt and

handle unexpected situations, for those who can get things done will fare better than those who merely talk their way through things. For instance, they should be able to resolve difficult problems and handle matters appropriately simply by using their eloquence—or even just a few well-chosen words.

If a child catches a cold or falls ill, teach them not to take medicine with cold water. Instead, instruct them to place the tablet in

their mouth first, take a large sip of warm water (about 60 °C), and then swallow it quickly. Alternatively, they can crush the tablet or capsule into a bowl, add a little brown sugar, stir it with chopsticks, and drink the warm mixture in one gulp. Follow this with a few sips of hot water. Rinse your mouth as well. Then go to sleep in a warm bed and get plenty of rest; this will help you recover faster.

You can also explain to your child that certain setbacks or nutritional deficiencies during pregnancy may have occurred, and encourage them to eat kidney- and blood-nourishing fruits, vegetables, and meats as they grow up. You should also advise them to stay cheerful, maintain a balance between work and rest, and correct any unhealthy lifestyle habits. By doing so, they can reduce the likelihood

of certain issues arising in the future—such as developing leukemia—and ensure good fortune throughout their life.

You can also, based on the child's natural disposition, explain that life is a journey of self-cultivation. First, help the child build a strong body, stay focused on their studies, and avoid misdeeds. They should cultivate patience among classmates, filial piety toward parents, loyalty in marriage, integrity among friends, kindness toward the weak,

humility before the strong, and—most importantly—tame that restless, ever-changing heart within themselves! A single thought of anger opens a million gates of obstacles; a single thought of compassion blooms ten thousand lotus flowers!

You can also tell fairy tales like “The Boy Who Cried Wolf” or “The Kitten and the Fisherman” to your children. You can also have your children retell the stories to you or to their friends, to help them practice their speaking skills. Under no circumstances should you tell children to take shortcuts or do wrong. Nor is your responsibility fulfilled merely by providing for their food, clothing, upbringing, and marriage.

If you wish to give birth to a boy, you must persist in eating a

variety of nutritious foods every day, even when you have no appetite during pregnancy. If you also consume more alkaline foods, the energy generated from these nutritious foods will form more centripetal vortexes, creating more cells imbued with wisdom. These are stored day by day into the fetus's body, much like data saved onto a computer's hard drive, to organize into a systematic human being—and you may even truly give birth to a boy.

If these cells are stored in specific facial features, the child will be born with a round or full face and a kind, blessed appearance. This faceshape will gradually release 70% of a lifetime of good fortune through this system. The remaining 30% will be shaped by the child's struggles and hardships in society, evolving them into talented and filial children (who are also a part of the mother's soul). Because a square or round face and large ears at birth already reflect the presence of many high-quality wisdom cells within their bodies—which have accumulated in areas such as the face and nose—they provide abundant wisdom and energy for their future success in wealth or career advancement. As they grow up, their talents will naturally emerge. [If you abstain from sexual relations, your children will have fewer romantic entanglements in the future. Furthermore, do not conceive in harsh environmental conditions, such as strong winds, heavy fog, extreme cold, or intense heat; especially avoid intimacy during thunderstorms: for the chaotic energies of thunder and lightning, the obscurity of heaven and earth, the partial eclipses of the sun and moon, and the earth-shaking tremors will disrupt the synthesis of the elliptical-moving energy within the human body. If one engages in intimacy under such conditions, it will harm the person, and the spirit will not be auspicious. It will harm a hundred men and cause women to fall ill. The children born will surely be mad, foolish, mute, deaf, crippled, lame, blind, one-eyed, or short-lived; or the children born may have poor sexual desire.

From then on, all their future honors, disgraces, misfortunes, and blessings will be intertwined with their mother's, tugging at your heart (soul). The honors, disgraces, misfortunes, and blessings of other

people's children, however, do not intertwine with your soul, so they cannot tug at your heart with such intense feeling. But your own children—regarding matters of birth, aging, sickness, and death—lack that same intense emotional connection to your soul. If they are like an emperor who governs the people with benevolence, the virtuous soul they leave behind will be immortal, further inspiring their descendants to strive for excellence, bringing them abundant good fortune.

If you find that your children's names carry an energy field like that of Wu Pei or Liu Xue, they may be prone to losses in business. Or if the last character of their name is "qiang" (strong), and they hold a subordinate

position, the energy flow within them and that of their superior will be like placing different elements in the same container—it may be difficult to maintain a long-lasting and harmonious partnership. This is because a superior represents the macro-level energy; they view and handle issues with a broader perspective and comprehensive consideration. In contrast, your personal energy flow tends to focus on specific, micro-level aspects when addressing problems. If you encounter such a situation, both parties should practice greater tolerance. You might need to adopt a more low-key approach, show greater respect for your superior, or seek a different environment where your talents can truly flourish—thereby changing your fortune.

If you cannot accept this explanation, in ten thousand years, people's use of the term "comrade" will also be regarded as idealistic and superstitious. After all, since I have not yet found a kindred spirit in you and have never met you, why should I call you "comrade" first? In short, with the concept of the soul, people have a goal to strive for, which is beneficial for the future and can promote good and punish evil.

Therefore, if Buddhism's teachings on the soul were explained scientifically, people might become more open-minded and reverent, and there would be even more people doing good deeds and upholding morality. Moreover, lifespans would increase, suffering at the end of life would truly be reduced, and it would also provide positive

guidance for descendants regarding specific matters.

You silly little science nerd, that's all I have to say about the soul. Believe it or not, it's up to you. But I believe it. Look

at me—I used to be a rough-and-tumble hick who couldn't even speak proper Mandarin, but today I've lived a long life and have some talent, haven't I?

"That's right. I've often heard those cynical, mocking people say things about me—that inventing the internal combustion engine makes me a lunatic, a fool, or that foreigners aren't as smart

as you. But I just don't listen. I believe in what needs to be done, and I'd do it even if it meant going to prison or being beheaded."

"That's right. Life is about holding fast to good beliefs and staying committed. You must resolve to strive hard; once you produce results, people will believe in you. Look at me: before liberation, when students rebelled and put a high hat on the counterrevolutionary president Duan Qirui, it was just. I strongly supported and actively participated in that rebellion.

After liberation, when the People's Republic of China was just established, I took the venerable Master Hsu Yun—a man of great virtue and supernatural powers—as my mentor. In 1950, though my master was 115 years old, he still took me to Mount Yunju in Jiangxi to oversee the reconstruction of the temples there, which had been destroyed during the Japanese invasion of China. Leading by example, he guided us monks as we worked day and night to rebuild the temples. On one occasion, a massive stone millstone blocked the construction site. Several young monks were unable to move it, but when my master arrived, he simply bent at the waist, lifted it with both hands, and carried it to another location so we could continue our work. The entire crowd immediately erupted in enthusiastic applause to congratulate him. Yet my master merely pressed his palms together, smiled, and said, "Amitabha Buddha."

Some of us monks worked as bricklayers or carpenters, while others were busy clearing land and farming, establishing a large farm. My abilities surpassed theirs; I performed a magical feat, shifting the high peaks of the mountains into the valleys to create paddy fields. At that time, we didn't even have the money to buy a waterwheel, let alone an electric pumping station to draw water. So I summoned wind and rain to grow over 100,000 pounds of various crops annually. We also donated the surplus grain to the state and distributed it to the local poor.

One year, I saw my master return from Beijing after only a few days. I told him, "Now that the political landscape has changed, you should comply with the government's arrangements. You've received gifts from our French friends—how wonderful it would be if you stayed in Beijing to serve the nation by hosting foreign guests." It was wrong of you to insist on returning to the mountain. Now look at this—this 'rightist' label, though not

as ornate or endearing as the one my former master once placed on me, brings you endless mental anguish. Yet my master still insists I attend his sessions. Don't you think he's become a stubborn old man?

Back then, the governor of Jiangxi Province would often come to Yunju Mountain to give us monks political lectures. He urged us to study the works of Marx, Lenin, and Chairman Mao earnestly, saying that we, too, were part of the superstructure and should contribute ideas and strategies for socialist construction and economic development. After listening to Governor Yang's speech at the meeting, I was deeply moved. Our religion was part of the superstructure, and the state valued us. Driven by revolutionary fervor, I stayed up all night to write a letter to the Central United Front Work Department, asking them to forward it to the relevant authorities.

Since there was a wave of anti-China sentiment in Southeast

Asia at the time—particularly with Japan slandering China as having ambitions of aggression and expansion—I used a wealth of historical facts in my letter to refute these anti-China claims. I stated that China and Japan have historically been friendly neighbors. During the Tang Dynasty, Monk Jianzhen, in order to promote the prosperity of Japanese culture, made six arduous voyages eastward, enduring great hardships until he finally succeeded—only after losing his sight. His journey to Japan was not an act of aggression, nor did he do anything to harm the interests of the Japanese people; rather, he made a positive contribution to the flourishing of Japanese culture. If the Chinese people could act in this manner even during feudal times, today, as a socialist nation where the people are the masters of their own country, we will certainly make new and positive contributions to Sino-Japanese friendship. I urge all peace-loving Japanese people not to be swayed by the anti-China propaganda of hostile forces, but to actively contribute to the early normalization of diplomatic relations and to strive for the enduring friendship between the Chinese and Japanese peoples for generations to come.

In 1966, Chairman Mao, in response to the political needs of the time to guard against and oppose revisionism, launched the unprecedented

Cultural Revolution, calling on China's young students: 【【You must care about the nation's affairs and carry the Proletarian Cultural Revolution through to the end】】. The goal was not to use institutions, but to use a movement to resolve the major issue of the “cycle of rise and fall.” Those

innocent and lovable students were stirred up by Chairman Mao's great call. One by one, they actively joined various rebel organizations, wearing red armbands such as “Red Guards” and “Little Red Guards” on their



sleeves, holding the Little Red Book of Chairman Mao's quotations in their hands, and wearing all kinds of Chairman Mao badges on their chests. Wall everywhere were plastered with passionate big-character posters and large

slogans. Slogans like "We'll risk our lives to bring down the emperor,"

"Our heads may be severed, our blood may flow, but we'll defend Chairman Mao's revolutionary line to the death," and "We'll never abandon it" were plastered everywhere.

These young revolutionaries were even more spirited, dedicated, and selfless than I was back when I went to the West to fetch the scriptures. They walked with great pride and vigor, marching in groups and squads,

holding aloft banners proclaiming "Rebellion is justified; revolution is not a

crime." They roamed the streets and alleys, venturing deep into the grassroots and rural areas, shouting revolutionary slogans to promote the Cultural Revolution. They also went everywhere to "destroy the Four Olds

and establish the Four New," burning and destroying ancient artifacts and

books associated with feudalism, capitalism, and revisionism. Street names linked to these forces were also changed to reflect the spirit of the times, such as Lixin Road (Road of Innovation) and Zaofan Road (Road of Rebellion).

Driven by this revolutionary fervor, they also pinned all sorts of "highhats" on the heads of veteran revolutionary cadres, academic authorities, and others, lining them up in row after row for a street protest. They

repeatedly raised their arms and chanted slogans such as "Down with the unrepentant capitalist-roaders like XXX!" One rebel even held a thorny branch from a Chinese scholar tree, lashing it from time to time against the bodies or heads of the ruling officials and academic authorities being paraded through the streets. I saw a plump, bald-headed old man whose short-sleeved undershirt and head were covered in blood as he was struck by the branch; he collapsed unconscious before they even reached the Yangtze River Bridge. I also heard some of the rebels shouting that he was

"playing dead" as a form of resistance. At that moment, I couldn't stand

it anymore and blurted out, "Even when I was causing chaos in heaven, I never dared to put a 'high hat' on the Jade Emperor. Is this what you call a revolutionary act?"

Just look at how ignorant and blind those arrogant rebel faction members were—they actually put a tall hat on me, a well-known, hard-nosed

veteran rebel leader, hung a "counterrevolutionary" sign around my neck, and placed me at the back of the line behind the ruling clique and academic authorities to be paraded through the streets. After the

public parades ended, we attended daily "criticize, struggle, and reform" study sessions. There I met Secretary Yang of the Hanjiang County Party

Committee—whose wife was Director Ji of the County Women's Federation—as well as Director Zhang of the County Health Bureau and other veteran officials, all of whom were part of the ruling faction.

I will never forget the plight of Secretary Yang and his wife, Director Jiof the County Women's Federation. The self-criticism statements they wrote each day stacked up to a meter high, expressing their determination

to follow Chairman Mao's words, accept criticism and re-education to become new people, and never become unrepentant, die-hard

capitalists. Yet they were still taken to every township and village across the county for public criticism every day. Two burly college students would grab Director Ji by her short hair and drag her onto the stage for criticism, just as if they were escorting a criminal. After the criticism sessions ended, one by one, these officials were escorted off the stage and paraded through the streets and villages of Xihu Town. The procession chanted various slogans

continuously, especially those two burly college students—one on each side—grabbing Director Ji by her short hair, pushing and dragging her as they paraded her through the streets and villages. Her head, held up by her short hair, was tilted back toward the sky in a look of agony; though she could no longer walk, they continued to push her forward through the public humiliation.

One year, just before the Spring Festival, Director Ji's youngest daughter came to visit her mother, crying and saying, "We don't have money to buy a new outfit for the New Year. You've caused us so much

suffering." Director Ji also wept. "In other families, only one person is locked up here, but in my family, there are two. Moreover, Secretary Yang is

in poor health. The consequences of such criticism and torment are unimaginable. We've only been working in Hanjiang for less than two years. We have made serious mistakes, and we've written many self-criticism reports. Our souls have already been transformed." Moreover, the great Chairman Mao has repeatedly said that over 95 percent of cadres are good or relatively good, yet policies still fail to reach us. Therefore, when she wrote her daily morning reports and evening summaries, she once wrote that "policies and strategies are the Party's illness." This only made things worse for her; she was subjected to endless criticism, accused of slandering and distorting Chairman Mao's quotations. She was told that "policies and strategies are the lifeblood of the Party," and that changing this to "illness" constituted reactionary speech and behavior. Every day, just like me, she knelt before Chairman Mao's portrait to make her morning reports and evening summaries.

But for some reason, I couldn't kneel for even half an hour before my knees became unbearably painful, and I'd break out in a cold sweat. When I looked down at night, oh my goodness. To this day, the red marks on my knees haven't faded—it turns out I'd been kneeling on a metal triangle. Once, my goddaughter brought me a cotton coat. I noticed the foam scarf around her neck. I immediately treated it like a treasure and said, "Give me that foam scarf. Next time you come, don't bring anything else—just bring a couple more of those foam scarves, and I'll be eternally grateful." From

then on, every day before my morning report and evening report, I would secretly wrap and tie the foam scarves around both my knees. Well, it really

worked—even when kneeling on the metal triangle for over two hours, it didn't hurt anymore. Little did I know that the good times wouldn't last; another mass criticism session was held, demanding I confess my crimes.

On stage, the "high hat" pressed down on me so hard I could barely breathe. I hopped and jumped, shouting, "I'm a royalist! I'm an unrepentant royalist!" The slogans from the audience grew louder and louder: "Smash Sun Wukong's dog head! She must behave herself—no more jumping around!" As they shouted, several burly men rushed

up—some grabbing, some yanking, some pinning me down, and some beating me. When the beating became unbearable, I bent at the waist and thrust my hips forward, knocking two of them to the ground, which sparked a burst of laughter from the crowd below.

I placed the "Counterrevolutionary" placard on the ground and said with the utmost seriousness, "Chairman Mao's supreme directive teaches us: 'When thunder and lightning rise from the earth, spirits are born from piles of white bones; monks, though foolish, can still be disciplined, but demons and ghosts will surely bring disaster. The Golden Monkey rises with a thousand-jin staff, clearing the heavens of ten thousand miles of dust. Today we cheer for the Great Sage Sun Wukong, for the demonic mist has returned once more.'"

“This is Chairman Mao’s highest praise for me.” Having said this, I  
 flung the tall hat off my head onto the ground. Good heavens, no wonder it was so heavy—  
 it turned out to be a tall hat made of iron pipe. Holding the iron pipe hat in one hand and my golden staff in the  
 other, I kept striking the  
 iron pipe hat while addressing the crowd below: “ ‘Listen to that clanging and clattering.  
 Could it be that Mao Zedong ordered them to make iron pipe  
 hats to persecute people and launch the Cultural Revolution? These youngfools are  
 acting recklessly, unable to distinguish right from wrong, and  
 lacking in Chinese moral and cultural cultivation. They’re bound to suffer  
 for it in the future.’ With that, I strode off.  
 “Boss, what is the Cultural Revolution? And why is it called a ‘Great Revolution’?”  
 “A revolution is like inventing a new product or undertaking an innovation to generate  
 more new energy. Look at the great figures throughout history—they all sought to establish a happy,  
 harmonious,  
 stable, and prosperous society, yet time and again they relied on armed  
 rebellion, killing tens of thousands in the process. In other words, they took the lives of  
 their opponents to overthrow the old regime and establish and  
 consolidate a new government—how painful that was. Yet, within three to  
 five years—or at most a decade or so—the ideological currents and desires of some  
 people grow powerful and frenzied once more. Consequently,  
 incidents of banditry and robbery increase, or wars break out year after year,

leaving the people in dire straits.

Therefore, the ancients established the Three Teachings—Confucianism, Buddhism, and Taoism—as the foundation of their culture, while people from other countries, such as those who founded

Christianity, used their own traditional cultures to educate the people. Indeed, the impact of these cultural teachings was no less significant than that of military force. As the number of people doing good deeds increased, the number of rebels decreased, fewer people were killed, and the regime became more stable.

Yet none of these movements penetrated the hearts of the people as deeply as the unprecedented and massive Cultural Revolution. First, millions of elite young students of that generation charged to the front lines, driven neither by fame nor profit. Later, workers, peasants, and soldiers actively joined various rebel organizations, with at least 100 million workers, peasants, merchants, students, and soldiers throwing themselves into the tumultuous torrent of the Cultural Revolution. For instance, they joined the Red Guards wearing black-letter and yellow-letter armbands. Later, when it

was discovered that the “Black-letter” faction was a royalist organization, its members immediately joined the “Yellow-letter” rebel faction. Yet this harmony was short-lived; after the power struggle, factions

such as the “Good” and “Bad” groups emerged. Despite being merely a matter of belief and interpretation, they stubbornly refused to follow the

Central Committee ' s Sixteen Points on the Cultural Revolution—which mandated “ ideological struggle, not physical struggle ” —and instead engaged in violent conflict. Openly, it became a cycle of “ you fight me, I fight you,” escalating to the point where sons fought their parents and wives fought their husbands, with accusations flying like “ You are a bourgeois filial son and virtuous descendant ” or “ You are a reactionary.” Human relationships and ideologies were thrust into a white-hot struggle to draw clear class boundaries, guard against revisionism, and resolve the “ cycle of history ” problem.

It can be said that these young revolutionaries, in defense of Mao Zedong Thought and the revolutionary line, suffered greatly—some died, some were injured, and some were imprisoned. Yet, one by one, they

responded to the government' s call and actively participated in the “ Send Youth to the Countryside ” movement, settling in the most arduous,

impoverished, and backward rural areas and frontier regions across the country. In the vast expanse of the countryside, they not only covered themselves in mud but also inspired their parents, relatives, and friends to join the effort to transform the impoverished and backward rural landscape. They provided technical expertise, equipment, and business know-how to help local rural collectives and enterprises develop their collective economies and public welfare projects. They also brought a vibrant momentum of development to these impoverished and backward rural



areas. Moreover, the educated youth introduced urban goods, food, and positive cultural influences to farmers and local cadres. As a result, the political status of farmers was significantly elevated, and their spiritual lives were greatly inspired and enriched. This helped narrow the gap between urban and rural areas, as well as between workers and farmers. The living conditions and spiritual outlook of farmers were greatly improved.

A nationwide movement to "Learn from Dazhai in Agriculture" and to vigorously establish commune and team enterprises took off with great

fanfare, making a significant initial contribution to China's future economic takeoff and technological modernization. Otherwise, the Four Modernizations would not have developed so rapidly today. Therefore,

China's experience is difficult for foreigners to replicate.

Moreover, these young educated youth leaders did not seek official positions to bring glory to their families.

Today, those young students and former educated youth stride forward with heads held high, serving as the backbone of the great cause of the Four Modernizations. They have achieved remarkable accomplishments in all walks of life, ushering China into the most prosperous and powerful era in its history. Moreover, over the past 70 years, Chinese society has enjoyed unprecedented stability, the market has flourished, science and technology have advanced to the forefront of the modern world, and the people have truly become prosperous. Think carefully about these matters:

what kind of war or religious force in the world could match the revolutionary fervor in the hearts of China's current generation of youth? Their souls have been so deeply touched by the education of the Cultural

Revolution that they are wholly devoted to the Four Modernizations, striving to realize the great cause of China as soon as possible. Therefore, the transformation of people through cultural education is a great revolution.

This is history—the history of civilization—all reduced to a laughing matter.

Later, the normalization of Sino-Japanese diplomatic relations finally arrived, and Monk Jiānzhen returned to Dāmíng Temple in Yangzhou to visit his relatives. At that time, I wrote a few impromptu verses addressed to Zhao Puchu, President of the Buddhist Association of China, to be forwarded to the Japanese monk and senior priest. The verses read as follows:

Recognizing Kīn

My home by West Lake holds nothing,

Born in the ancestral lane since time immemorial.

My surname is not among the Hundred Family Surnames,

But are we kīn through the iron-willed lineage of Ling Mountain?

#### Transmission of the Record

The purpose was to engage in Buddhist cultural exchange with Japanese monks, to gauge their level of understanding of Buddhist teachings, and to showcase the rich depth of Chinese Buddhist culture. I hoped the Japanese monks would grasp the meaning of my "Record of Recognizing Kīn" and the significance of the previous poem, "Visiting Relatives." Yet I truly attained enlightenment through Zen practice with Venerable Xuexiang of Lingyan Mountain

in Suzhou. I recall that at the time, Venerable Xuexiang also read

several of my “Jizi” poems and, in praising Comrade Liu Shaoqi’s cultivation of truth, goodness, and beauty, offered the following commentary:

**Praise Cultivation**

Liu Bei won the world through benevolence and harmony,  
Rare sights and sounds cultivate the mind,  
Miraculous deeds endure as we press forward,  
Comrades all extol truth, goodness, and beauty.

He had opinions on several other poems; Master Xuexiang immediately took up his brush to comment. He believed the final line of one poem was universally harmonious, free and luminous, leaving a captivating trail. Regarding the last two lines of another poem—

“Recognizing the path of life and death, life and death are right before us” —he also offered his perspective, writing:

The true nature has never moved,  
Though clouds drift for thousands of miles,  
“Sitting at my grandfather’s home,

From where does the return home begin?” Upon reading this, I was startled. Venerable Xuexiang, with his great wisdom, was testing the depth of my disciples’ enlightenment. I did not reveal my true understanding, but instead engaged him in a dialogue, moving from the shallow to the deep, exchanging several poems to explore the true meaning of how to attain enlightenment. Therefore, I replied with a poem:

The true nature has never moved,  
Delusions fill the sky.  
Tang Seng sits in the hall of treasures,  
Wukong comes to seek refuge.’

Based on the account above, do you think I am the kind of idealistic, superstitious person people imagine me to be?

“I don’t understand this. Do Buddhism and Marxist science and

**culture have anything in common? Which holds the higher cultural ground?**

**"Buddhism teaches people to pursue life with a moral view that the four elements are empty, allowing believers to attain eternal life for their souls. It encourages people to do good deeds for others and society without regret until death, to realize a world**

**of universal harmony where doors remain unlocked by day and unbarred by night. Marxist theory, on the other hand, calls on people to dedicate their lives to the struggle for communism, ultimately eliminating the exploitation and oppression of man by man. It urges people to embrace proletarian ideology and reject feudal superstitions, atheism, or the notion of a "soulless" existence. Philosophically, while the two share common ground—to put it plainly, "leaving doors unlocked by day and unbolted by night" is akin to "no exploitation, no oppression" — "emptiness" and "nothingness" are essentially synonyms describing a state of being.**

**It is not a matter of whose culture holds the moral high ground, but rather a difference in methods of educating people. For instance, while the immortality of the soul is a metaphysical concept, it first gives believers a sense of spiritual peace and security. In their daily lives, they may indeed experience fewer serious illnesses and other benefits. That is why religious believers always set aside some of their savings—at least during the three major festivals each year—to purchase superstitious items like incense or joss paper. By secretly paying respects to Buddha and their ancestors, they relieve their mental stress. They also set a good example of filial piety for their children, making the small expense well worth it.**

**We can calculate the economic impact of these festivals. For example, if each household spends an average of about 600 yuan annually on the three major festivals—purchasing fine food, wine,**

incense, and joss paper—and assuming there are just 200 million households in China, the total annual expenditure on these items would generate sales of industrial and agricultural products worth over 200 billion yuan. This also addresses employment and livelihood issues for hundreds of thousands of impoverished or uneducated people in remote areas. It also serves as a form of free political and ideological education for the nation. Think about this charitable act: is it good or bad for society and for individuals? Is it merely the superstition of our ancestors?

Mr. Sun, I understand your point of view a bit better now. But I'm not sure if your story is true or not. It's not hard for a person to do a good deed once in a while; the real challenge is doing good deeds for a lifetime.

"Hey, Cao Xueqin wrote that thick volume *\*Dream of the Red Chamber\**, which is all veiled accounts of real people and real events—not the 'fabricated tales' that avoid politics. I, Sun Wukong, am a cut above them. Just look—every adult and child knows that this Old Sun is most famous for the 'Seventy-Two Transformations' in the realm of politics."

"Boss, why am I not as lucky as you? I've spent decades working tirelessly on scientific research. Although I haven't succeeded

in building a perpetual motion machine yet, I've privately funded the construction of elementary schools, invented a model, and used that model to reason my way through writing *\*The Moon Doctor\**—a novel that's new, strange, and true, far beyond my own educational background and work environment. It's already been published. Whether in its title or content, it reveals many new things. To quote Engels' words when he eulogized Marx: A person who makes one invention or discovery in a lifetime is a remarkable person. Yet

I haven't become famous, and no wealthy or powerful people have shown interest in or funded my work on the perpetual motion machine.

"Science nerd, don't overthink it—you must focus earnestly

on your research. Just as I have never wavered in my commitment to serving society and the people, you must also conduct a scientific assessment of your own talents.

1. Do not assume you possess some production skills and practical experience;
2. Don't assume you have a rich imagination or a certain capacity for association;
3. Don't assume you've read a lot of popular science books;
4. Do not assume you possess innovative thinking;
5. Don't assume you possess decent writing skills. Having one or two specialties or one or two inventions is merely the basic prerequisite for participating in scientific innovation and invention. Inventing a perpetual motion machine is far from sufficient. You must also resolve the following fundamental questions to bring your concept to fruition:
  1. What exactly is the material basis of the primordial celestial bodies? What are their physical properties?
  2. What are the specific relationships between celestial bodies?
  3. What are the relatively unified laws within the family of celestial bodies? What are the underlying principles and mechanisms?
  4. How exactly do celestial bodies evolve?
  5. How are celestial bodies distributed throughout the universe? Is it chaotic or orderly? What kind of order is it?
  6. When deconstructing cosmic astrophysics, where should one begin? What is the primary contradiction? What is the key breakthrough? If you fail to resolve these fundamental questions, no matter how much some people may praise you—granting you much vanity—it is nothing more than fleeting, superficial hype. And your life will amount to nothing more than a pursuit of such fleeting hype; the reality is that harsh. Please forgive my

bluntness, for I am not one to flatter; I am the child in 'The Emperor's New Clothes'. I am simply accustomed to speaking the truth; for I believe that if you intend to establish a new theory of astrophysics to resolve a series of fundamental questions regarding the origin and evolution of celestial bodies, your cultural and philosophical thinking falls far short.

I know that until you reach the point where you feel you can no longer continue, you will never give up or be persuaded to stop. Moreover, your goal in achieving success is akin to Nobel's dedication to science—he remained unmarried his entire life. In his final will, he bequeathed all funds from his research achievements to be awarded to anyone, regardless of wealth, whether in the natural or social sciences, and whether a citizen of his own country or a foreigner. Anyone with outstanding achievements in science could receive his prize—such was the nobility of his character. But reaching this level of success requires paying a heavy price and is incredibly difficult. You must also understand that those who value reputation more than profit can be even more hurtful.

Today, some people have amassed considerable wealth and, out of a sense of moral superiority, look down on you independent researchers. Some even seek to eradicate independent research

entirely. Think about it: in China, aren't both government-funded and independent researchers working for the nation? Yet simply because their achievements aren't as "impressive" as those of the former, they deserve to be shunned by society. Is that fair?

Therefore, you must be even more cautious. In China, some people do not take pride in embracing the new, but rather in clinging to the old, knowing a lot of trivia, or even fawning over foreign cultures. This inevitably leads to the tragedy of many innovators and inventors. You must work hard on your own and determine whether you possess the intellectual capacity required

for scientific work.

First, for example, subscribe to a scientific journal or a review of scientific culture. Although the price is high, it is convenient to read and ten times more effective than e-books or online articles. For instance, reading such publications helps build a more magnificent edifice—like a reinforced concrete continuous-frame structure—for new scientific fields such as philosophy, physics, and astronomy. Can you, with only a primary school education, understand it, read the articles fluently, or even write your own commentary? Second, do you possess foresight? For instance, during a U.S. presidential campaign, can you analyze the available information to predict who is most likely to become the next president? If you demonstrate these two abilities, then you should give it a try.

At this point, you must read widely and first learn computer skills—such as online research, online submission, formatting according to editorial standards, and creating diagrams. This will make your future research work effortless and save you both time and money. Don't fantasize about hiring college students or other so-called intellectuals to do this for you. Some of today's educated elites are ideologically backward and intellectually

impoverished. They don't even understand what science is, yet they criticize others for "pseudoscience" —all while receiving salaries ten or a hundred times higher than yours, bestowed upon them by the government, and basking in endless glory.

In fact, the Chinese pictographic character “科” (kē) tells us this: our ancestors invented this character to show that adding

“earth” or “water” to the “grain” radical does not constitute “science.” Only when the “grain” radical is combined with “measure” does it become “science.” It signifies edible food that requires specific methods of consumption and standardized quantities. Otherwise, it could lead to fatal



consequences.

Therefore, relatively speaking, irregularity, asymmetry, non-uniformity, and irrational layout constitute the scientific view of cosmic development. A small number of men and women working together makes the work less tiring. By assisting a minority of the poor, the wealthy will have someone to serve them in their old age, sickness, and death. Agriculture, forestry, animal husbandry, subsidiary industries, and fisheries—prioritizing which sector to develop based on the urgency and importance of different periods—this is the scientific view of development.

Just as the ancient poem says, “With a hundred thousand strings of cash around my waist, I ride a crane to Yangzhou”

—Yangzhou is a culturally prosperous ancient city with many scenic spots and historical sites, and it is also known for its beautiful women, making it well worth a visit.

Therefore, there are very few new thinkers like Xiong Chengkun and Liu Liangjun, who have written works such as *\*An Introduction to the Physics of the Taiji Particle\**, or Researcher Wang Dekui, author of *\*A Brief History of Quantum Gravity Research\** on the three-spin motion. Even among those who are capable, very few are willing to speak up for the people of the folk science community or consider their interests, as did Chen Yiwu, a British-Chinese advisor to the Academy of Sciences. Moreover, in his letter to the Chinese Scientists Forum (August 2005), Advisor Chen Yiwu pointed out that many people have not yet keenly realized: many fields of global science and technology are on the eve of a great storm of scientific and technological revolution that will bring about major innovations in existing fundamental theories. In this storm of scientific and technological revolution, whichever country is the first to ignite it will be the first to benefit; whichever universities demonstrate sufficient sensitivity to this will be able to prepare and reap the rewards. Conversely, those

universities that remain oblivious to this may fall behind. To date, no one has paid attention or believed in this; everyone is looking out only for themselves.

Zheng Lie, a retired professor from Chang'an University and currently CEO of Xi'an Dahua High-Tech Co., Ltd. as well as Director of the Institute for the Synthesis of Scientific Innovation in China, saw the papers and advertisements for perpetual motion machines on the Sanfeng Studio website. Sensing the potential for collaboration, he immediately wired

a payment to purchase the book *\*Taiji Speaks to the World\** and its accompanying CD, expressing his willingness to produce a perpetual motion machine. Even Chairman Yin, Plant Manager Xu, and Mr. Wu of the Yangzhou Steel Pipe General Plant, along with Manager Yin ( , ), have repeatedly provided steel materials and accepted copies of *\*The Moon Doctor\**, while General Manager Sun of the Yangzhou Steel Rolling General Plant has offered comprehensive assistance with both personal and professional matters. Private individuals, such as General Manager Jia from Yiling Town, Jiangdu, and his entire family—including relatives of all ages—have also provided wholehearted support on multiple occasions. Though these efforts are but a drop in the bucket, they have alleviated immediate hardships and offered vital moral encouragement. However, you cannot keep relying on others for help. In the future, your research will become even more arduous, and your life even more difficult. When you face unbearable hunger, you must no longer use your own body as a test subject, nor eat rotten, moldy, or toxic food discarded by others, all to uncover the causes of cancer and develop preventive knowledge to contribute to humanity.

You must also come to know yourself. Based on your limited insights, you have discovered that both modern physics and philosophy are flawed and prone to misleading students. You cannot

change what teachers currently teach their students—such as the primacy of matter or the primacy of spirit, or the objective existence of time, space, and matter as absolute entities that exist objectively in the universe at every moment of every day. Time, space, and matter are mutually inclusive and form a single entity; they have no beginning, no end, no boundaries, are neither born nor perish, and exist objectively forever; they constitute a fundamental system of laws governing non-arising and non-ceasing movement and evolution.

The fact is that some teachers, while aware that these views are problematic, find it inconvenient to challenge the current scientific orthodoxy. They prefer to teach strictly according to the textbooks, unwilling to risk their own careers or future prospects.

It is often said that those who read widely are more enlightened. Therefore, first purchase books related to your invention; read them extensively and carefully, and discern from them what aligns with your imagination and what does not. By “correct” and “incorrect,” I mean whether the explanations in the books hold up logically. For example, does energy conservation hold true when in motion, and why do they spin?

Once these three conditions are met, translating the theoretical models in your imagination into practical reality is a difficult, complex, meticulous, lengthy, and even painful process.

No great inventor can predict exactly when they will succeed in creating a product, even if they recognize their own talent for invention. Therefore, seeking a mentor is less effective than consulting friends, and consulting friends is less effective than working on your own at home. At this stage, you must do everything possible to gain the consent and support of your family so that you can set up a personal laboratory at home and make long-term

plans for your invention. No organization or close friend can afford to support you through prolonged failure or assist you indefinitely in your inventive endeavors.

Of course, some family members may be ununderstanding and unsupportive. They would rather spend hundreds of thousands of yuan sending their children to university than allow them to spend a little money on popular science books to read in their spare time. Yet, when the children do so, they scold them—or even go so far as to publish letters in the newspaper criticizing the school for being reckless.

In this world, things often work out unexpectedly. It's better to raise a "good-for-nothing" than a "dullard." There are 360 trades, and every one has its master. You must realize that some children are suited for scientific research; forcing them to do what they dislike will yield no results and may even ruin their lives. Even if they graduate from college, without a broad knowledge base or social network, they may struggle to find work that utilizes their professional skills. They'll be mocked for having a college or graduate degree yet earning less than a delivery courier.

Moreover, if children read more popular science books and broaden their horizons—for instance, by learning that conception should not occur under adverse conditions to ensure healthy offspring—they'll be better equipped. At the same time, if they focus their minds on research, they'll shed the bad habits of gambling, eating, and partying, and even their temperaments will improve. Even if you spend 100,000 or 80,000 yuan on this, it's

still worth more than raising a puppy just for entertainment. Besides, if they're truly committed to research, they certainly won't just sit idly by and wait for failure—they're bound to achieve something worthwhile. Just look at me, Old Sun: I sought out a master to learn some real skills,

and they' ve come in handy ever since. Now, no one dares to bully me.

In fact, what people don' t realize is that scientists engaged in invention and innovation are, before they succeed, far less well-off and less deserving of sympathy than a beggar. Just look

at a beggar standing on the street every day: not only does he manage to fill his stomach, but after begging all day until nightfall, it' s not uncommon for him to happily pocket ten to twenty yuan after covering his expenses. He even sends the money home in full, bringing joy to his family.

In contrast, inventing a new product—even if some spend their entire lives striving for it—often requires countless sums of money and still may never come to fruition. Even if the new product does benefit people for a lifetime, the inventors themselves rarely earn even ten million yuan over their lifetimes. Moreover, if there is even the slightest problem with the product, the inventor may face legal liability, compensation claims, or even imprisonment or execution.

Research work is also impossible without money. They are always reluctant to spend on food, reluctant to spend on clothes, and even more reluctant to spend money on travel or leisure. They often face scornful glances and hear harsh words. People say that tailors are the "scissors of the household," while scientists are the "brains of the household." They often come up with many new ideas, but once put into practice, their hard-earned money and sweat only buy them ridicule and abuse. If they succeed, they' re scientists; if they fail, they' re just "fools" who' ve ruined the family.

Moreover, even their families and children suffer the consequences, and they are even bullied by unscrupulous people. For instance, some people specialize in turning others' suffering into jokes, saying things like, "He' s a lunatic and a fool,"

"His son will never amount to anything," or "The country is wasting money and resources on these researchers," using vulgar language that tramples on those engaged in scientific research—causing even greater emotional pain.

"The boss was absolutely right. Some people have no talent for doing the hard work, but they sure have a knack for watching others do it. They'd say to my face, 'Look at you—what good are you?'

'By the time you win the Nobel Prize, you'll be old and frail; that prize money won't mean anything to your life—you might as well give it back to God. Besides, even converted to RMB, that prize

is only about ten million—not exactly a fortune. A talented person earning thirty or forty thousand a year through hard work isn't

making much, but after thirty years, they'd have surpassed that prize amount. And just think how happy and successful they'd have been over those thirty years.

So to those who criticize or speak ill of them: without the efforts of scientists, modern products like cell phones and computers wouldn't exist to benefit our lives today. During their inventions—especially for amateur scientists—they endure immense mental and financial pressure. What drives them to continue their research? It's a humanitarian calling. How can anyone fail to understand, sympathize with, or support them? Don't just because you don't see immediate results, rush to condemn them and forbid them from continuing their research.

You must understand that he or she is even more anxious and in great distress than you are. But scientific success cannot be rushed. Regardless of the circumstances, if they are your family or friends, you should show more understanding and tolerance. You should even do your best to provide logistical support—such as taking care of their daily needs, doing their laundry, or helping them research materials—so they can focus their energy on

producing results as soon as possible. It's not enough to simply "beat a child into filial piety"; you must nurture talent. Only then will they have the means to be more filial and bring honor to the family.

In reality, the actual costs of inventing—such as purchasing materials—are often minimal, sometimes requiring only half a month's salary. The main expenses come from setting up a lab and buying tools and equipment. Therefore, when building a lab, don't aim for grandeur or imported equipment; be frugal with your finances. You should learn to operate various instruments, tools, and equipment yourself, which will keep costs down. Whenever possible, build simple equipment and tools yourself. This way, even

a small lab can be practical, compact, and fully equipped, making your work more efficient. Moreover, this approach will save you even more money in the long run.

From start to finish, strive to develop design plans using lateral thinking, create multiple sets of drawings, and compare which design is more refined. Do not simply follow in the footsteps

of others' research paths. Doing so will slow down the production of results. Also, preserve every valuable failed component or piece

of data, as you may need these failed parts or data in the future.

Also, carry a marker pen with you to mark any issues you discover, so you won't forget them later.

If your budget allows, hire someone or find a technically skilled or like-minded partner to collaborate with. Otherwise, working alone is also feasible. For physically demanding tasks or particularly difficult work, hire help for a few days or outsource the work. Although labor costs may be high, in the long run, this is much cheaper than hiring a full-time assistant. Plus, it avoids interpersonal conflicts. During production and testing, try to first sketch out physical models on paper or a computer. Later, use cardboard or wood to create mock-ups that resemble the original

parts, then assemble them piece by piece to test their suitability. If they work, proceed to make the actual parts from materials like iron or plastic. This approach saves labor, effort, and money, and can speed up the process so that a particular part is completed sooner.

When building physical prototypes, you must strictly observe all safety protocols, including the safe use of electrical and mechanical equipment, as well as the handling of oxygen, ethane, and natural gas. At the same time, take care of your own health. In daily life, do not prioritize fine dining or expensive clothing; instead, cut back on expenses wherever possible. If you find yourself stuck in the invention process for an extended period, never assume that friends will help you or lend you money to continue. Some people care only about money and not about people; they may even take advantage of your situation. They might cite issues like hazardous materials, environmental protection, or disturbances to public rest, or even use national laws or the media to create a public outcry—without clarifying who is responsible or who should bear the blame.

When faced with such situations, you must remain calm and avoid arguing. If compensation is required, you must secure it—even if it means taking out a high-interest loan. Pleading for mercy is useless; instead, handle the matter tactfully to avoid offending anyone. At this point, you must be as humble as possible to resolve the issue. Do not let difficulties intimidate you into abandoning your research.

From time to time, talented friends may approach you to discuss your invention. During the early stages of development, you should exchange ideas with them—even showing them photos of your prototype and explaining your insights and the working principles. Ask for their feedback so you can determine whether their analysis of your preliminary design and its operational



principles is accurate, or if your design is sound. However, you must never argue with friends; simply ask them to share their views directly. Otherwise, they won't voice their differing opinions, and you'll miss out on new insights or valuable feedback.

When your invention reaches the later stages, or when it has been developed but the patent certificate has not yet been approved, you must be wary of those talented friends. In reality, most of them are professionals who have failed in their own inventions and are here to deceive you into revealing your key technologies. For example, someone might promise to pay you tens of thousands of yuan for trial production of a series of prototypes—or even offer to buy out your patent for 100 million yuan—if you can explain the machine's operating principle convincingly enough. They'll use such lies to gradually swindle you out of your core technology or the actual machine. Or, if you email them the contents of your patent application, they'll agree to sign a contract and make a payment. But once they've obtained the machine—or even just a few key technical details—they'll likely never contact you again. Your core technology—or even a single idea—may have taken you three or four decades of relentless work to develop, yet they can return home and improve their failed machines without spending a single penny.

Some are even more cunning, specifically targeting your core technologies—such as the use of a single-phase bearing in the flywheel center, which is an absolutely flawed approach for energy efficiency—or promising to pay for the production of a series of prototypes only after the patent certificate is issued. These are all lies. In the later stages of a successful project, you must remain vigilant against others.

Once you've confirmed the correctness of your machine's design, you must not contact anyone else or allow any conventional forces to sway your resolve. You must possess a spirit of dedication

and press forward with unwavering determination.

Or, when you have endured repeated failures, you may take a brief break. During this time, draw inspiration from books or observations of nature, combine it with the empirical data you have accumulated, and then proceed to design new components or further study and improve existing ones. Once you have developed a model or dimensional data for the new component, and your physical condition has returned to its best state, you may resume your work.

Do not delude yourself into thinking that every improvement to a part will guarantee immediate success. You must learn from repeated failures, cultivate unwavering perseverance, observe closely, think critically, and engage in silent, long-term practice—all while investing everything you have. Only then will you be guided step by step toward the hall of truth and achieve ultimate success.

Keep a notebook and pen by your bedside. Every night, especially after 10 p.m. when your creativity is at its peak, jot down or sketch any new models or ideas that come to mind. Inspiration is fleeting; if you don't capture it then, you may never recall it the next day, or even in your lifetime.

Furthermore, when engaging in invention and innovation, one must maintain a clear mind. Under no circumstances should one resort to the exorbitant methods used in large-scale particle colliders to search for new particles—such as the massive costs involved—to solve the naïve question of how the universe originated at the moment of its creation. Every penny you have is hard-earned money. It's not like losing a son in battle—you wouldn't feel the pain. Moreover, the random nature of the forces generated after each collision in a particle accelerator yields results as meaningless as rolling dice; they hold little practical value. At the same time, you must understand that inventing a major new product—such as an eccentric vortex engine, which is

essentially a perpetual motion machine requiring no external energy—is a challenge that has been pursued for over six hundred years. Nearly ten million brilliant minds have stumbled at its feet, none rising again. In 1775, the Royal Academy of Sciences in Paris made a decision: it would no longer review any issues related to the cube of a square, the third of an angle, the area of a circle, or perpetual motion machines.

Moreover, your invention consists of at least dozens of models and dozens of parts. Each model requires roughly 100 major failures, and the cycle for a single major failure takes at least 4 to 6 months. This is because, within each major failure, every part requires dozens of minor failures to be perfected. And each part takes at least a few hours, or at most several days, months, or even years—or even decades—to perfect. Just as in agriculture, when developing new high-yield crop varieties, it takes a growing season—6 to 12 months—to see the first results. You’ve only experienced 60 major failures so far; you still have over 40 more to go, which means another ten or even twenty years. With such a long timeframe, how can you expect others to understand or wait for your success? Not to mention that you lack funds, physical stamina, sufficient time, and a proper laboratory—all of which

prevent you from focusing your thoughts. And since you’re working alone, the process will take even longer.”

“Boss, according to your calculations, it will take about fifty years. I simply cannot endure such a long time. My brain condition

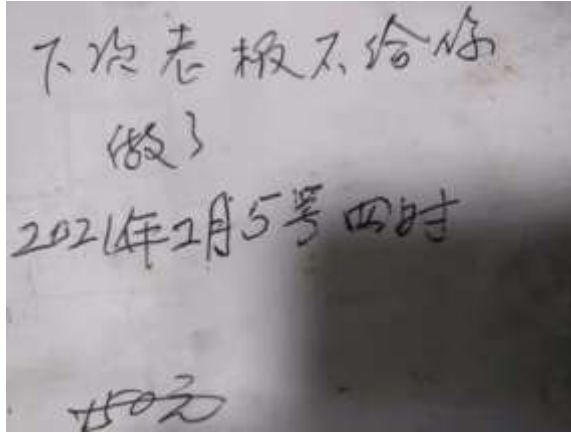
has worsened; most of the time I’m bedridden and unable to work. Even managing to work for two or three hours requires immense willpower and a sense of duty—and sometimes I can’t even manage that. Moreover, my eyes have been damaged by prolonged exposure to welding UV rays, and my ears have been affected by noise and malnutrition—they’re both in poor condition. Doing anything is extremely difficult. You’re a man of influence—please put in a

good word for me before God and find a way to help me succeed sooner. Even if I were to vanish from this earth tomorrow, my heart broken and my eyes closed, my spirit has truly reached the point of total collapse.”

“Science nerd, that’s not a long time at all. The man who invented the steam engine actually spent thirty years modifying someone else’s steam turbine before he succeeded. It’s because the greater the hardships and limitations you face, the more your thinking evolves to a higher level, helping you take another step toward success.” You learned blacksmithing from your father at the age of thirteen, and later taught yourself sheet metal work, electric welding and gas cutting, lathe operation, planer operation, milling machine operation, and drafting—enough to tackle inventions on your own. Look at others who pursue inventions—they have money, time, and laboratories, and even receive state support. Yet for decades, you have funded your work entirely on your own, to the point of utter financial ruin. Your monthly disability pension at the end of 2009 was a mere 435 yuan—less than the 1,000-plus yuan earned by an ordinary worker. You had no health insurance and relied solely on your mother’s meager pension to continue your inventions. Although your mother couldn’t persuade you to stop, she understood and supported your dedication to this global cause. She gave you some of her retirement savings to help you continue, and the Second National Conference

of Amateur Scientists arranged for your research story to be featured on Yangzhou Television. They filmed your journey, your perpetual motion machine testing site, and the models, which were broadcast on Yangzhou TV Channel 2’s “Green Yang Tea House” program. Yet none of this changed the fact that you had nothing. Sometimes you even run up a tab with the female owner at the Tianyuan Copy Shop for photocopying fees. You ask yourself, “Isn’t that pathetic?”

Additionally, the owner of the WeChat account “Houde Zaiwu” in Yangzhou said that although the 30 small axles are 12 mm in diameter and 6 cm long, the cost for this small job is 150 yuan.



Though I understand many of your difficulties, that backdoor cannot be opened—and indeed, it cannot be forced open. It's like a woman giving birth: the pain in her abdomen is unbearable, yet

she cannot skip even a single contraction. Some women don't realize that giving birth is the happiest moment in a woman's life. It breaks the law of conservation of energy, and from then on, she becomes a great and glorious mother. They don't know that this

is precisely the time to conserve energy and persevere, so that when the real labor contractions begin, she'll have the strength to go with the flow and give birth to the child with a single, overwhelming surge of energy.

Moreover, as her due date approaches, her face will show a reddish-purple glow at the “gate of life,” her eyes will sparkle, a white light will emanate from her ears, and her voice will be loud and clear. Especially if, on the day of delivery, her face or the palm of her right hand shows no ominous signs such as a dark blue or yellowish-green glow, she generally won't experience a difficult labor. Yet as soon as she felt a slight

abdominal pain, she started screaming and even cursing wildly. Even when her mother-in-law spent nearly twenty days steaming longan meat with soybean oil over the rice pot and urged her to eat some—knowing it would calm her nerves and make her feel better—she refused. Instead, she immediately called for a C-section, claiming she couldn't bear it anymore. The doctor at that hospital was a fool—he turned down a sure profit. She ended up spending over 2,000 yuan of her hard-earned money and underwent an unnecessary surgery. What a tragedy! Not only did she suffer abdominal pain for several extra days, but she also left a lasting regret for both her child and herself.

The more desperate and hopeless the situation seems, the more you must persevere. Just like soldiers on the battlefield, it is only through a spirit of self-sacrifice that you will find a bright new path ahead. In short, the dream you've chosen for yourself can only be realized by you. You must endure the blows of repeated failure, possess the resolve to endure all the hardships of the world, and the spirit of self-sacrifice. Never give up halfway—only through complete failure can you avoid giving up prematurely. In the end, God will not forsake you; He will surely grant you a bountiful reward.

If I had refused to undergo the Buddha's five-hundred-year transformation, or if I had abandoned my faith back then, there would be no Sun Wukong today.

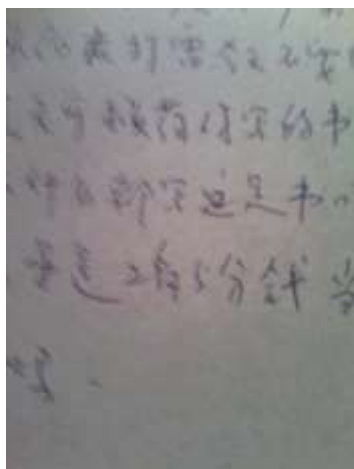
But a journey of a thousand miles begins with a single step. First, you must prepare yourself mentally in two ways: you must abandon the fantasy of striking it rich and becoming world-famous through inventing new products—unless it's a trivial invention or minor modification that's worth next to nothing, and even then, you'd need a stroke of luck to make any money. Otherwise, you're just daydreaming—it's wishful thinking. You must excel at your day job to earn some money, or strive to apply

for national grants. Applying for national grants is no easy task. Writing a grant proposal is a technical skill that requires hiring an expert, which costs several thousand yuan. Other expenses can run up to 20,000 to 30,000 yuan. Even if you secure the grant, after toiling for several years, you may still end up failing. You could face accountability, or even be sentenced to several years in prison.

You could also take the knowledge you've accumulated over time and, when you're feeling down or frustrated, start writing a paper or a book to keep your life from feeling empty.

Of course, writing a book is no simple task either. When I first started learning to write, I sought guidance from highly skilled mentors.

Moreover, the Chinese publishing industry is full of shrewd operators;



all the intermediaries will try to sign a publishing contract with you. For instance, regarding the publication of \*New

Highlights in Natural Sciences\*, upon signing this agreement, Party A shall pay a deposit for agency services (in words: 5,000 yuan) on the day of signing.

Party B shall complete the preparatory work after Party A pays the deposit, and shall deliver the manuscript—including the reviewed, proofread, typeset, and designed text and cover—to Party A; Party A Proofread and revised manuscript After organizing and finalizing the

manuscript, send it to Party B for inspection. The manuscript undergoes three rounds of proofreading and revision, then is sent to to apply for an ISBN at the Copyright Bureau . Party A must pay the remaining balance (in words: 5,000 yuan) before submitting the application to the Copyright Bureau. The balance is to be paid in full once the ISBN is approved.

In reality, Party B did not apply for the ISBN until more than two months after Party A had paid the full publication fee. At this point, the author assumed that since a contract had been signed, payment was inevitable, so they transferred the funds, effectively putting all the risk on the agency. However, since Party B operates out of Beijing, the author was unable to negotiate face-to-face. Party B provided only one proof copy, and the manuscript could not be altered in any way. Party A repeatedly requested online that Party B provide a proof copy that

could be edited, but Party B ignored Party A's messages. Party A was forced to hire a copy shop at Yangzhou University to correct a few repeated sentences in one section before resending it to Party B. Party A hopes the book, scheduled for publication before the Spring Festival, will be sent to them.

Party B also stated, "Our company's business is to publish your book within 6 to 12 months, then distribute, promote, and sell it to make a profit; we do not engage in any other business activities. We



handle the printing and sales of the book, so you don't need to worry about it. We use an online pre-sale model, where we print the books after receiving payment from readers, so you don't need to invest in printing costs."

The publisher holds a legitimate national ISBN number,

Suddenly, eight months later, a message arrived on WeChat from someone claiming to be

@Mr. Sun, I am Editor-in-Chief Wang from the Market Planning and Distribution Department, and this is Editor-in-Chief Li from the

same department. We are here to inform you that Party A's book is about to be published, and we now need to provide market planning and marketing services. I have added our marketing staff to this group chat for you to communicate with them.

@Teacher, your work has been selected by a national-level institution. We plan to appoint you as a National Specially Appointed Writer and issue a National Writer Appointment Certificate, and we will promote your work nationwide.

With this nationally issued Specially Appointed Writer Certificate, we can vigorously promote your work. Backed by a national institution, we will promote it to departments across the country.

Our work is about to be published, and we now need to conduct marketing and promotion. This is a dream achievement for everyone,

and it will greatly enhance the value and returns for us in the long run.

Take a look at this video promoted by a national institution—it already has over 27 million views. That 's just from a single video; we aim to reach 330 million views. Without the endorsement and support of a

national institution, it would be difficult to achieve such results or meet future sales targets.

[Video]

[Image] @Mr. Sun [Mini Program] You have a payment receipt for 10,000 yuan  
Only then did I realize they were asking for money again. The

ISBN from the Copyright Bureau hadn' t even arrived yet, and now they' re asking for 10,000 yuan in publication and promotion fees. The author was only willing to transfer 5,000 yuan upfront.

They offered to appoint me as a "Nationally Designated Writer" and issue a "National Writer Appointment Certificate," but it never arrived even after six months. They kept demanding sample copies for

a whole year. Only after a year did the sample copies arrive—they

hadn' t changed a single word from the original manuscript—and they used a U.S. ISBN, making the book ineligible for domestic bookstores and schools. To this day, not a single book has sold, and they' ve even

deleted and closed the WeChat chat history.

Only then did I realize that these intermediaries do not publish books in accordance with the contract. As shown on Baidu, a certain publishing house has defrauded the elderly out of over 1.2 million yuan in publishing fees, attracting the attention of public security authorities. The publishing house was subsequently prosecuted by the

procuratorate and sentenced by the court.

Publishing papers is also a never-ending struggle. People in China's academic circles are far too shrewd. For a paper I wrote in China on the theory of unified fields, I hired a total of nine translators. The second one told me the translation was inaccurate, so I revised the wording. I paid over 11,000 yuan in translation fees, yet not a single English translator was able to register my author profile on the online version of \*Nature\* in the UK. Eventually, it was Ma Hongbao, Editor-in-Chief of the U.S. journals \*Nature\* and \*Science\*, who accepted my paper on the Unified Field Theory for publication in the \*New York Journal of Science\*.

At the same time, Master Xie, a publisher from Shaanxi, signed a publishing contract and received the full advance, yet he acted unprofessionally and failed to fulfill the contract. The books were shipped in loose bundles, were not in color, used font sizes smaller than 5-point type, and were printed on thin paper. When I tried to contact him again, his phone was already turned off. Additionally, Shandong Youth Literature and Art Publishing House published \*The Lunar Doctor\*, and although the editor-in-chief posted it online, not a single copy was sent, and the manuscript was not proofread. Furthermore, the Nanjing Yuhuatai Court ruled that Nanjing Xiangxi Culture Communication Co., Ltd. must refund

11,650 yuan for \*The Lunar Doctor\*, published by "Beijing Art and Science Electronic Publishing House," yet not a single penny has been returned to date. Legal fees and travel expenses for the lawsuit have already cost over

2,000 yuan.

Even those who have obtained national and international patent certificates face a grim reality—endless unjust expenses. They

are first fleeced by various parties, because intellectual property rights are not the same as copyrights! Intellectual property rights can be used to apply for an “Innovative Technology Certificate.”

Copyrights can also be applied for, but one must first possess an

intellectual property certificate. After obtaining a copyright certificate, one can then apply to the Provincial Department of Science and

Technology for a “Certificate of Scientific and Technological Innovation Achievements.”

However, lawyers demand an upfront fee of 5,500 yuan just to accept the case. Everything else—such as drafting the invention patent application and creating computer-aided drawings—incurs additional costs ranging from 500 to 1,200 yuan. [I was taken advantage of because I didn’t understand the industry practices.] Patent attorneys can also help you revise the application, but they might even submit it to the Patent Office with a single character error they made. If the patent is rejected, you must pay another 4,500 yuan to reapply—the lawyer claims this is the “national standard fee.” The only alternative is to abandon the patent application altogether.

In another case, someone applied for numerous invention patents but was granted only eight; the rest were all rejected! Upon review, it was discovered that they hadn’t made any revisions to the patent applications at all—they simply uploaded the applicant’s drafts as-is. For instance, regarding the steam

turbine application, they simply changed the title of a water turbine patent—but the content and drawings were all from the water turbine. Meanwhile, the drawings they created for the steam turbine were swapped out and given to some unknown entity! When I tried to contact them, none of them responded! (According to a government official, she was a programmer; I'm not sure exactly

how you contacted her back then. She hasn't been in touch since!)

This is the biggest loss!

It's very difficult to apply for patents now. Lawyers at patent firms are also bribed with large sums of money to hand over drawings. Therefore, when the State Intellectual Property Office

sees that you are an individual applicant, they will "reject your patent application on the grounds of an 'abnormal patent application' (citing lack of manufacturing capability, etc.) according to internal regulations." If you wish to appeal and reapply, you must pay another 4,500 yuan to the lawyer.

This rejection is related to the "Lantian Campaign" (I don't know the details, but it's connected to non-standard patent applications). A close friend told me this!

In other words, when applying for a patent, you must go through a legitimate agency. The one we used in the past was a fake front company. They've since disappeared!

There are also three other patents. The sales representative from his company helped me secure a patent for a "Pi Hu" product. I trusted him, but later he switched jobs. I paid him 16,500 yuan for three patent applications, and he gave me a fake patent application number to deceive me. When I realized something was

wrong (the patent application number he provided didn't match my company name), I tried to contact him, but he vanished. I can't reach him by phone or WeChat! I've been scammed yet again! What's more, for the patents that weren't approved, the lawyer refuses to return even a single penny of the money refunded by the Patent Office to

me.

From then on, I stopped applying for patents. I had eight granted, but no Chinese company was willing to take on the patented products for production. However, a foreign investor came to inspect

the technology and offered to wire \$2 million upfront. I didn't dare accept it, so I reported the matter to my superiors and provided them with all the information from our online communications. Later,

the State Security Bureau warned me that I was fortunate not to have engaged in a private transaction. Otherwise, leaking the core technology of the engine could have constituted a crime, and all my investments over the past few decades would have gone down the drain.

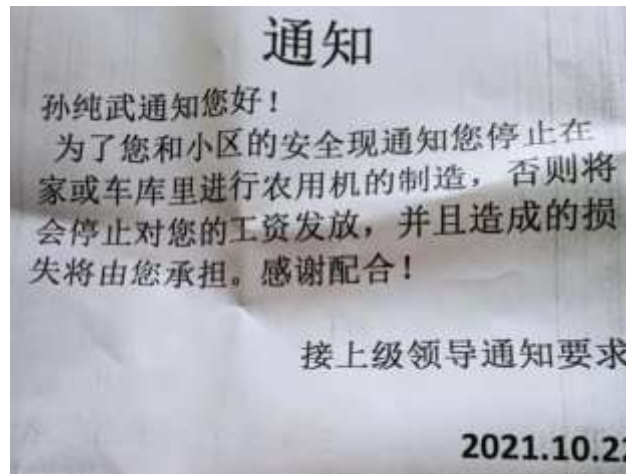
Another example is Mr. Huang from Yangzhou, who spent over thirty years developing the world's first fully functional fuel-saving device for engines. Yet for years, he has been unable to find a company willing to adopt it. Just the patent application fees alone cost 1,600 yuan, plus nearly 1,000 yuan for hiring someone to draft the application and create computer-aided design (CAD) drawings of the product. Annual patent renewal fees have totaled 8,000 yuan, and publication fees in patent journals run at a minimum of 600 yuan per page. With expenses piling up year after year—totaling over 30,000 yuan—not a single enterprise has been willing to take on production. Consequently, his family opposed his continued payment of patent fees. With no other options, he resorted to deceiving others, claiming that a high-ranking official had privately agreed to a patent licensing fee of over 10 million yuan, and promising to split the proceeds 50-50 with anyone who helped him pay the annual patent fees. Although some well-meaning people sympathized with his plight and helped him pay the annual patent fees, and despite intensifying advertising efforts—with his full-featured fuel-saving device production proposal receiving over 180,000 views on

www.haoyunjiu9.com 网站几个月 alone—not a single company ever actually discussed concrete production details with him.

The plight of some independent researchers is even more dire. They spend their own money, dedicating their entire lives to the front lines of scientific research—struggling to make ends meet and living in poverty. They push themselves to the brink of ruin, disregarding the risk of family breakdown and separation from loved ones, only to achieve scientific results that no one sympathizes with or supports for production. It amounts to digging their own graves—a lifetime of invention and creation in vain. Take the case of Huang Wei, a notorious "scientific criminal" who, after his release, remained unwilling to accept defeat and continued working on his perpetual motion machine. When his wife told him that their son had secured a job, he was so obsessed with the machine—and facing design flaws that prevented it from operating—that he was lost in thought, trying to find a solution. Thinking he hadn't heard her, she raised her voice and repeated the news in his ear. But Huang Wei had lost his rationality; he cursed at his wife, shouting, "Get out!" and went back to working on his perpetual motion machine.

Little did he know that someone had just informed him, "Your wife has jumped into the Beijing River and drowned. Hurry over there."

I'm telling you this, you science nerd, because reality is even more extreme and cruel than this. Some people are even arrested, sent to prison, or executed, bringing lifelong emotional suffering to them and their families—a pain that cannot be fully expressed in words. I'm not trying to scare you into never inventing or creating anything. You need to understand the complexity of society; serving the people does not mean serving you.



You should definitely not casually spend large sums of money on publishing books or papers. If you want to publish, go with Nature and Science in the U.S.—their publications are equally valid for domestic professional title evaluations. It only costs six or seven hundred yuan. Alternatively, submit to domestic journals with lower fees or publish on your personal blog just to unwind. You must have a second plan: first, do your day job well, work until you're financially secure, and ensure your family is happy and together before pursuing these endeavors—it's not too late then. "You see, even though I have great abilities, I still

haven't managed to escape the palm of the Buddha. This means that 'the rule of law'—or the entrenched forces in people's minds—are truly formidable. I've learned my lesson and dare not fabricate anything anymore. Today, I'll discuss a few things with you, blending truth and fiction, and offer some advice to help ease the loneliness and frustration in your heart." With that, Wukong turned his face inward and fell into a deep sleep.

After this revelation, Ke Dazi tossed and turned, unable to sleep. His thoughts wandered—one moment he'd think of his perpetual motion machine model, the next of his boss's words, then of how to repay his debts, and finally, especially, of his aging parents, who were often ill yet still worried about when his research would succeed, when he'd make a name for himself and strike it rich. Yet here I am, still struggling through hardship



and adversity. How can I possibly live up to their nurturing kindness and unwavering love? At times, I recalled those days when

I was so naïve and reckless—acting on a moment's impulse, making mistakes, and offending people, leaving me with so much guilt and emotional pain today. Suddenly, he shouted out:

"That's it! I'll combine the rod-rotation and vortex-rotation galaxy models. That way, I'll have a perpetual motion machine model with two central axes within an organic outer shell."

Wukong was startled awake by the shout. Seeing that Ke Daizi was still awake, he asked, "Why aren't you asleep yet? Are you missing your wife?"

"No, my wife is still living with her mother!" Ke Daizi replied with a pained expression. "How come you haven't gotten married yet? You're almost forty."

"That's right, I'm 39 this year. It's embarrassing to talk about this, but I can't lie—I've been on at least dozens of dates. Either I didn't fancy them, or they didn't fancy me. Later, as I got older, my mother grew very anxious. Plus, since I'm a researcher, I've spent all my money and have become a penniless scientist. I thought I'd settle for someone I'd liked in the past, but the girl still wouldn't agree. It's driving me crazy." "

"Oh my, my dear old man, what good does getting worked up do? Dating is a science, just like a chef cooking a meal—it's all about presentation, aroma, and taste. First, you need to project

a manly image, especially making a good first impression on her. That's crucial. Pay attention to your everyday speech, manners, and appearance. For example, if you're going on a date with her today or visiting your future mother-in-law for the first time, it's fine if you don't have money, but you absolutely must have appropriate clothes to wear—even even if you have to borrow one from someone, make sure it's a high-quality piece. You need

to dress and present yourself properly—don' t look sleazy or unkempt. A savvy girl could help you with your style. Looking like a plague-stricken ghost like you do now, forget about pretty, fashionable young ladies—even an old woman wouldn' t want you."

"Mr. Sun, you' re wrong. A true gentleman isn' t defined by his clothes."

"You' re such a bookworm. What century are you living in? People in this world judge others by their outward appearance. She hasn' t

even met you or spent time with you yet—how could she possibly know if you' re any good? First, she looks at your looks; second, she smells your scent. To put it more deeply, she' ll look to see if you have real talent and substance, if you' re sincere, enthusiastic, attentive, and considerate toward her, as well as what impression and reputation you have among those around you; secondly, she' ll see if you know how to handle a relationship. When dating, your mouth and your legs are the most important—people are emotional creatures, and one wrong word can ruin a successful marriage. You care about saving face—doesn' t the girl care about saving face too? If you constantly brag about

how many girlfriends you' ve had, claiming each one was better than her, or pressure her by saying, "If you don' t date me, I' ll date someone else," or demand that she bring you to her parents' house on a specific date—or that she visit your parents' house—and threaten to end the relationship if she doesn' t, using phrases like "You go your way, I' ll take my own narrow path" and other remarks that put her on the spot or wound her pride—how can you possibly have a relationship like that?"

"So, according to you, how exactly should one go about dating?"

"I say that when it comes to romance, the first step is to build genuine feelings so that both parties truly understand each

other—to the point where she' d follow you even if you were begging for food. Once she' s taken a liking to you, she' ll take the initiative to ask you to meet her parents, or she' ll ask you to bring her to your home to meet yours, without you even having to say a word.

If the match was arranged by a go-between, that person must understand both parties. The concept of 'equal match' doesn'

t mean the man' s family must be wealthy and the woman' s family must be wealthy too; rather, it means the couple' s interests, talents, family backgrounds, and lifestyles are fundamentally compatible. Their personalities should complement each other—generally, it' s like pairing a steamed bun with a sweet cake. If the woman has a strong personality, the man should be more gentle or well-mannered; otherwise, the couple will frequently argue and fight when conflicts arise, which is not good. When the matchmaker arranges a meeting for a specific date, pay close attention to the conversation during your first encounter. If you' re interested in her, you can talk about anything under the sun—as long as you' re articulate and make sense—but never lose sight of the theme of love. Use this opportunity to subtly showcase your true talents and abilities, captivating and winning over her heart with your compelling conversation from the very first moment. However, when many relatives and friends—especially her parents—are present, you must not simply talk endlessly. It is best to listen more and speak less, responding only when spoken to, and projecting an image of honesty and stability. Older people

may not be willing to listen patiently to a young person' s lengthy speeches for long. They may appreciate your talent, but they certainly do not appreciate empty boasting.

Therefore, when conversing with them, aside from agreeing with their views, you must never rashly contradict them. When discussing your own affairs, there must not be a shred of falsehood.

Remember: true intelligence does not lie in boasting about yourself, and refraining from discussing your own virtues will not lead others to believe you lack them. As for her mother, what she seeks in a son-in-law is honesty and reliability; she will not be overly demanding about other matters. After such a meeting, the matchmaker will likely ask how things went. You should have a clear plan: it's best not to rush things. Say you'd like to take things slowly first. If the girl has no objections, arrange to meet her

on a specific day at a specific place—a park or a movie theater would work well. You should take the initiative to give her tickets for seats where the two of you can sit together, either handing them to her directly or having someone else deliver them. In short, you must strike while the iron is hot. If she seems a bit reserved

or if things feel a bit awkward between you two, it's best to invite a close female friend of hers along at first. Take them all out together to shop, watch a movie, or grab a bite at a snack bar.

But you must maintain your warmth, sincerity, and honesty toward her. Once the two of you have become truly familiar and can converse freely, you can gradually transition to spending time just the two of you. However, you must not offend the friend who accompanied her, as you may need to ask her for favors in the future. As for your current situation, this girl won't talk to you; she hates you and calls you useless. Are you still trying to talk to her?" "No, she just won't talk to me." "That makes things easier. It means you haven't followed the principles of 'irregular synergy.' You haven't put in enough effort yet, so she doesn't have a strong impression of you. You need to expand your influence—let some of her close friends know that you love her. You also need to build a good reputation among her mother and friends, so that people will say, 'This young man is a good guy.' Sometimes a girl might hate you even more, curse at you, or even hit you, but you must keep your cool. Approach her with

integrity and win her over with the right mindset about relationships. Don't retaliate when she curses or hits you. This is a long-term battle—isolate her from her negative influences and offer her plenty of care and support when she's going through tough times. For instance, when she faces disasters, illness, or feels down; when she's being bullied or misunderstood; or when she disagrees with her parents—at these times, you must let her know that you'll never betray her and that you're a decent person. Showing her care through reason and compassion is most effective. However, some girls simply won't respond to this approach and may even make things more awkward for you. In such cases, don't let it weigh too heavily on your heart. If your marriage is meant to be, nothing can break it; even if it ultimately doesn't work out, it's no big deal. Don't act as if the sky has fallen—as if you can't go on living or face the world. There are plenty of good people in the world; just keep looking.

Before you've established a solid emotional bond with her, it's best to approach certain matters indirectly through people she trusts—using them to do some persuasion and pass on messages. In short, if your skills aren't up to par, make up for it with your attitude. As long as you persist over time, winning her over with greater tenderness, romance, and small financial gestures, even the most stubborn woman will eventually come around.

She'll inevitably change her mind and throw herself into your arms. You'll be a winner."

"What the boss said—once our expedition is over, we'll definitely give it a serious try when we get back."

"If you succeed, don't forget to invite me to your wedding banquet. If it doesn't work out, let me know—I'll act as the matchmaker. Just look at Chang'e, the celestial maiden; even she was swept off her feet by my words. How much more so for those earthly ladies—the graceful, virtuous wives and mothers who can

grace the parlor and manage the kitchen? Their standards are higher, the competition fiercer, and they all expect a prince charming. I have the skill to win her heart. If she 's not moved, I 'll thick-skinned as I am, beg her every day, making sure to leave a good impression each time. I 'll persist until I 've won her over to be your wife—or, if you 're like my buddy Zhu who can 't spin sweet nothings, just copy someone else 's romantic poetry, adapt it to your own situation, and use it to praise and win her heart. Mei, hello:

The Philosophy of Love

Spring water always flows into the river. Rivers flow into  
the sea,

and the gentle breeze of the heavens forever carries a sweet emotion.

What in this world is truly solitary?

For all things, by the laws of nature,  
must merge into a single spirit.

Why, then, are you and I so different?

Your deep eyes are a pair of stars,

shining with fiery brilliance, tender  
and crystalline,

capable of driving even the wisest mad.

The wind that stokes that fire is a thought born of affection,

whenever I see a comment online or on my phone, like a

whirlwind stirring the ocean 's waves, like morning breezes caressing dewdrops,  
like a bird hearing a warning.

I always spring into action or prepare a

meal to welcome your arrival,

for my heart, like all these things, senses that

your heart is near.

Mei, hello:

My longing is boundless, endless, The  
impression you left on me,  
is as if sculpted by a divine  
hand, keeping you forever in my heart,  
Only with you do my heart and soul truly blossom,  
I firmly believe that my efforts will surely  
bear fruit.

Dear Mei,

I offer you a heart that resonates with yours,  
When I first met you, I felt neither joy nor sorrow.  
And during the time we spent together, I never lost my composure.  
But when I learned from our chats  
how deeply your heart was hurting,  
and that your mother broke her leg but was  
turned away by the hospital for lack of funds,  
my heart could no longer remain at peace,  
and it pierced my very soul. I know  
how much I needed love and understanding when my heart was  
aching,

and the only one who showed me compassion was God, who gave me the  
wisdom and means to help.

Therefore, as a human being—and a  
man of integrity—  
and I have no choice but to do my best for you, to do whatever it  
takes for you.

Though I am exhausted from endless dedication to my research,  
my devotion to you now is truly romantic and

sincere,  
 from food to daily necessities, from  
 words of affection to financial support—I am never stingy,  
 and I'm accelerating my efforts to help  
 you lead the way, stand out, and set an example,  
 In the midst of all this, I often ask myself, Is this  
 friendship or love?

To make you happy, I'm certain I'll keep my word and never back  
 down.

For you, I would willingly step into the depths of  
 hell.

My pure heart has no other hope,  
 so that you may live a happy and peaceful life for  
 the rest of your days.  
 I offer you a heart that is in perfect harmony with  
 yours.

As I compose this poem for you,  
 the divine spirits of foresight did not silence me, and I myself do  
 not understand

where this inspiration came from, these  
 words of thought.

Is it friendship or love that stirs me so? I won't  
 dwell on it too much,

I offer this heartfelt tribute to bring you joy!  
 —18th

Dear Mei:

Please believe that when I understand,  
 sympathize with, and help someone,  
 means rejoicing in her happiness.



To do everything necessary to make her happier,  
 and to find joy solely in this act—such  
 a loyal  
 heart is the window to friendship or love,  
 A man's ultimate goal is not to control a woman; Only by  
 speaking one's mind and pouring out one's  
 heart can two hearts truly connect.  
 From now on, I will do more and do better to make you happy,  
 In short, when your mountain flowers are  
 in full bloom, I will smile among them.

Mei, hello:  
 Your husband's shouts, which have shaken  
 the mountains time and again,  
 have brought me boundless joy and an  
 even greater sense of responsibility.  
 I will devote myself wholeheartedly, at any cost,  
 to provide you with the love and understanding you  
 need, so that I may soothe the deep wounds in your heart. Even  
 if the heavens and earth were to turn upside  
 down, you are worth my understanding and devotion

more  
 own,

than any beautiful, wealthy woman,  
 Let the world condemn me as much as it will,  
 as long as you love me, I will gladly accept it all.  
 The love of the heart endures longer than  
 the eternal universe,  
 soaring higher than the palaces of space, An honest  
 heart—as deep as the ocean.  
 Wishing you happiness, good health, and great

wealth!

My heart is the banner of love, For it,  
two spirits struggle, from dawn until dusk,  
they wage a fierce battle.  
One spirit is clad in what seems like red, it is  
joyful hope.

One ghost seems to be dressed in black, that is  
melancholy despair.  
They are locked in a fierce struggle; I do not know, Which ghost  
will emerge victorious?  
Torn in two by the struggle.  
My heart is the banner of understanding, compassion, and love.

Dear Mei:  
If one pursues pleasure with single-minded devotion, he will only  
ruin a life of contentment;  
but if he waits for the right moment to pluck joy, he will  
forever dwell in the dawn's light.

If you seize the moment before it is ripe, you will  
surely shed tears of regret.  
But if you miss the moment of ripeness,  
endless sorrow will make you weep for the rest  
of your life.  
Though you do not give me the warmth and care that others do,  
as a scientist, I understand that  
you never chase after anything,  
I will never let you go; I ache for you, I love you,

and it is only by dedicating all my struggles and efforts  
I will strive to ensure you live a happy, prosperous life as soon  
as possible—only then will I be truly satisfied.

When a girl doesn't return his calls, doesn't reply to his messages,  
or won't be nice to him, this guy really has a knack for it—patient yet thoughtful.  
Even if the girl is completely wrong, he never says a single bad thing about her. Instead,  
he keeps posting, using the kindest and most sincere words and actions to persuade her  
to open her mind.

Mei, hello:

We once dreamed of a beautiful future,  
always helping, supporting, and loving one another. When you found  
out I was a penniless scientist,  
you suddenly changed your mind,  
that is your right and your happiness.

Whether you were wrong or I was wrong doesn't matter.  
True happiness lies only in finding a heart that will love you  
forever and a person who can help you forever.  
Otherwise, when disaster strikes,  
or when you're old and gray, it won't be worth living a life  
of hardship or spiritual emptiness. I am the one who will love you, care for you,  
and cherish you forever, so we should still be together and in love now.  
Of course, you may find happiness in the future, but

right now you've given me an answer that will make me cry until the next life. It's no surprise that people in society are so heartless after offering help, but is there anything in this world—in spirit or action—that can surpass the love we've shared? Is everything we've given truly worth it? We've been together for so long; you know my research needs, and since we've already developed feelings for each other, you should give me a satisfactory answer: "There is still true love in this world." Please don't let this beautiful time together leave you with memories of eternal pain.

Wishing you happiness, a fulfilling life, and good health!

—March 25

You see, even the most hard-hearted girl couldn't resist his relentless, persistent pursuit. But for a girl who doesn't understand life or emotions—one with a proud and aloof personality—if she doesn't want to talk to you, just let it go. Otherwise, married life might not be happy. As for you, though you're currently a penniless scientist—unpopular and

unloved—a girl who can read people's faces will see right through you at a glance. She'll know you're more down-to-earth than Zhu Bajie, with a promising future that will truly bring her happiness. Even a girl who values glory and prestige will realize she won't

end up like those fleeting pop stars or champion athletes who fade into obscurity. "Alright, leave the matchmaking to me. You just go ahead and get some rest—you've got a long journey ahead of you tomorrow." With that, Wukong rolled onto his side and fell asleep.

"Boss, that sleeping position isn't good for your heart."

"Oh, you never know with the world. Everyone has their own way

of staying healthy. People like us don't have good food or fine clothes. We don't even dare to sleep much—we work seventeen or eighteen hours a day, sometimes even thirty-plus hours straight. So I focus on three things every day. The first is how I sleep—what method allows every part of my body to get the most thorough and rapid rest, while also preventing and treating illness.

That's why I prefer this sleeping position. Every night before bed—and especially before my afternoon nap—I make sure the bed is clean. I try to sleep on my side without a pillow, with one hand resting on the pillow. Or, when sleeping face-down on the pillow, I slightly bend one leg. When lying face-down, I place a pillow beside my body, with one hand resting on it, or I might put a pillow under my feet for added comfort. First, clear your mind of distractions and mentally relax your entire body, especially the affected areas. This allows you to gradually expel dampness from your body, enabling rapid relaxation and rest for the central nervous system, cervical spine, lumbar spine, gastrointestinal tract, and heart—all within just 30 minutes or even up to two hours of sleep. Second, vigorously rub both ears with both hands about 10 to 20 times. Then, focus on key acupoints on the body—such as Shenshu (BL23), Huantiao (GB30), Zusanli (ST36), and Yongquan (KI1)—or any areas where you feel discomfort. Every night before bed, use your fingers to pinch, knead, or tap these points several dozen times, and jog in place about 10 to 20 times. Third, especially after eating sweets, immediately use a toothbrush to gently clean between your teeth. Also, avoid excessive exposure to cold. For decades, I have prevented and treated all kinds of illnesses by keeping my body and mind relaxed, creating a relaxed environment, and cultivating vitality to maintain my health. As a result, I have never suffered from headaches, toothaches, colds, or any other ailments.

"I'll give it a try, then." With that, Ke Daizi set his soft

shoulder bag beside him, rested one hand on it, and mimicked Wukong's posture, focusing his mind on relaxing the area around his navel. Breathing lightly and slowly, he soon fell asleep.

After all that commotion, Wukong tossed and turned, unable to sleep. He looked around; apart from Ke Daizi's snoring, everything was as silent as death. At this very moment, others were in warm beds under cozy blankets, cradling their children in their arms and kicking their wives with their feet, living in complete ease and comfort. Yet here we were—two men who valued knowledge, dedication, and doing things by the book—sleeping fully clothed on the ground in a bottomless abyss. Who could possibly understand? Who would sympathize? It was likely that this child's mother and relatives were weeping right now, worrying whether he would be safe and reunited with his family soon.

Wukong couldn't help but take off his tattered eight-treasure robe. Wiping away his tears, he gently draped it over Ke Daizi: "Ke Daizi, Ke Daizi, even if you were to win the Nobel Prize, according to atheism, the suffering, humiliation, and hardships you've endured in this life are simply too much—this life has been a waste."

Suddenly, Ke Daizi was startled awake. His body jerked violently, and he scrambled to his feet, saying, "Boss, I overslept. Let's go!" As he spoke, he walked forward and crashed headfirst into the stone wall.

"Where are you going? Do you know where we are?" Ke Daizi rubbed his head, looked around, and muttered to himself, "A man is made

of iron, and food is like steel, but three days without sleep turns even the toughest into a softie!" "Right, right. Ke Daizi isn't so 'dumb' anymore. We've been walking for so many days and covered such a short distance. You've got to come up with a way to get me moving."

"There is one way—to follow the lunar fissure. But I

wouldn' t dare let you go; it' s a bit dangerous." By the time he finished speaking, Ke Daizi was already standing at the mouth of the fissure, pointing at it and saying, "You go in right here. It' s the shortest and easiest route."

"Oh my, why didn' t you say so sooner? Are you afraid of dying? I heard that these days, thieves break into houses and specifically target old men and women who are too stingy to spend a few coins

on a vacation to clear their heads. I' m not afraid of dying—even now, people still say I should just die already. Come on, I know the way now. Let me lead the way up front, and you follow behind." " With that, Wukong got himself ready. Loaded down with all sorts

of odds and ends as if fleeing a famine, he walked ahead of Kedaï, singing as he went: "My brilliance won' t be held back by the world' s ways; this endless suffering—when will it end? When the flying catkins and falling flowers come, I long for home, I long for home—even if the Yangtze were all tears, they couldn' t wash away all this sorrow..."

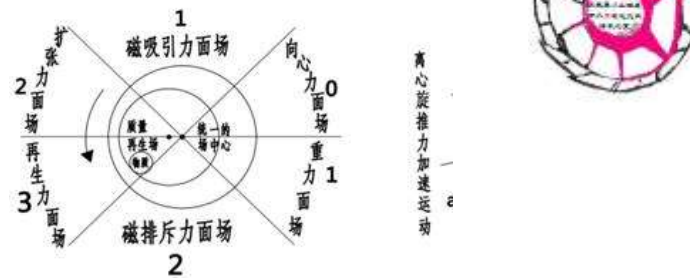
After finishing his song, Wukong shouted, "Kedaizi, sing a song too—lighten up and have some fun." He turned to look back and saw Kedaizi standing there as if observing something. "Kedaizi, you really are such a big kid. What' s there to look

at? Hurry up and walk." "Boss, wait a moment. Let me take a closer look. It seems that as we walk, the road is getting wider and wider,

and one side is constantly accelerating as it sags downward."

"That' s right, I' ve felt that too. Since two o' clock last night, one end of the lunar crust and mantle plates has been accelerating downward toward the Sun, and the active fissures between the plates are widening."

椭圆运动走势图 [见7]



"It is indeed true that the boundary between the two plates is a lunar seismic zone, just like on Earth. Due to the centripetal forces of the crustal plates constantly pushing and rubbing against the mantle plate, heat accumulates and the temperature rises. Additionally, the centrifugal forces generated by the core's movement cause friction and heat against the mantle, melting some rocks and transforming them into iron-rich magma. "As the pressure continues to build, it moves toward cooler regions of the crust, forming cyclonic vortices that accelerate and rotate forward. When the crustal plates can no longer withstand this constant pressure and friction—or when they generate excessive electromagnetic waves—earthquakes are likely to occur."

"Well then, 'Unable to see the true face of a lunar quake, simply because I'm outside the lunar crust.' I'm not leaving; this is like a fool marrying a wife—staying put."

"It's extremely dangerous to stay put here. It's just like Antarctica—though volcanic eruptions don't occur here, lunar quakes can still happen. The lunar crust likely consists of hundreds of irregular plates of varying sizes, and the lunar mantle also has plates. These plates exhibit three types of movement: First, the upper portion of the plate facing the Sun during the day is subjected to centrifugal force, causing it to protrude downward and sag, accelerating its movement across the surface of



the lunar mantle plate. At night, the same end of the plate is subjected to centripetal rotational forces, causing it to contract and bend inward, slowing its movement across the mantle plate's spherical surface and forming nighttime folds on the surface; 2. Due to the varying shapes of each plate and their respective geographical environments, they undergo rotational-like displacement movements—driven by centrifugal or centripetal forces—on the irregular spherical surface (with both clockwise and counterclockwise movements occurring in the upper part of the lunar mantle shell, causing friction and heat generation in the mantle); furthermore, the rapid plate movement in the African region generates significant heat through friction, illuminating many electron clusters in the upper atmosphere of the lunar crust, resulting in a scorching summer climate year-round in Africa. Like the center of a vortex in accelerated atmospheric circulation, these areas are calm and peaceful, making them ideal habitats for human habitation. Furthermore, the plate movements in different regions of the Moon have evolved into cyclonic circulation patterns. The varying intensities of forces acting on each region cause the lunar crust to generate different temperatures, leading to the formation of distinct mineral deposits.

Over the course of its long history, the Moon has been shaped into an ellipsoid by various forces acting upon it. Consequently, the centrifugal force at the equator is greater than at the poles. The leading edges of the plates moving toward the poles are constantly pulled by centripetal forces, while the trailing edges are pushed by centrifugal forces. This creates a cyclical movement toward the poles, following the principle that "what has been united will eventually separate, and what has been separated will eventually unite," causing the Moon to rotate at an uneven speed.

On the other hand, the iron mass in the lunar core, through the constant friction and interaction of centrifugal and

centripetal forces, gradually evolved into a magnetic field. As the core rotates in a spiral, reciprocating motion, when the rotation is fast, the apex of the spiral supplies magnetic iron elements to the North Pole. When rotation slows, the apex of the spiral supplies magnetic iron elements to the South Pole region. This continuous movement toward the North and South Poles causes these regions to evolve into magnetic fields. Meanwhile, on the inclined surfaces surrounding the lunar equator, individual tectonic plates—due to their differing positions within regenerative fields of varying mass—generate energy at different rates. For instance, active plates moving on the side of the expansion force field, along with small molecular substances, are flung outward by centrifugal force. As the protrusion and downward acceleration from the top outward occur sequentially, the middle and lower parts of the spherical surface are driven by this accelerating inertia, causing the sphere to bulge significantly; moreover, clusters of electrons above the lunar surface are pushed, rubbed, and made to glow, forming daytime. On the opposite side of the Earth, on the slopes influenced by the gravitational field and centripetal force, active plates and small molecular particles gradually move upward from below, affected by centripetal force. They are successively pulled inward, bending and decelerating, thereby creating night.

As the tectonic plates surrounding the Earth's crust move rhythmically back and forth across the magnetic fields at the North and South Poles, they sever the magnetic field lines generated by the Earth's core rotation. Consequently, the rotational speed inevitably accelerates, converting mechanical energy into electrical current. Of course, when two objects within an atom rub against each other, the object with the weaker ability of its atomic nucleus to bind electrons will transfer some of its electrons to the other object; the object that loses electrons becomes

positively charged due to the lack of electrons, while the object that gains electrons becomes negatively charged by an equal amount due to the excess electrons—this is another aspect.

At the same time, it is not yet certain whether the lunar core still maintains 4 million atmospheres of pressure and a temperature of 3,000 degrees today, but the centrifugal force of the system certainly propels the lunar core outward, causing it to collide with and friction the inner layer of the lunar mantle, transforming the inner mantle into magma. First, the hot gas currents from the magma accelerate toward the widening fissures in the cooler crustal plates, inevitably colliding with the cold air currents moving toward the center from the lunar crust. This collision generates heat, electricity, and water molecules through friction. It is precisely at the boundary where these hot and cold movements meet that lunar groundwater is continuously generated.

As the lunar mantle is constantly subjected to centrifugal forces from the lunar core system, the resulting friction generates more hot

air currents, which continuously heat the groundwater within the

lunar crust. Furthermore, as the lunar crustal plates move across the

surface of the lunar mantle plates under the influence of centripetal or centrifugal forces, the resulting friction generates heat to the extreme, converting water into gas. As this water is converted into gas by the

heat and diffuses, it forms cyclonic vortices. Hot air currents within the

lunar crust plates are continuously transported toward the eccentric cavities within the low-temperature cyclonic vortices, where the thermal exchange between hot and cold air generates water

molecules. Due to the high degree of confinement within the lunar crust, the initial high-temperature, high-pressure conditions convert the groundwater into "mixed hydrocarbons"—oil.

Although the force of the cyclonic clusters is greatly

diminished after this transformation, the continuous supply of hot air currents from the lunar mantle allows the clusters to

regenerate more force. When conditions reach their limit in this specific area, underground explosions or combustion of "mixed hydrocarbons" (oil or natural gas) occur. Alternatively, as the cyclonic cluster accelerates its rotation and expands, the resulting friction and pressure transform iron ore deposits in certain sections of the lunar crust into magnetic fields. Over time, prolonged plate tectonic movements within the lunar crust generate friction that converts these magnetic fields into electromagnetic waves. The continuously intensifying high-temperature, high-pressure forces within the lunar crust then trigger a massive electromagnetic explosion. Alternatively, if molten magma from the lunar mantle suddenly surges into this specific area, it ignites underground electromagnetic waves or triggers an explosion and combustion of natural gas. The rock blocks in the inner lunar crust, unable to withstand the sudden high temperatures, shatter. These fragments, undergoing continuous nuclear fusion-like explosions, collide with the lunar crust, triggering lunarquakes and aftershocks. If the molten magma generated by the lunar mantle surges out of the lunar crust with great force, it results in a volcanic eruption.

For example, centrifugal force is minimal at the poles. Although the lunar crustal plates shift, push against, and rub against the lunar mantle, they generate little heat, causing the polar ice and snow to act like a freezer, cooling the interior of the lunar crust. In particular, the energy generated by volcanic eruptions at the South Pole is insufficient. It is possible that the poles were the most suitable places at that time. Perhaps the Yama people believed that the scorching heat of summer would destroy them, or perhaps they simply believed the rumors and retreated to live in deep mountains and forests or deep within the Earth. For example, the UFOs we observe on Earth also fly at uneven speeds and occasionally emit mechanical clanging sounds.

Therefore, since their flight speed cannot escape Earth ' s gravitational pull at 8 kilometers, they are not the exclusive creation of extraterrestrials.

Now, the two of us are not only in an active fissure cavity but also near the lunar equator, where the friction and heat generated by the interaction of two different forces result in a greater concentration of water molecules. With the strong thrust from the lunar core, the likelihood of a lunar earthquake occurring is even higher.

Look, boss, Under the pressure of 4 million atmospheres and temperatures of 3,000 degrees Celsius at the lunar core, combined with the centrifugal force generated by the moon ' s rotation, after 2:00 a.m., the molten magma—including that of the lunar mantle—flows out like molten iron from an open steel furnace. It rushes serpentine along the active fissures where the plates protrude, sag, and spread apart, passing through the Gutenberg surface into the asthenosphere, then through the lunar mantle '

s B layer and P layer. The temperature difference within those garnet rock layers grows increasingly greater, causing the flow of the molten material to slow down. At the same time, as the rotation gradually shifts the plates back into the night side, each plate sequentially contracts inward, bends, and decelerates, while the temperature within the lunar crust also drops. This escaping magma settles within these active fissures, waiting once again for a source of heat."

"That ' s right. If it weren ' t for the decelerating force caused by the plates ' continuous inward contraction, after a day of accelerated movement, the temperature of that magma would be even higher, and escaping from the lunar crust would trigger a volcanic eruption."

"It might not be solely due to this reason. Other factors, such as the lunar crust being too rigid, the complex topography of the

**lunar crust and mantle, or the temperature generated by the friction and compression of the two forces within the lunar crust being too low, could prevent the magma from gaining the ability to penetrate the lunar crust and trigger a volcanic eruption."**

**"Look at that high-temperature, high-pressure magma and gas trapped within the Mohorovičić discontinuity. Under the compressive force of the plates' continuous centripetal contraction, it acts like a hydraulic jack, gently lifting one end of the lunar crust plate. This also causes individual atoms to expand, making the lunar surface bulge out like a small hill."**

**"That's right. These non-plastic lithospheric plates certainly cannot withstand the limits of this constant pressure buildup; the lithosphere will eventually rupture, triggering volcanic eruptions or earthquakes. Is there any way to stop it from expanding under pressure, so that volcanic eruptions or moonquakes won't occur? At the very least, we should be able to issue advance warnings."**

**"Currently, Chinese seismologists, drawing on years of practical experience, employ various forecasting methods, such as the approach known as 'forecasting earthquakes through seismic activity.' This category of methods uses changes in the spatial, temporal, and intensity patterns of seismic activity to predict the three key elements of an earthquake. It includes methods such as wave velocity ratio, B-value, void detection, seismic belts, and statistical forecasting. At present, the 'forecasting earthquakes through seismic activity' method is receiving increasing attention from seismologists and is often used as one of the primary bases for comprehensive analysis and forecasting."**

**1. Methods for measuring radon in water show significant fluctuations prior to an earthquake, and generally, the larger the fluctuation, the higher the expected magnitude of the earthquake."**

Another method involves detecting magnetic declination, which is also based on fluctuations in P-wave and S-wave components. A less reliable approach involves determining earthquake potential based on the severity of annual droughts. This includes methods such as wave velocity ratios, B-values, void detection, strip analysis, and statistical forecasting.

**II. Observation of Earthquake Precursors:** Based on data provided by earthquake precursor monitoring facilities, anomalies are extracted after processing to forecast earthquakes. Common precursor monitoring methods include groundwater observation, topographic deformation observation, and geoelectric field observation.

**III. Macroscopic Anomalies:** These are pre-earthquake phenomena detectable by human senses. They primarily include abnormal animal behavior, fluctuations in groundwater levels, bubbling or foaming in wells, oil slicks, discoloration, ground glow, fireballs, and repeated flowering in fruit trees. The widespread and rapid occurrence of such anomalies over a short period is the most accurate signal of an impending earthquake. It is believed that with the continuous popularization of earthquake science knowledge and the expansion of communication infrastructure, the feasibility of using macroscopic anomalies for earthquake forecasting will continue to increase.

Although earthquake researchers, through long-term arduous practice, have identified many effective methods for earthquake prediction that can significantly reduce casualties and economic losses, natural disasters—such as earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, severe storms, torrential rains, or prolonged droughts—will still occur. Regardless of the specific disaster, damage to people's living environments and substantial economic losses are inevitable.

Therefore, I propose several methods to address lunar

earthquakes, which are more effective than predicting them. It is akin to knowing that appendicitis will occur on a specific day and at a specific time, yet performing surgery to remove the appendix in advance to prevent future complications. Furthermore, this approach can yield numerous other economic benefits: we should adopt the same strategy as we do on Earth.

1. We must focus on active faults within lunar seismic zones. Within these active faults, earthquakes will occur again—ranging from a few years to several decades or even centuries—and strong earthquakes may strike every few hundred years (though it is best to locate the site approximately 50 kilometers away from the original earthquake epicenter, such as the Tangshan earthquake, to reduce costs). Areas along the original major rift valleys, regions marked on topographic maps of China's seismic zones, the surroundings of ring-shaped mountain ranges, the foothills of high mountains near rivers, east-facing areas, the Yangtze River basin, and locations within seismic zones—particularly in densely populated large and medium-sized cities—should all be covered by

a grid spanning 250 kilometers in length and 100 kilometers in width. Within this grid, a seismic well with a diameter of 40 centimeters and a depth of over 3,000 meters should be drilled every 30 square kilometers (with slightly higher density in densely populated seismic zones). Drilling seismic-proof wells with a diameter of 40 centimeters and a depth of over 3,000 meters using oil drilling rigs. These wells should be treated year-round with the deep-well high-temperature polymer treatment agent invented by Professor Luo Pingya, and shielded temporary plugging technology should be employed to inject chemical adhesives or chemical refrigerants to reduce temperature and pressure. Alternatively, these adhesives can seal active fissures in the mantle, creating a plastic bond that prevents high-temperature magma from entering the lower-temperature



regions of the crust. Or, by performing demagnetization within the crust, electromagnetic wave energy can be eliminated, thereby preventing the occurrence of super-strong earthquakes. This approach also reduces the likelihood of triggering nuclear fusion reactions within atoms, which could lead to earthquakes or volcanic eruptions. Even if a small amount of magma were to enter, the magnitude of any resulting earthquake would be limited.

Even if such events occur now, we can still implement measures 200 kilometers on either side of the epicenter, (Much like cutting down trees to create a firebreak when extinguishing a forest fire.)

Specifically, along the seismic belt in that region, drill a series of seismic-proof wells every 50 kilometers, each 4,000 meters deep and approximately 45 centimeters in diameter. Insert a 12-meter-long, 1-centimeter-thick flared steel pipe into the well, and drill three rows of 2-centimeter-diameter holes spaced 15 centimeters apart at the top of the pipe. Subsequently, the larger end of a long steel pipe is first lowered into the deepest part of the underground borehole, followed by the remaining sections of the pipe being lowered one by one. This process involves the larger-diameter pipe being nested inside the smaller-diameter pipe, extending all the way to the surface. An alarm system is installed within the steel pipe. If the temperature of the

groundwater inside the pipe rises sharply—indicating that liquid from

the Earth's core is entering the mantle and crust—and if cooling is not initiated promptly, it could trigger a massive electromagnetic wave

explosion. Alternatively, the combustion of underground oil and

natural gas could cause a major earthquake.

Immediately activate the machinery normally used for mineral water production inside the steel pipes to pump out the groundwater. Replace it with ice-cold water and circulate the cold water day and night. Alternatively, deploy additional chemical refrigerants.

Over time, gravitational and centrifugal forces will accelerate

the chemical refrigerants into the active fissures of the lunar mantle plates.

Alternatively, use large hydraulic pumps to force the refrigerants into the active fissures, thereby reducing or even preventing the entry of hot air currents.

This preemptive treatment—whether through the deployment of chemical refrigerants, the installation of demagnetization equipment within the active fissures to demagnetize the lunar crust, or the application of lubrication, cooling, and pressure-reduction measures—will help improve the quality of the movement environment within the lunar crust and extend the Moon's lifespan. At the same time, it can mitigate climate warming and reduce the likelihood of severe flooding occurring in regions that have recently experienced extreme droughts.

II. It is also possible to drill seismic-proof wells at the points where underground hot air currents move toward the North Pole during periods of rapid rotation, and toward the South Pole during periods of slow rotation. [Of course, if the exact points where these two thermal currents pass cannot be located immediately, drilling anti-seismic wells at the narrowest or most curved sections of the active fault zone will also be effective, [much like how acupuncture is more effective when the gold needle is inserted into the Huantiao acupoint]. Taking these points as centers, within an area extending approximately 150 kilometers in length and 100 kilometers in width on either side—that is, the

**lunar seismic belt region—drill one deep well per 20 square kilometers using a drilling rig—3 kilometers deep with a diameter of approximately 40 centimeters. Enclose the well with a steel plate 1 centimeter thick to form a funnel-shaped steel pipe, and drill 1-centimeter-diameter holes every square decimeter around the pipe. Connect the steel pipe sections one by one to the surface (for example, if the rock layer is at 200 meters, connect at 200 meters to save costs). To enhance seismic resistance and facilitate drilling, the drilling rig can continue downward for over 1,000 meters, with the borehole diameter reduced. This lower section may not necessarily require iron pipe connections. Subsequently, iron caps will be installed on the pipes, along with water pumps, pressure gauges, or vacuum pumps. Under normal conditions, this system makes extensive use of groundwater and geothermal energy; when powerful high-temperature, high-pressure forces enter the lunar crust, it will automatically vent and predict earthquakes.**

**Furthermore, the high-temperature, high-pressure forces—stored as a mixture of compressive, tensile, and cyclonic forces—resulting from the cyclical tectonic movements of the lunar crust (where plates that have been joined for a long time eventually separate, and those that have been separated for a long time eventually rejoin)—will be released through these ventilation holes or extracted by vacuum pumps and other equipment. This reduces the destructive impact of tectonic seismic energy or channels it out of the crust, thereby preventing the occurrence of strong earthquakes of magnitude 7 or higher. Furthermore, the treatment method is determined based on the geological conditions beneath each borehole. For instance, if drilling hits a geological hotspot, human intervention can be employed to facilitate the evolution of higher-quality substances at greater depths. For instance, by injecting higher energy or the necessary ingredients for higher-quality substances into deeper underground layers,**

mineral deposits such as gold can be formed. Additionally, hot spring bathhouses or geothermal power plants can be constructed on the surface. If drilling hits a mineral spring, comprehensive development and utilization of the mineral water can be undertaken. Alternatively, by diverting groundwater to the surface for water-cooling circulation, the temperature within the lunar crust can be lowered, thereby extending the duration of seismic activity and reducing its magnitude—potentially even preventing lunar earthquakes or volcanic eruptions from occurring permanently.

Alternatively, various raw materials and water sources can be artificially injected deep underground, where they are then converted into oil. Oil is continuously produced, providing an inexhaustible supply for people to use.

3. Vacuum Method: Install a vacuum pump inside the lunar crust to continuously remove the rising high temperatures and pressures within the crust—that is, within the atoms—thereby reducing the destructive power of seismic energy and decreasing the frequency of earthquakes.

IV. Cooling Method: Continuously lower the temperature within the lunar crust. Particularly after a major earthquake occurs, within a 200-kilometer radius on either side of the active fault line and at depths of 3,000 meters or deeper, this process must be completed within 20 days. Subsequently, continuously inject large amounts of cold air deep into the crust to cool it, or use water circulation cooling to reduce both temperature and pressure. This will reduce the occurrence of earthquakes or major aftershocks caused by high temperatures and pressures reacting with groundwater to form “mixed hydrocarbons.” Please refer to the article by the renowned scientist Wang Dequai, who reveals the secrets behind “water turning into hydrocarbons” or “water turning into oil,” to understand the underlying principles.



We can also make extensive use of thermal energy from the atmosphere, geothermal energy, and ocean thermal energy, as well as large-scale afforestation, to reduce the frequency of earthquakes, lower their magnitude, and mitigate issues such as global warming.

Second, avoid constructing large-scale building complexes and reservoirs in seismic zones. If reservoirs are built, the ground must be treated to prevent water leakage. Do not conduct large-scale blasting operations during periods of seismic risk, especially underground nuclear explosions.

In summary, thermal air currents associated with earthquakes of magnitude 7 or higher—or those preceding major human illnesses or disasters—reflect the scale of thermal air currents that have been propelled into the high-pressure zones of the atmosphere by human activities and movements at least seven or eight years prior. This phenomenon, replicated by the heavens, manifests as a centripetal circulation of natural forces from the high-pressure zone toward the corresponding areas on the ground. It serves as an advance warning for people to embrace the concept of "heaven-human resonance," to reform their ways, cultivate virtue, and prepare

appropriate countermeasures. For instance, when thermal air currents associated with earthquakes increase the risk of heatstroke in summer, people should take medicines such as Huoxiang Zhengqi Water to treat the condition. If there are few hot air currents rising into the high-pressure zones in the sky, and Heaven replicates this by causing earthquakes of magnitude 5 or lower, it is likely to bring a cold snap in December, leading to increased incidence of colds and a rise in the incidence and mortality rates of age-related diseases. You should pay attention to balancing work and rest, avoid excessive exposure to the cold, and if you fall ill, drink hot Chinese herbal decoctions or take Western medicine tablets with hot water, and sleep under warm blankets—then you will recover. This is to prevent people from spreading false claims that infectious diseases are being manipulated into major epidemics, thereby profiting from the suffering of the sick. When people's hearts are upright, the world is at peace; even in times of crisis, society remains safe and major conflicts are minimized! Thus, misfortune is turned into good fortune.

Otherwise, if humans continue to generate thermal energy currents of varying intensities that surge

toward high-pressure zones in the sky, the heavens will respond by replicating these energy vortices into cyclones based on the magnitude of the force. These cyclones, possessing greater spiritual intelligence, will adapt to specific ground conditions, leading to regional

disasters such as droughts, floods, epidemics, or minor earthquakes of magnitude 5 or below. Alternatively, they may cause an increase in health issues and other calamities.

The above measures can help prevent and mitigate earthquakes, as well as reduce the damage to lives, property, and economic losses caused by earthquakes to both the nation and individuals. This is provided for reference only.

Currently, lacking any means of prevention or mitigation, we can only sit idly by and watch as the earthquake plays out. This tectonic plate movement continuously exerts centripetal forces that push, twist, and compress inward, while the lunar core is pushed outward by centrifugal forces, generating high-temperature, high-pressure magma in the lunar mantle through friction. This eventually causes individual atoms to continuously expand, pushing the lithosphere to its deformation limit. Alternatively, cyclonic vortices



within the lunar crust, subjected to varying degrees of friction and compression within their own systems, convert this energy into electromagnetic waves that erupt and burst through the surface, colliding with electron clusters and transforming into visible light—the “lunar quake” gas clouds. Much like a short circuit in an electrical wire, this illuminates the entire interior and exterior of the tectonic fissures with a chain reaction of fusion lightning.

The continuous appearance of these flashes further intensified the expansion and chaotic motion of the gases and small molecular substances within the surrounding atoms that had not yet been ignited. Due to the complex environment within the lunar crust—where tectonic fissures vary in width and contact surfaces in elevation—powerful bursts of mixed gas streams and visible light erupt at different locations and times. As these penetrate the crust, they form a myriad of shapes,

such as streaks of pale blue or purplish-red light columns shooting into the sky. When the light curves downward, its low density causes it to occasionally take on a semicircular form. When gas or light energy surges toward the sky, it forms interwoven bands and spherical lights that reflect off

one another, emitting dazzling radiance—such as flashes of

red, blue, yellow, and white. Additionally, ground rumbling phenomena occur successively. These phenomena occur primarily in the epicenter area, with a few instances in the

surrounding regions. As described in the book *\*The Mystery*

of the Tangshan Earthquake\*, 5—6 hours before the quake, the sky began to display small, sporadic, and scattered

strange flashes—blue flashes. These blue flashes flickered on and off in the darkness, persisting hazily for twenty minutes.

The diffuse glow zone took on the hazy appearance of dawn; the intensity of the light was particularly strong in the epicenter,

and the diffuse glow zone began to expand outward. Multicolored, shifting spherical lights (red, blue, purple, white,

etc.) appeared successively in the outer regions. Two to three hours before the earthquake, extremely intense red light flashed

intermittently in the sky, and wandering bands of light alternating between red and yellow began to appear.

About an hour before the earthquake, striped columns of red, purple, and pink light appeared in multiple

locations. Colorful serpentine bands and fiery dragon-like light bands shone brightly, vanishing and reappearing—

fleeting, multicolored, and varied in form.

Against the backdrop of the dark night sky, they resembled fiery dragons dancing in the air and colorful ribbons rippling through the heavens!

One to ten minutes before the earthquake struck, ground lights began to appear simultaneously across the affected area, painting a vivid pre-earthquake scene whose frequency and intensity increased dramatically. Near the fault line, the sky suddenly brightened as if it were daytime, making even the cracks in the walls of the building across the street clearly visible. Colorful, ever-changing light phenomena flickered intermittently across the night sky of eastern Hebei—blue turning to red, red turning to white...

A little over a minute before the quake, three blinding beams of light radiated like lightning from the night sky 25 kilometers northeast of the epicenter, vanishing in an instant, followed by three mushroom-shaped plumes of smoke billowing into the night sky.

The earthquake struck immediately. The sky over the small hills within the city turned red, and darkness descended. It felt like a strong wind blowing in from the northeast, just as a storm approaches. The “sound of the

wind" was loud, but the actual gusts didn't feel particularly strong against the body. After the "roar," the area suddenly became extremely bright, and everything on the ground could be seen clearly. It was like a dazzling flash of lightning, but it lasted longer—about seven or eight seconds. The light was white with a slight reddish tint, and after it faded, the darkness seemed particularly deep. Furthermore, these phenomena of ground sounds and ground lights occurred in succession, predominantly in the epicenter area with a few instances in the outer regions. Ground sounds were most frequent near the fault zones in the east and west, while ground lights were more common in the east, south, and west. The two phenomena both accompanied and separated from one another, appearing in an interlaced pattern.

You hear a variety of vivid descriptions resulting from differences in distance from the sound source, variations in direction, the differing properties of the sound-transmitting medium, the fact that the sound shoots straight up from the ground fissures into the sky, individual differences in auditory perception, and the limitations of descriptive metaphors. Suddenly, a sound like thunder is heard in the distance, mixed with the roar

of a violent storm, a strange wind—one hears the “sound of the wind” without seeing the treetops sway. It comes from afar, descending from the heavens to the earth, then swirling back up again; a powerful, three-dimensional sound roars like a hurricane, overwhelming the sky and earth, as if thousands of troops and horses were charging toward you, or as if millions of fierce tigers were descending the mountain, howling madly. If you were standing in the eastern region, it would sound as though a train were rumbling up from beneath the earth; to those

in the western region, the ground’s roar at its peak would be like the howling of a gale; to those in the northern mountains, it would resemble the sound of continuous explosions from quarrying operations; to those on the southern plains, it would be like the roar of row upon row of road rollers approaching from the direction of Tangshan; In the city center, the massive, muffled, three-dimensional sounds merged into a single, overwhelming cacophony—astonishing, unbearable, and evoking an inexplicable sense of dread! This was the dramatic shift in sound and light in the moments just before the quake—both the climax of the earthquake’s precursors and the most spectacular prelude to the tremor

itself.

At 3:42 a.m., streaks of pale blue and purplish-red light shot skyward in a semicircular pattern above the city. Striped and spherical lights intertwined and reflected off one another, with bursts of flashes erupting in all directions, radiating dazzling brilliance as red, blue, yellow, and white hues flickered into view. The two

phenomena both accompanied and separated from one another; after intersecting and appearing,

When the moonlight fades, powerful hot gases and

intense internal pressures within the lithosphere—like a deflating balloon—cause small tectonic plates in the lunar crust to plummet violently under the combined effects of their own weight and centrifugal force. The cold rock layers come into contact with the high-temperature liquid stored in the lunar mantle, or high-temperature magma from the lunar mantle and core is injected into the cold water beneath the lunar crust. Much like adding a few drops of cold water to a pot of hot oil, the atoms within the rock and the magma immediately erupt into a series of small tremors. Experienced experts can determine the magnitude of the impending lunar quake and the location of the advancing underground thermal currents based on the

magnitude and frequency of these tremors, allowing them to prepare for major quakes in advance.

Alternatively, at this point, cyclonic vortices within the lunar crust are continuously accelerated, colliding and rubbing against the lunar mantle. This process converts underground deposits—such as iron ore—into electromagnetic waves, triggering a massive explosion. The lunar crust cannot withstand this force, much like a car tire bursting when overinflated. Alternatively, as the cyclonic clusters continue

to be forced and rubbed against one another, the intense heat ignites underground natural gas. This force causes the plates to bounce—first vertically—loosening the rock layers of the lunar crust. As atoms within the rocks are re-pressurized and cold matter falls onto the magma, a violent chain reaction of nuclear fusion explosions immediately occurs. The force of this massive explosion caused the lunar crust plates to sway from side to side and undergo violent, erratic vibrations and bouncing, the sound of which was like drums striking the lunar crust.

You idiot, look—this violent jolting and shaking

further shatters layer upon layer of the lithosphere with intense heat, further compromising the lithosphere's

structural integrity. The internal space of the lunar crust is expanding, and that damned magma, along with the powerful thermal cyclones, are being pushed and frictioned by two opposing forces, accelerating the replication of energy. They continue to expand into these regions, causing the shattered large garnet rocks to be blasted into smaller ones by the high temperatures, until the temperature difference balances out and the explosions and tremors cease, putting an end to the repeated aftershocks."

"That explains why lunar quakes last so long. It turns out it's this high-temperature magma and the cyclones accelerating within the crust—their friction and interaction generating electromagnetic waves—that are causing the trouble. They generate even more force. Every night after 5:00 PM, as the plates slow their upward movement and contract centripetally, the resulting compressive pressure forces the magma back into the lunar core through the active fissures in the lunar crust and mantle. Alternatively, as the cyclonic vortices within the lunar crust decelerate during their centripetal upward movement, the replicated thermal energy is significantly reduced, causing the magnitude and frequency of lunar



quakes to decrease accordingly. By 2:00 a.m., the active fissures—whether in the lunar crust or mantle—have contracted to the point of being seamless. At this point, the lunar mantle acts like a heat shield, isolating the lunar core. This, in turn, greatly accelerates the temperature drop within the Mohorovičić discontinuity. Simultaneously, the continuous compressive force from plate contraction causes the lunar crust and atomic structures to re-pressurize under centripetal forces. The resulting centrifugal force pushes and expands one side of the lunar crust, causing the surface to bulge upward, and leading to widespread cooling across the lunar surface once again.

This occurs once daily, from 2:00 a.m. to 7:00 a.m. Beijing Time. As atoms within the plates are compressed to their limit and release energy, this marks the beginning of a dangerous phase where plate movements resume their cyclical pattern of alternating protrusion and subsidence, accelerating in intensity. Between 3:00 p.m. and 9:00 p.m., underground tectonic plate movements are particularly intense, and the geomagnetic field exhibits irregularity. This is especially evident during this period of the year when the Moon's rotation is at

its fastest and most irregular; the forces generated are most intense, and groundwater levels are at their highest."Lunar earthquakes occur frequently, with high magnitudes and great destructive power. This includes a high likelihood of operators losing control of their equipment under identical conditions and at the same speed, leading to various accidents, such as car crashes and the crash of aircraft flying over this region."

"You see, the process of a lunar quake is like a crusher, breaking down and transforming layer upon layer of rock. During the day, it is subjected to strong centrifugal forces, generating high-temperature lava and producing deafening, explosive impacts and bouncing sounds that cause the earth to undergo significant deformation,"

Moreover, the timing of these lunar tremors is completely unpredictable, leaving people utterly unprepared. Why can't these tremors be confined to the designated danger periods—between 3:00 PM and 10:00 PM, and from 2:00 AM until 7:00 AM? The explanation is rather complex, but the principle remains the same: different forces produce different results. Take the liquid core, for example. It is not a pure liquid like molten iron

flowing from a steel furnace. As the core rotates centripetally, some solid particles are spun into spherical shapes resembling volcanic bombs, and these are propelled by centrifugal force—along with the liquid core—into the active fissures of the crust and mantle. Once these solid spheres are ejected, they disrupt the inward contraction of the tectonic plates, preventing them from fitting together seamlessly. Of course, in some regions, plate movement is rapid, and in others, the junction between the lunar mantle and the lunar crust is uneven, creating voids. High-temperature magma is not displaced in these voids; instead, it remains and continues to diffuse and spread into the cooler regions of the crust, where it transforms into groundwater at the boundary between hot and cold zones. When these forces converge into an irregular, unified force, they trigger explosions of natural gas beneath the lunar surface, causing lunar earthquakes. This results in the potential for lunar earthquakes to occur at any time, differing only in magnitude. Furthermore, the lunar core within the voids of the lunar mantle may consist of clusters of solid particles.

At other times, lunar earthquakes primarily result

from high temperatures and pressures generated by compression and friction, or from electromagnetic wave explosions triggered by high-temperature lava. However, after 2:00 a.m., lunar earthquakes are driven by three forces:

First, centrifugal force causes plate displacement and movement toward the east—that is, the side facing Earth—accelerating downward due to strong inertial thrust, thereby generating significant energy. Second, a large amount of lava from the lunar core enters active fissures. Third, particles such as quarks within the atomic core's voids cease their energy-intensive circular motion because the spin system can no longer provide sufficient

energy. Consequently, the gravitational, electromagnetic, strong, and weak forces they generate are uniformly weakened by this unified field, causing them to transition to an elliptical, energy-efficient centripetal motion. This motion accelerates their mass toward the center under centripetal force, generating additional inertial forces. When they re-enter the center—whether color or flavor quarks—they immediately trigger a nuclear fusion-like explosion of the cold gas or groundwater within the void, ignited by their massive,

high-temperature blue light. This results in a more powerful seismic magnitude. Also, after every spontaneous lunar earthquake's mainshock, there are aftershocks, so we'd better be careful."

"You science nerd, your theory violates the law of conservation of energy and doesn't align with current understanding of earthquake causes. The combined potential energy from the pushing, pulling, and twisting of tectonic plate movements has already been released; it's impossible for such strong seismic energy to be generated again in such a short time."

"No, no, Boss. Lunar quakes arise from two distinct types: causal earthquakes and spontaneous earthquakes. They manifest differently during an event. Causal earthquakes result from the convergence of plate tectonic movements or other external forces, causing the plates to fail under the combined stress of pushing, squeezing, twisting, and pulling. This leads to the release of stored energy and the resulting earthquake. Their energy is relatively low, and while there are precursory signs—such as aftershocks and earthglow—they are not intense. Prevention measures include injecting water underground or reinforcing the crust to reduce the

accumulation of potential energy and the resulting damage from plate movement. If the region contains metal ores, such as iron ore, the pushing and friction forces from plate movement will generate electromagnetic waves within the crust, leading to even more intense earthquakes when they erupt.

Another type of spontaneous earthquake is caused by two factors. The first involves structural changes in the Earth's core due to the movement of tectonic plates, as well as the magnitude of pushing, squeezing, twisting, and pulling forces. High-temperature, high-pressure molten material is directly injected into active fissures and cavities in the Earth's crust, triggering earthquakes. The second type occurs when the Earth's crust has strong sealing properties and high load-bearing capacity. As hot air currents entering the crust continuously increase in volume and intensity, and move upward or forward, they can form cyclonic vortices. These cyclonic clusters generate earthquakes due to the friction forces within their own systems and the high-temperature, high-pressure conditions they accelerate, which convert groundwater into "mixed hydrocarbons" (oil).

Alternatively, when the explosive airflow from a

Lunar quake surges to the top of the crust and spreads outward in both lateral directions, it forms a centripetal vortex cluster. This cluster replicates even more high-temperature, high-pressure energy, and when conditions reach their limit, it triggers an earthquake. Of course, sometimes both of these scenarios occur simultaneously. Particularly between 1:00 PM and 5:00 PM, the force exerted by the strong force field is greater and more sudden. Various natural phenomena also occur frequently before and after such events. These include earthglow, earth sounds, magnetic field anomalies, underground smoke, aftershocks, and abnormal behavior in flora and fauna.

Furthermore, in response to severe earthquakes of magnitude 7 or higher—such as the powerful earthquake

that struck Beijing during the Qing Dynasty—Emperor Guangxu would order the execution or release of prisoners for a certain number of days, burn large quantities of incense to seek divine forgiveness, and some emperors would open the national treasury to distribute grain to aid the victims. Some emperors would even pardon a group of prisoners. These measures served to alleviate social tensions, improve national governance in advance, and reduce the occurrence of such events in the future.

The ancient masters of astrology knew that the heavens

did not simply stand by and watch the spectacle unfold. The heavens function like a nurturing mother, channeling hot air currents rushing toward high-pressure zones in the sky toward low-pressure zones on the ground—such as mountains, rivers, or urban structures—where they accelerate into swirling vortices resembling tornadoes, or evolve into meteorites, or manifest as the spiritual language of disasters in a region, such as severe droughts, floods, epidemics, and earthquakes. Just as animals and humans react to harmful attacks—animals emit only simple vocalizations, while humans speak the language of wisdom—so too do these natural phenomena. Therefore, astrologers in the emperor's service, based on the information from these air currents and combined with clues such as the location, intensity, and direction of events, they can predict in advance the auspicious or inauspicious nature of future events. They can then alert the state or the emperor to potential blessings or calamities—such as major current affairs or significant problems—so that immediate corrective action can be taken. This helps reduce the harmful air currents generated by human activities that disrupt nature; when these currents reach high-pressure zones in the sky, they weaken. Consequently, when disasters do occur, major crises are mitigated, minor issues are resolved, and misfortune is turned into good fortune.

Today, we can also present the conclusions drawn



from various data to relevant government departments for research, facilitating the timely formulation of measures to minimize or prevent major disasters in the future.

On a personal level, one should reflect on one's work methods over the past decade or so. Moving forward, one should adopt a more balanced approach to life, perform more acts of kindness, and be mentally prepared for various contingencies. This will minimize the impact of impending events and even turn misfortune into good fortune.

For example, following the two major earthquakes in the Tangshan region over 7,660 years ago and 14,800 years ago, the rock in the affected areas' tectonic plates was shattered by the intense heat of the seismic energy. This rock then reacted with hydrocarbon-rich oil—formed from the thermal transformation of groundwater—to create massive coal deposits spanning thousands of kilometers. When spontaneous earthquakes occur, water should not be injected underground, as this would only exacerbate the situation and accelerate the increase in seismic magnitude.”

“You’ re talking nonsense. During an earthquake, people are too busy trying to save their own lives—who in their right mind would dare to inject water

underground?”

“No, no, that’s not right. Even if you don’t inject water into it, it will inject water on its own. Look at the groundwater we encountered earlier—since the integrity of the lunar crust has been severely compromised by the seismic energy, that lunar groundwater will inevitably migrate toward the seismic zone and generate even more water there. At the same time, during a lunar earthquake, massive amounts of thermal energy from the lunar core continuously diffuse outward toward the lunar crust and shoot straight into the sky, inevitably causing changes in the climate and environment, resulting in abnormal weather conditions such as torrential rains or droughts. When heavy rains fall within the seismic zone, the lunar crust—already shattered into pieces by the earthquake—is constantly cooled by surface water and groundwater, thereby reactivating the release of seismic energy. The more water that penetrates and the faster it does so, the greater the magnitude of the aftershocks. This is because water within the lunar crust, subjected to high temperatures and pressures, undergoes further reactions to form ‘mixed hydrocarbons.’ When these ‘mixed hydrocarbons’ are continuously replicated deep within

the lunar crust until they reach their limit of stress, they trigger even more powerful explosions. Look at the major earthquake that struck Taiwan that year; the following year, after a heavy rain, another major aftershock of approximately magnitude 6.8 occurred.”

“I’ve observed this phenomenon as well. Both surface water and groundwater on the Moon are rushing toward the Mohorovičić discontinuity. The cooling of the lunar crust’s plates is accelerating. It seems that once the liquid from the lunar core arrives, a lunar earthquake is truly about to occur.”

“Boss, we can’t rely on just a little experience and information to predict exactly when and where an earthquake of a certain magnitude will occur. You must understand that predicting lunar earthquakes is far more difficult than forecasting the weather. It also depends on the action of irregular combined forces, and it must occur within the unified context of the development of phenomena, with a certain intensity to generate an earthquake—sometimes it doesn’t even occur. What is the reason for this? It may be that one of the external factors in the combined forces has not formed, such as the Earth’s rotation suddenly slowing down after reaching a point

where its non-uniform rotation period has ended, causing a decrease in centrifugal force and resulting in an inconsistent combined force, thus preventing an earthquake from occurring. Or it could be that too much groundwater flowing into the Earth's crust causes cooling and a drop in pressure, preventing a major earthquake from occurring. So, when I hear people boasting that Americans and Soviets can accurately predict earthquakes, I realize that some Chinese people are just blowing smoke for foreigners, but the foreigners

themselves are no good—they can't predict when and where an earthquake will occur on time either.

To put it this way, without deploying advanced seismic instruments underground, understanding the structural load-bearing capacity of the crust and the status of plate movements, and combining this with data on various forces at the surface—particularly the speed of plate displacement in this region, the formation of cyclonic vortices, changes in groundwater and temperature, and magnetic fields—it is impossible to accurately predict earthquakes or their magnitude.

We must not be complacent. The natural phenomena generated by this irregular combined movement—when

observed closely through advanced instruments—are not at all natural. They have their own forms of movement and laws of existence, and they always coordinate with such perfect harmony. When they sense the tide has turned and a combined force can no longer be formed, they quietly go their separate ways, leaving the rocks damaged by lunar tremors within the lunar crust to generate new substances and new atoms through a new cycle of irregular combined movement. For instance, when groundwater is transformed into water-free “mixed hydrocarbon” oil and atoms containing different elements, and these combine with rocks shattered by high temperatures, further mixed and processed by the energy of uneven rotation, the rocks can evolve into combustible “stones”—coal—under an absolutely sealed and static environment. Meanwhile, in rocks that were not shattered by high temperatures—where the compound “mixed hydrocarbon” oil could not easily penetrate or entered only sparingly—it becomes trapped within the coal as bituminous shale. This is the true origin of coal.”

“If that’s the case, there would be coal everywhere inside the lunar crust.”

“That’s impossible. It must occur within specific

areas, such as around lunar seismic zones or plate tectonic fault lines, where the irregular combined forces acting on the rocks and other factors must also meet the conditions necessary for coal formation."

"If the conditions for coal formation aren't met, there wouldn't be any material in that region at all."  
"You can't put it that way. The irregular combined forces of nature are indeed a remarkable inventor. Different types of forces, within the unified field of development, can produce different results.

Just look at how powerful lunar quakes are; the areas they affect are vast, even though repeated aftershocks consume their energy, causing the lunar quakes to gradually weaken and disappear.

However, the high-temperature, high-pressure molten material generated by the pushing and friction, or the hot air currents diffusing after the earthquake, when they surge toward the top of the inner crust, spread out again toward both ends. When this accelerated movement reaches its limit, an aftershock occurs in another location. As the high-temperature, high-pressure vortex accelerates toward cooler regions, it behaves much like rainfall patterns on Earth: it replicates more groundwater in

specific regions and time frames to expand its territory, and aftershocks can occur even hundreds of kilometers away. This process indeed plays a significant role in transforming various substances beneath the moon's surface. If it is a shallow lunar tremor, the atoms within the rock layers absorb fewer "mixed hydrocarbons," resulting in lower-quality coal. Conversely, deep lunar tremors produce higher-quality coal. Alternatively, more petroleum is produced. Moreover, this region functions like a treasure trove of processing facilities; as a continuous stream of hot air flows along active fissures toward this cold region and reaches its limit, it generates more lunar groundwater, which is constantly converted into "mixed hydrocarbon" oil. This enables the systematic replication of more petroleum deep underground, resulting in a relatively balanced extraction rate that provides an inexhaustible supply. "Furthermore, in deeper sections of the lunar crust, where materials are subjected to varying high temperatures and pressures, there are also greater opportunities for the conversion of heavy metals such as gold."

"So, the lunar seismic process is a process that

nurtures and generates new substances.”

“You could put it that way. After studying and utilizing lunar seismic energy, we’ve found its benefits outweigh the drawbacks. Without the combined forces of high temperature, high pressure, and non-uniform movement generated by plate tectonics, no amount of trees buried underground could evolve into coal. Look at how vast our Earth’s coal reserves are and how extensive their distribution is. Where else in the world are there so many regions with such vast quantities of trees that have sunk underground and been transformed into coal? Moreover, even on other planets where there are no trees, there are still vast coal deposits.”

Now, under the combined influence of gravity and centrifugal force, this lunar surface water and groundwater is quietly seeping into the rock layers shattered by lunar quakes. Wherever the water flows, a sizzling sound of cooling emanates from within the rock layers. As steam accumulates, the pressure within the crust rises significantly once more. The resulting cyclonic clusters accelerate their replication, expansion, and growth, gradually causing the lunar crust’s surface to be lifted high by these two forces. Every



night after 2:00 a.m., thermal cyclonic currents generated by the core's compression exploit this void to enter the lunar crust, causing irregular combined forces to reform and transform under the influence of water. This explains the nature of the force in question: primarily, within the lunar crust, over a period of about one and a half months, the underground thermal cyclonic mass—under the accumulation of pushing and frictional forces—can cause the groundwater to undergo reactions due to the high temperature and pressure within the lunar crust, transforming it into "mixed hydrocarbon" oil. When this "mixed hydrocarbon" is replicated to its limit and subjected to other factors such as intense airflow collisions, it triggers a thunderous explosion of "mixed hydrocarbons," generating extreme heat and pressure. The lunar crust cannot withstand this extreme pressure, leading to aftershocks of magnitude 4 to 6 or higher. Listen—the clanging and cracking sounds of explosions and collisions within the lunar crust are ringing out nonstop, sounding like drumbeats. The ground is shaking and deforming once again, and the displacement and deformation of the lunar surface are intensifying."

"Good heavens! It's been nearly a year since the luna

earthquake, yet the aftershocks are still this intense—though none have exceeded the magnitude of the mainshock. What could be the reason for this?”

“You must understand that the intensity of a lunar quake is primarily determined by three factors. First, the strength of the lunar crustal plates and the nature of the atomic matter within them—whether it’s the result of a Big Bang or electromagnetic waves. This is further divided into three sub-factors: internal strength, humidity, and

密封性能; second, the volume and temperature of the lunar core or high-pressure gas flows entering the lunar crust; Third, the internal forces—including the magnitude of friction caused by the ‘centripetal’ and ‘centrifugal’ forces resulting from non-uniform rotation—along with the amount of unexpected energy input, determine the intensity, duration, and extent of destruction to the natural world. For example, the cycles of major earthquakes on Earth’s landmasses vary slightly by region, but generally occur approximately every 33 years—coinciding with the peak of solar sunspot

activity, the year of Earth’s fastest axial tilt rotation, and the year of its fastest non-uniform rotation. This is accompanied by a continuous two-year period of seismic

activity that also shifts to other seismic zones around the world. In fact, when the Earth's rotation accelerates by just about one second in a given year, the number of major earthquakes worldwide increases by several thousand, their intensity rises, and various disasters become more frequent, resulting in tens of thousands of additional deaths that year. Furthermore, due to varying levels of pressure and friction deep within the Earth's

crust, the production of shale oil also exhibits a cyclical increase approximately every 33 years.

At this point, scientists can analyze the magnitude of earthquakes based on whether they occur in the "oceanic crust" or "continental crust," and combine this with data on whether other regions experience extreme droughts following earthquakes. They can then calculate that the cyclone cluster accelerates and moves forward along the active fault line from the epicenter at an average speed of about 15 kilometers per day. [If the epicenter is far from the equator and the cyclone is moving in the opposite direction toward the equator, it accelerates at an average speed of about 5 kilometers per day from the epicenter, moving forward along the active fault]. If the crust is near the equator and moves at an average relative

speed of 5 meters per day against the upper mantle, the resulting friction generates heat. When the magnitude is strong, a cyclonic cluster resembling a tornado forms within the crust, where mass undergoes repeated cycles of acceleration, replication, and transformation, followed by further acceleration, replication, and transformation. When these high-temperature, high-pressure cyclonic vortices reach their mechanical limit—typically after about one and a half to two months (or approximately 25 days for extremely strong earthquakes, or when the vortex moves toward the shallow surface layer at a depth of about 6 kilometers, in which case the time to a major aftershock is even shorter)—the crust's strength cannot withstand the extreme pressure, resulting in an aftershock akin to a car tire bursting under pressure. The larger the original mainshock, the greater the magnitude of the resulting aftershocks. This makes it easier to predict the magnitude, location, and timing of aftershocks for earthquake preparedness and mitigation efforts. It also allows us to infer where the next major earthquake will occur and its magnitude, or to determine whether aftershocks and strong tremors are weakening or ceasing.

When high temperatures are released from within the crust and surge directly into the sky, they create drought conditions in a specific region. This also dissipates the thermal energy within the Earth's internal heat currents that would otherwise replenish groundwater reserves, preventing the formation of cyclonic systems—such as tornadoes—through self-replicating processes or patterns. Alternatively, the occurrence of extreme drought may serve as a precursor to a major earthquake. Alternatively, when high temperatures are released from the Earth's crust and surge toward the sky, they accelerate downward in a centripetal spiral from the high-pressure zone, generating a powerful thermal cyclone that moves rapidly forward, leading to severe flooding in another region.

For example, in Jiangsu, during the five-and-a-half-year period of Earth's non-uniform rotation, the slowest years see heavy rainfall before mid-August, while droughts may occur around mid-October, even in parts of the south. In the fastest years, rainfall in the south is scarce, with three of these years requiring flood prevention measures—specifically to guard against upstream

**flooding. Predicting extreme droughts and floods also requires considering the timing of Earth' s non-uniform rotation and orbital cycles relative to the Sun, and even the Milky Way' s non-uniform rotation and orbital cycles. This allows for more accurate forecasting of the timing of droughts and rainfall in Jiangsu Province, as well as across the country each year. This is because the southern climate shifts northward in a cyclical, non-uniform motion annually. Generally, in the slowest years, the south experiences flooding while the north faces drought, and in the fastest years, the north floods while the south suffers from drought. In years of northern drought,**

**if rain is needed in regions like Shandong to alleviate drought conditions, it is necessary to artificially manipulate the Arctic to generate powerful air currents that accelerate the push and friction toward the equator, particularly in the extreme regions where cold and warm air meet. This first evolves into strong winds and rainfall.**

**If in northern regions outside China—such as Russia or Ukraine—where various industries are active, including warships in the ocean, vehicles on the ground, aircraft in the**

**sky, and even artillery fire—the air currents generated by these activities rise into the high-pressure zones in the sky. These are replicated by the atmosphere into cyclonic winds that blow toward low-pressure zones. If they encounter southern regions—such as hot air currents within**

the Earth's crust that also accelerate from high-pressure zones, including those moving from the equator toward the Arctic low-pressure zone—they will cause rainfall in the regions where cold and hot air meet. This will result in rainfall in areas such as Beijing, Shandong, and Qingdao, alleviating the drought in some regions.

You see, this time our groundwater and surface water

have reactivated the synthesis of various forces. However, the number of atoms in the lunar crust's lithosphere has significantly decreased due to prolonged damage from lunar seismic energy. The high temperatures accumulated through the friction and heat generated by the centripetal and centrifugal forces in the lunar mantle have been released, and it will take time to generate such high energy again. At the same time, the descending rock layers cannot come into direct contact with the high temperatures of the magma, as the previously fractured rock layers have already separated the descending, cold rock blocks; secondly, the sealing properties of the lithosphere, damaged by lunar seismic energy, have been greatly weakened; Third, the powerful seismic energy has accelerated the movement of tectonic plates. What originally would have taken tens, hundreds, or even tens of thousands of years to achieve can now, following this

disruption, be accomplished in just a few months—or at most a few years—allowing the displacement and misalignment of lunar crustal plates to seal the active fissures in the mantle or cause them to shrink progressively.

On the lunar surface, we can directly observe significant displacement and deformation, as well as the formation of lunar fissures and other peculiar landforms following the lunar earthquake. Consequently, the amount of magma or lunar core material escaping into the lunar crust due to the friction and heat generated by these two forces has correspondingly decreased. Notably, the maximum temperature inside the lunar crust has now dropped to less than 800 degrees Celsius, radiating outward. The sealing capacity of the lunar crust has also been greatly weakened, so the aftershocks cannot exceed the intensity





of the

At the same time, this lunar earthquake occurred when the Moon's rotation was at its fastest. Now, considering the time elapsed—over a year—the lunar core's mass, having reached its velocity limit, could no longer generate additional force through the system. Instead, it contracted toward the rotational pole under inertia, decelerating (similar to Earth's non-uniform rotation period, which is approximately five and a half years, generating enough force to trigger small earthquakes of around magnitude 6 within active tectonic plates). Consequently, the total combined force required for lunar earthquakes is now fully constrained. Even if some underground or surface water on the Moon were to be

activated, it could not generate sufficient centrifugal force within atoms to trigger major lunar earthquakes. Moreover, the detonation of large numbers of atoms and their subsequent re-aggregation to form new atoms—along with the intensification of internal atomic forces—requires extremely high temperatures and pressures to replicate the synthesis and evolution process. Therefore, lunar earthquakes will gradually decrease in frequency, intensity, and eventually cease to occur.”

“Boss, look quick! A massive earthquake has hit our area too. And since the earthquake, the temperature inside the crust has risen. Hordes of pathogens and bacteria—even those bad guys that have been dormant for years—are now multiplying rapidly amid the new, chaotic movements, scrambling to break through the crust.”

“Good heavens! The way these bad guys are wiggling their tails and shaking their heads—they’re crawling along while talking, saying they’re going to have a wild time and make a killing. I’d better call my grandson right away and tell him to take precautions. Otherwise, once these bad guys arrive, they’ll bring disaster to Flower Fruit Mountain.”

"Right, right, I was just about to remind you—you' d better call the Little King right away." " Wukong picked up his phone and fiddled with it a few times. "Hello, hello, this is Sun Wukong. Who' s this? Oh, you' re the PR lady hired by the Young Boss? Please ask the Young Boss to come answer the phone... What? Call back later? He' s learning to dance right now. ' No way, this is urgent—I can' t wait. You' d better get him on the line right now. I' m calling from inside the Moon' s crust; I wouldn' t be calling unless it' s important.

"What? You say I' m really annoying... Hello, hello, hello... Damn it, this Young Boss has gone bad too—he' s even hired a PR girl. He hung up on the Old Ancestor himself. Isn' t that infuriating?"

"Mr. Sun, don' t get upset. Neither you nor I are the type to live it up—we' ve been laughed at plenty of times. Today, out of a billion people, six hundred million are gambling, two hundred million are dancing. If you don'

t gamble or play, you' re a fool. How many people are truly passionate about science?"

"That' s utter nonsense. I' m not against him having fun, but life should have value—for oneself or for future generations. I' ve always believed that life shouldn' t

bewastedinidlenessorspiritualemptiness.Whetherit' s our families or the edifice of communism, we must keep adding bricks and mortar while we' re capable. We need a spirit of dedication—putting the nation before ourselves.”

“Mr. Sun, it looks like we should head back to our hom on Earth first. We need to make sure everything' s in orde back home—we can' t let things go up in flames. Otherwise, while we' re doing research on the moon, who knows when we' ll be able to return? It' s unsettling!” “Science nerd, that' s an excellent suggestion. We should go back for a trip, take care of our affairs, and then come back

to the moon.”

(End of Part One. To find out what happens next, please read the next installment in the series, \*The Great Battle Against the Lunar Nucleus People\*.)

Correct Understanding and Application of the Tai Chi Diagram

Sun Chunwu

**Abstract:** In the context of Chinese synthesis, I prefer to place the dynamic field arrows of the Taiji diagram at the heart of one of the following movement principles: the creation of Yin and Yang, and the movements of Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth, to give rise to the philosophical ideas of all evolution. The Taoist concept of “Wuwei” (non-action) emphasizes the unity of opposites and contradictions. Confucius indeed represents another current of centrifugal movement, symbolized by arrows such as benevolence, righteousness, propriety, wisdom, and faith—the birth of Confucianism, which inherently promises the highest degree of ethical adaptation. Unfortunately, these are typically analyzed from either a macro or microperspective. There is no true understanding of the diagram of the Taiji and Bagua; without a way to trace its origins, nor an explanation of the true meanings it reveals, it cannot play a significant role in science and technology.

**Keywords:** celestial bodies; matter; mass; energy; force; eccentric vortex engine; planets; galaxies; center; centripetal vortex orbit; elliptical motion; density waves

In a letter to the Chinese Scientists Forum (August 2005), Chen Yiwen, a British-Chinese advisor to the Chinese Academy of Sciences, pointed out that many people have not yet fully realized that many fields of global science and technology are on the eve of a major scientific and technological revolution—a storm of innovation poised to fundamentally transform existing basic theories. Whichever country is the first to ignite this storm of scientific and technological revolution will be the first to benefit; whichever universities are sufficiently sensitive to this will be prepared and will benefit from it. Conversely, those universities that remain oblivious to this may fall behind,

ignored and disbelieved by all.

What exactly inspired the creation of the Taiji Diagram, and how was it created? What functions does the Taiji Diagram serve? For what purpose was it created? Furthermore, who wrote the *\*Book of Changes\* (I Ching)*, and what kind of book is it?

I believe that, at the very least, the Yellow Emperor—or together with his ministers—developed the ancient Taiji culture. After the war ended, he certainly conducted research on the south-pointing chariot, which had played a pivotal role in the victory. He then combined this with the cyclical evolutionary phenomena of all things in nature and society. Thus, he established the dynamic field of the Taiji Yin-Yang diagram and its theory. He also designed various lines and data to facilitate the work of divination masters, much like how people use an abacus to calculate numbers, in order to predict the future, make decisions on matters of state, and reflect current phenomena. The practice of divining the heavens above, the earth below, and human affairs in between has been passed down to this day.



Therefore, given the understanding and technological capabilities of that time, the use of the Yin-Yang fish symbol

remained the optimal representation. This also gave rise to the development of Taoist culture. The black hole formed by a centripetal vortex is also the force through which the universe originated from a black hole.

Throughout history, the ancient Chinese Taiji diagram, with its simple yet profound structure, has encapsulated the myriad mysteries of nature. To this day, a comprehensive analysis of the ancient Chinese Taiji diagram is far from complete.

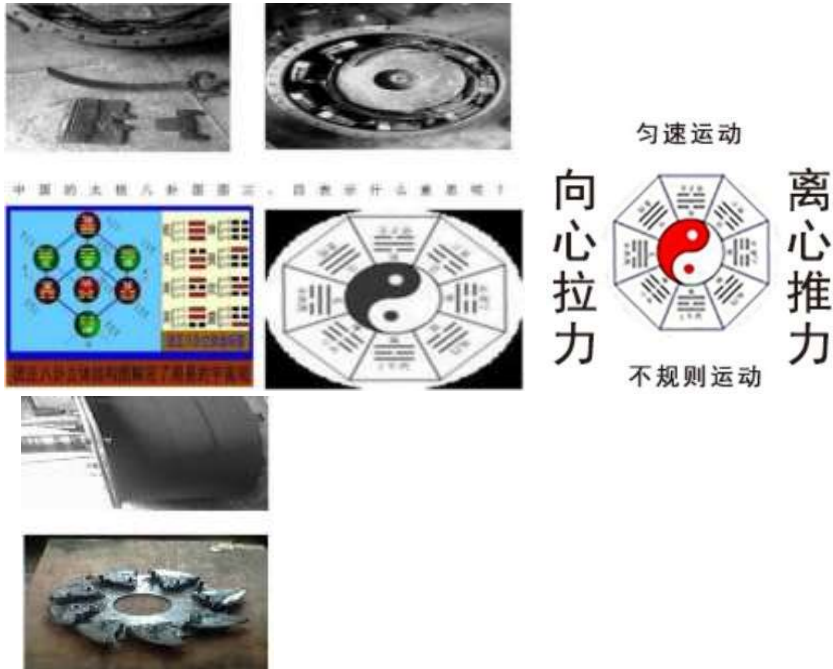
The ancients referred to the culture of predicting the past, present, and future as the "Taiji and Bagua." Why was it called the Bagua? The ancients believed that the most fundamental elements of the I Ching system were the concepts of Yin and Yang, which encompass two layers of meaning: the nature and the state of Yin and Yang. If we disregard the state of Yin and Yang and focus solely on their nature, we can represent them

using the Yang line ( - ) and the Yin line (——). By stacking the aforementioned Yin and Yang lines three times from bottom to top, the Eight Trigrams are formed: Qian, Kun, Zhen, Xun, Kan, and Li. In divination, the Taiji is represented by the Yang line (—) and the Yin line (—).

I believe this is highly likely influenced by the eight sets of hexagram components in the "Guizhanche" (Compass Cart).

As shown in the figure below, when the eight arrow-like parts mounted on the circular disk are erected, one side of the hexagram naturally performs a protruding, downward, accelerating motion from high to low, generating centrifugal rotational force. Internally, this evolves into a large eccentric cavity.

In the "Eccentric Engine," each of the eight sets of hexagram components consists of one long and two short parts. The two short parts are designated as Yin lines (--). When positioned at different locations within the circular disk, they are randomly oriented at varying angles by the force. Consequently, each set of hexagram components sequentially projects downward from the top with accelerating motion, causing the eccentric



cavity formed by the surrounding hexagram rings to expand. A spherical body capable of performing work is then placed within this eccentric cavity. The mass of the sphere acts as weight; on the eccentric lever arm, it generates additional downward force. The



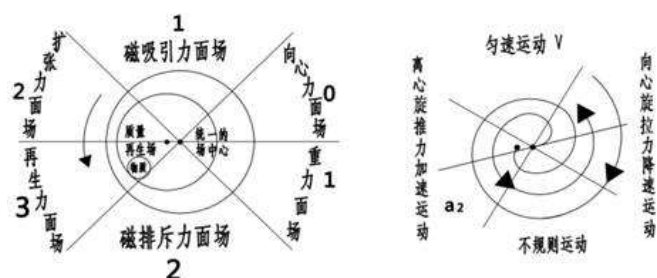
large outer shell of the machine presses downward along the curved surface of the Earth' s crust, thereby performing work through the machine' s rotation. When the hexagram iron on this side of the machine moves upward and can no longer perform work, the hexagram iron—composed of three parts—randomly shifts upward and bends at different angles. As it contracts toward the center and bends downward, it exerts pressure on the side of the work-performing sphere. Consequently, the small eccentric cavity formed by the ring of the gua iron, combined with the weight of the gua iron as it contracts and bends toward the center, pushes the work-performing sphere further toward the larger side of the eccentric cavity. This intensifies the downward pressure on the

work-performing sphere, causing the machine to accelerate its rotation. Just as when the number of sunspots accelerating within the sun is at its peak, the intense friction they generate causes the sun' s surface to randomly form a spherical shape under the influence of these forces.

What is the relationship between the Taijī-Bagua diagram and the elliptical diagram? Both use diagrams to illustrate the microscopic movements of all things in order to explain and theorize about them. However, the Tai Chi and Bagua diagrams alone cannot enable ordinary people to decipher the micro-movements and

developmental trends of all things in the universe, such as birth, aging, sickness, and death. See the elliptical diagram below, which is based on natural science theories. Even beginners can easily understand and apply the diagram—such as the direction of the arrows, the text, and the mathematical insights—to flexibly analyze the micro-movements and developmental trends of all things.

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



For instance, when I first created the diagrams and formulas for problem-setting and problem-solving, I based them on the structural model and data of the “Eccentric Vortex Engine.” Through careful study and research of all things—such as seeds, cells, and the Earth—I discovered that they all evolve and develop under the influence of the same elliptical motion, driven by the self-acting forces within the

system...I then used the diagrams and formulas I had drawn to formulate and solve problems. For instance, when writing the content for \*The Lunar Doctor\* and the popular science book \*Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\*, I began with the diffuse gas in space to describe the origin of the universe and the evolution of celestial bodies of various masses. I also described their microscopic movements of birth, aging, sickness, and death, as well as the evolution of diverse life forms on these celestial bodies. When I write books, just as I did in the past, I am able to formulate and solve their problems in one continuous flow. I feel that this aligns with the requirement of the French scientist Laplace: We must view the current state of the universe as the result of its previous state and the cause of its future development. Therefore, to help people better understand physics and apply its theories flexibly, despite having only a primary school education, I have begun writing articles on the theory of the unified field. I am inviting experts to establish a physics framework based on the Chinese Taiji Dynamic Field System, thereby contributing to humanity. This is because I am unable to formulate a physics theory with a systematic framework on my own.

What is a unified field? Consider the eight trigrams depicted in the diagram above, resembling

**fish leaping—their masses are uniformly suspended on a single circular platform. Yet, despite occupying different positions on this platform and without any external force acting upon them, they exhibit distinct forms of motion. The entity possessing the greatest energy after its dynamic movement becomes the unified field within this context. Therefore, in the context of solving problems involving dynamic field structures—such as planets, atoms, plant seeds, a single cell, a nation, or a human being—where mass is exchanged for energy or force, defining this as the [Unified Field] facilitates understanding the next movements and descriptions of objects within the field. This allows us to recognize that the mass of objects in such a field is akin to weight. When accelerated motion generates more energy and forces, it transforms into greater inertial force, thereby unifying forces such as gravity, electromagnetism, the strong nuclear force, and the weak nuclear force—which arise from pushing and friction—so that they no longer perform work. It is therefore not surprising that components of an object, moving at reduced speeds under the influence of inertial force, cannot transform into forces such as gravity.**

**What is a unified field? Typically, it refers to objects that occupy or consume a significant amount of energy when formulating and solving problems—such**

as the Earth' s rotational poles, the center of an atom, a nation' s central government, or a living organism like a human being. Such entities possess the function of a unified [field]. Only then can accurate mathematical calculations or explanations be made regarding various positions in their surroundings—such as the mass and size of planets in a galaxy, the speed of their motion, their distance from the galactic center, or changes occurring at a specific location within the galaxy. Similarly, issues like the differences between the rich and the poor can be addressed. It is also understood that whoever possesses greater living mass acts as the unified field in such a setting.

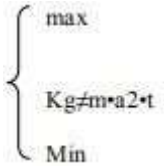
Therefore, the time for calculating an event begins at this moment. [This time does not refer solely to the standard time of a quartz clock; it is, in fact, a much broader concept. For example, when you undertake a project or describe the beginning and end of an event, or when referring to the duration of both macro- and micro-level phenomena—all are collectively termed "time." If you seize the moment to accelerate completion within this timeframe, For example, if you use reference points to measure time during a process, it creates an effect where space appears to contract. As the event' s spin dissipates, time ends at that moment. The unified field function

refers to the process of positioning surrounding objects and unifying their actions within the limits of motion, while providing or transmitting intelligent energy or force to those objects. However, space does not completely disappear as a result.

What is the theory of the unified field? For instance, when addressing issues such as a planet moving faster on one side of a galaxy's center while moving slower on the other, a physics theory of dynamic fields within a systematic framework is required. Only then can we analyze complex phenomena comprehensively, systematically, and with a developmental perspective—examining how they move within the unified field and how they give rise to various random phenomena. We must also be able to quickly and simply explain why objects move along a particular field force surface, and why they accelerate or decelerate. It is akin to an architect constructing a house using a framework of steel, sand, and cement, and then designing rooms such as a dining room, bedroom, kitchen, and bathroom within that structure. Just as a homeowner would not place a bathroom trash can in the dining room, nor would they put a bedroom bed in the dining room. Therefore, focusing on the evolution and transformation of events occurring within a unified field, the issue of replicating more energy, and the methods employed in

the argumentation process—all in accordance with the unified field theory of the great physicist Einstein and the significance of the Chinese Taiji diagram—this work is titled \*The Theory of the Unified Field\*. It is based on the unified field theory, the elliptical diagram, and the principle that problem-solving is not merely about mathematical formulas but also about forces

$kg \neq m \cdot a^2 \cdot t$  The right  $+Z \neq$



The theoretical framework of dynamic field physics.

The above reflects the most fundamental issues regarding micro- and macro-level motion—such as the structural patterns of planets, plant seeds, and animal cells—and incorporates a new philosophical theory that refines the systemic framework, thereby enabling a more scientific approach to analyzing, formulating, and solving problems. At the same time, physicists have identified the crux of physics. However, various new theories in formulating and solving problems lack standardization and are even inconsistent. There is an urgent need to revise,

supplement, and refine physical theories. As Einstein said on his deathbed—that after a lifetime of struggle, he was about to “bite the dust” yet could not resolve who unified the four fundamental forces—he believed that someone would use their wisdom to solve this puzzle.

Although theories such as the Chinese Taijī diagram and quantum mechanics both aim to solve problems at the microscopic level, they employ different methods. One begins by illustrating the significance of the Yin-Yang fish in the Taijī diagram to formulate and solve problems regarding the microscopic motion of all things. For instance, it depicts the dynamic field process of the universe’s origin, evolution, and development from nothingness to existence, and also illustrates the violation of parity conservation.

In contrast, theories such as quantum mechanics do not first depict the dynamic processes of formation, motion, and development of phenomena through a diagram. Instead, they begin by drawing a diagram and then expand upon it to address issues such as the formation, motion, and development of atoms. By using forces like centripetal and centrifugal forces to formulate and solve problems, they provide a solid foundation. Moreover, those solving these problems can verify whether the resulting



explanations are internally consistent and correct, and whether they are accessible to readers.

Moreover, they first postulate the Big Bang origin of the universe and the conservation of parity.

This pales in comparison to the verse composed by Huineng, the Sixth Patriarch of the Chan School: "Bodhi is not a tree; a bright mirror is not a stand. Originally there is nothing; where could dust accumulate?" In other words, judging by these four lines of verse, the Sixth Patriarch Huineng did not establish a contextual backdrop for the events. Consequently, ordinary people inevitably find it difficult to grasp, resulting in a state of confusion where they seem to understand yet do not.

In contrast, the verse by Master Shenxiu, the founder of the Northern School and Huineng's senior monk—"The body is the Bodhi tree; the mind is like a bright mirror stand. Diligently wipe it clean at all times; do not let dust settle upon it"—is easily understood by readers of all levels. Combining the two approaches would make the concept even clearer. Therefore, to address new problems discovered through experimentation, we must correctly unify existing physical theories to establish a new physics of dynamic fields with a systematic framework. We must also create a three-dimensional elliptical diagram and derive various numerical values, enabling more

people to grasp these concepts and apply them flexibly to various problems in both macroscopic and microscopic motion within the theory of design and solution.

Consequently, progress in physics drives the establishment of a new philosophy based on a systematic framework. By applying this new philosophical approach—such as Newton's law of conservation of energy discovered in specific experiments, or Einstein's theory of relativity—we can also refer to the elliptical diagram and the various numerical values in the formulas. By flexibly applying these to different physical phenomena and addressing theoretical problems, we can scientifically explain the microscopic motion involved in a physical event that occurs and develops continuously. This new philosophy thus enhances the scientific rigor and accuracy of physics.

It is a systematic framework theory composed of the unified field theory, elliptical diagrams, and formulas. When formulating and solving problems, one flexibly applies formulas from experts such as Newton and Einstein—including theories like relativity, string theory, quantum theory, mechanics, and chemistry, as well as Wang Yiping's circular logarithms—to generate a universal theory for problem-solving.

**If you can understand and master the meaning of all the mathematics and formulas on the elliptical diagram and apply them flexibly, then by placing a planet orbiting a galaxy within the gravitational field of the elliptical diagram, you will know that the planet moves upward toward the galaxy. You will also know that when the planet is subjected to a force that accelerates it rapidly, it generates a large inertial force, and the planet moving upward is not affected by gravitational friction or other forces. It is then expanded outward from the galaxy by centrifugal force.**

**If the force acting on a spinning planet is small, and it moves into the spiral arm of a galaxy—such as the gravitational field—it moves upward from below, where it is subject to energy dissipation due to friction, its own weight, and gravitational forces. Furthermore, without external forces acting on the planet, its upward motion involves orbiting toward the center of the galaxy under the influence of inertial force, creating density waves as it moves within the galaxy. Furthermore, as the planet's rotation slows, the energy converted from frictional forces decreases. When the planet moves into the gravitational field of the galaxy's spiral arm, the frictional forces are minimal, and the light emitted dims, leading to the cold climate of a glacial ice age.**

Placing the planet on the opposite side of the elliptical diagram, within the expansion force field, reveals that the planet is accelerating as it moves downward along the galactic spiral arm. The planet's mass—or weight—generates more energy from friction and resistance during acceleration; this is the force at work. Consequently, the light emitted by clusters of electrons on the planet becomes brighter and whiter, leading to a transition from a spring-like climate to a summer-like one. Or, when solving problems, one can identify the specific type of force involved. Furthermore, whether using Newton's law of conservation of energy or theories by experts such as Einstein—including relativity, string theory, and quantum theory—as well as formulas from mechanics, chemistry, or mathematics to formulate and solve problems, the approach gains greater depth and internal consistency. One can also use diagrams to further deduce and solve questions regarding the trends and outcomes of microscopic movements in the natural world, such as the birth, aging, sickness, and death of all things.

This differs from the methods used in modern physics for formulating and solving problems, and the results are also different. This also aligns with the descriptions of the Taiji diagram and the theory of harmony. We thus understand that the material

foundation of primordial celestial bodies is driven by forces—such as the force of qi—that propel, push, and create friction. Its underlying mechanism involves transforming into new mass and replicating more energy or force. Celestial bodies evolve step by step, progressing from simple to complex and from lower to higher levels. Among all things in the universe, those with greater mass or more appropriate methods become the unified field within this living field.

Nothing remains static. In time, they undergo a cyclical, orderly movement—a form of parity conservation. In space, however, they follow a disorderly, non-uniform, irregular, and asymmetrical elliptical motion—a form of disorderly development that represents parity non-conservation. Resolving this addresses all breakthrough issues in physics, including those concerning the cosmos and celestial bodies.

However, the current physical model of the universe—which posits it as expanding uniformly like an inflated balloon—has stifled Einstein's scientific thinking. If we describe this using the mathematical formula for the non-conservation of parity proposed by Chinese Professor Wang Yiping, as cited in \*Point-State Gauge Fields and Relativistic

**Structures\* (Proceedings of the 8th International Conference on Computational Methods, 2017):**

$$\text{Let } W = (1-\eta^2)Z \quad W_0 \quad (1)$$

$$\text{where: } (1-\eta^2)Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z + (1-\eta^2) - Z + (1-\eta^2)^0 Z \\ = \{1/2, 1\} \quad (0, 1);$$

$$(2)$$

$$(1-\eta^2)Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z - (1-\eta^2) - Z - (1-\eta^2)^0 Z = \\ \{1/2, 1\} \quad \{0, 1\};$$

$$(3)$$

$$(1-\eta^2)^0 Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z + (1-\eta^2) - Z = (1-\eta^2) + \\ Z - (1-\eta^2) - Z \quad (4)$$

**Combining Equation (1) with the system of equations yields:**

$$(1-\eta^2)Z = \{(0, 1/2, 1)(0, 1/2, 1)\} Z; \quad (5)$$

**According to the principle of energy**

**non-conservation,  $(1-\eta^2)+Z \neq (1-\eta^2)-Z$ . However, why do they equal each other in Equation (1)?**

**This is due to the asymmetry of energy: under conditions of constant mass, as the space changes upon passing through a singularity, energy exhibits asymmetry. In**

the formula:  $W$  represents the final, predicted condition;  $W_0$  represents the initial condition;  $(1-\eta^2)Z$  represents the data and the law of event change;  $(1-\eta^2)+Z$  represents the convergence of data and events;  $(1-\eta^2)0Z$  represents the point of sudden change, center, or limit point of data and events;  $(1-\eta^2)--Z$  represents the diffusion of data and events;

What is the relationship between Wuji and the Taiji Yin-Yang Diagram? Simply put, Wuji refers to the universe or events, forms, and outcomes that have not yet fully taken shape, and is explained solely in terms of its state of primordial chaos. The Taiji Yin-Yang Diagram, however, encompasses a broader scope than Wuji; it addresses the questions of how all things come into being from nothingness. For example, it explores the evolutionary process of how the universe originated and how it moves to transform into new matter and generate more energy.

The two arrow-like, fish-leaping shapes in the Tai Chi Yin-Yang diagram essentially represent the centripetal and centrifugal forces of physics. For example, how can there be a force of motion to evolve all things when there was nothing at all during the creation of the universe?

For instance, diffuse gas in the air disperses and evolves into turbulence, spiraling downward in a

centripetal motion to form a funnel-shaped black hole. Furthermore, the gas flow entering the black hole's void later evolved into two distinct fields through vortex formation: one centered on a "centripetal vortex," and another formed by the system's centrifugal force. For instance, when the system's centrifugal force pushes and friction against the black hole's inner wall generates heat, it evolves into new gaseous planets. Ejected by centrifugal forces to the opposite side of the black hole, these streams evolve into new gaseous planets of varying energy levels—dark planets, dark stars, and the like. As these dark planets rotate, they generate centrifugal forces, self-organizing into high-mass circular stellar systems.

The airflow outside the black hole, surrounding its outer shell, operates within the six-force field of an elliptical diagram—such as geographical advantage and the duration of time—where the central vortex swirls into various energy cyclonic clusters. These, in turn, evolve into the rotation of celestial bodies of varying masses, generating centrifugal forces of different magnitudes, and self-organize into a spiral galaxy pattern. Just as branches and twigs grow around a tree trunk and evolve into clusters of leaves, an explosive force akin to nuclear fusion occurs, causing the universe to evolve and expand



**toward infinity within the funnel-shaped black hole. There is no Big Bang origin.**

**It was not until thirty years later that scientific instruments captured images of the center of a black hole, revealing one small vortex acting as a centripetal force and another larger vortex acting as a centrifugal force. This confirmed the accuracy of the two centers in my elliptical diagram. Newton's theory posits two stationary points (or zero motion) with gravitational force, while Lich's theory describes a single point in circular motion with gravitational force. Both are unscientific conclusions.**

**My "centripetal vortex" and "centrifugal vortex" involve the mutual rotation of two or more points, which is necessary for the occurrence of pushing and friction, leading to the evolution of new phenomena or development. However, the English terms "convergence" and "divergence" are easily misleading, as they encourage problem-solving based on the idea that a balloon expands or contracts simultaneously under the force of inflation, which does not align with reality. In fact, universal gravitation originates from the creative suction or pulling force generated when centripetal vortices evolve into black holes. Otherwise, there would have been no universal gravitation in the early universe.**

The four types of motion—constant velocity, acceleration, irregular velocity, and deceleration—designed in the upper, lower, left, and right directions of the elliptical diagram represent the energy changes replicated during the motion of a mass. These are expressed by different names in various contexts, much like the Four Phases of the Bagua. They can also represent the transformation of forces into gravitational, electromagnetic, strong, and weak forces based on their magnitude in physics. It may also represent how the Earth's orbit around the Sun gives rise to the four seasons—spring, summer, autumn, and winter—and the cyclical, cyclical changes in climate, all of which serve as expressions of a single underlying principle.

The six distinct force-field planes depicted on the elliptical diagram [referred to in the Eight Trigrams as the "Six Gates," such as the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death] represent six process fields: the magnetic attraction field, the expansion force field, the regeneration force field, the magnetic repulsion field, the gravitational field, and the centripetal force field. This serves as a reminder to those formulating and solving problems (also based on the principle of relative numbers and relativity) regarding different masses and spatiotemporal force fields. Unlike the individual blades of a vortex, it

**is a dynamic field. It is a tool that visually represents the factors influencing the replication of energy—such as the magnitude of forces, duration of time, and favorable or unfavorable environmental conditions—experienced by objects in motion, thereby illustrating the laws of change occurring during the movement process. For example, consider the spatial dimensions of a human life as it progresses through six stages: infancy, adolescence, youth, middle age, prime, and old age. Within each of these stages, there are three levels of mass—large, medium, and small—corresponding to states such as work, rest, or illness, and the amount of energy or force replicated accordingly. Therefore, just as the mass in motion changes, the replicated energy and applied forces are not conserved. When formulating and solving problems, one must master these changing data points and apply them flexibly to the problems of the Theory of Formulation and Solution in order to arrive at the correct results.**

**For instance, the center of a unified field and the center of a mass-regeneration field, as well as the two "fish eyes" depicted on the Taijidiagram—labeled as Yin and Yang—and the centripetal and centrifugal forces in physics, all essentially convey the same concept. Furthermore, I have designed all types of fields to possess three levels of**

mass—large, medium, and small—which aligns perfectly with the method and purpose of the Bagua, where each hexagram consists of three lines, for addressing and resolving complex issues.

However, the 64 hexagrams of the Bagua are difficult for the average person to apply and have not been developed to the point of flexible use in physics. They are limited to matters such as Heaven, Earth, and Humanity, as practiced by hexagram masters.

Laozi' s \*Dao De Jing\* states: “The Dao gives birth to one; one gives birth to two; two gives birth to three; but three cannot give birth to four, because movement consumes energy.” If we apply Yin and Yang to physics, Yin represents energy—for instance, in formulating, solving, and analyzing continuously evolving structural problems in physics. Think of Yin as a woman, akin to a machine that produces a variety of different products, giving birth to several sons and daughters. However, since a boy cannot give birth to a child, your solution is inaccurate.

The four force fields on an elliptical diagram? For example, as the Earth' s surface evolves into a spring climate, the Earth' s core is pushed and frictioned by centrifugal rotational forces, generating heat. This triggers several electron clusters in the atmosphere above the surface, converting them into light and heat to create a hot

summer climate. Due to the slow movement of the North and South Poles, the climate remains cold, leading to atmospheric circulation. When the Earth's core moves irregularly, the resulting friction generates an irregular autumn climate. As tectonic plates rise from below and the core's movement within the mantle slows, the friction against the mantle's inner walls generates less heat, evolving into the cyclical winter climate. This, in turn, gives rise to different plants growing in different seasons, and as these plants evolve, they manifest multidimensional spaces such as birth, aging, sickness, and death.

In the divination of the I Ching, these four speeds are referred to as the Four Symbols, the Eight Gates, and the sixty-four hexagrams to predict events and the future. The calculation method begins with a counterclockwise, inward spiral from the bottom upward, followed by an outward, centrifugal spiral from the top downward. Although the two methods differ in their descriptions, their fundamental meaning and purpose are consistent. [It is akin to the five viscera and six bowels in the human body. Without their cooperation, a person cannot survive or perform further functions.

For example, a tomato has six chambers inside, while a melon has five small cavities. This determines the number of seeds produced. Similarly, the

centripetal force field represents the “death gate” of the Eight Trigrams; generally, it does not produce good seeds, and even if a few seeds are formed, they cannot bloom or bear fruit.) It is like a mother who gives birth to several children: some sons or daughters rise to high positions and amass wealth, while a few remain obscure their entire lives or even fail to have descendants.

The reason the I Ching’s Taijī diagram employs a three-line structure for divination stems from the nature of all things—such as the seed’s outer shell, the flesh within, and the inner kernel. The ancients interpreted the three lines as representing the Three Powers of Heaven, Earth, and Humanity, or the three primary conditions of left, center, and right.

The formulation and resolution of problems in unified field theory are even more applicable. This involves combining factors such as the magnitude of an object’s mass, the force acting upon it, its velocity, the duration of time, geographical conditions, and the type of means used to generate more energy—whether it be a bicycle or an airplane—to reach the destination. Furthermore, whenever the energy of accelerated motion reaches its limit, natural laws emerge, and within non-uniform periodic cycles, the amount of energy replicated is also determined. Consequently, the entity with the greater

mass becomes the unified field, and there is no fixed, unchanging conservation of energy.

Observe how the ancients flexibly applied the Taijī diagram based on their respective positions, developing their own cultural theoretical systems. For instance, Kīng Wen of Zhou utilized the 64 hexagrams of the \*I Chīng\* to describe methods for handling 64 major events. He used the six lines of each hexagram to outline the six key points or six stages for addressing each matter. For example, the "Shī" hexagram discusses how to wage war; the "Song" hexagram discusses how to litigate; the "Xun" hexagram discusses how to protect wealth; the "Dui" hexagram discusses how to find joy in safety; the "Well" hexagram explains how to meet the people's needs; the "Treading" hexagram explains how to navigate relationships with ministers; the "Approaching" hexagram explains how to oversee the realm; the "Decisive" and "Meeting" hexagrams explain how to assess rebellions; the "Adornment" hexagram explains how to arm oneself; the "Revolution" hexagram explains how to carry out a revolution; The Family Hexagram teaches how to manage one's wife and children and navigate social conventions. As Master Lī Mīngzhong of Guangdong, a scholar of the Eight Trigrams, has stated, these are merely a banner representing the political theories of imperial governance for

state-building and world order creatively expounded by Kīng Wen of Zhou.

Laozi of China took the Yin fish—a symbol in the Eight Trigrams that resembles an arrowhead rotating inward—and established the Five Elements (Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth) to evolve the Daoist philosophy that elevates all things to a philosophical height. This worldly, non-action philosophy emphasizes the unity of opposites and the fusion of opposing forces.

Confucius, on the other hand, drew upon the "Yang fish"—the upward-pointing arrow symbolizing centrifugal rotational force in the Taiji diagram—to establish Confucianism, centered on Benevolence, Righteousness, Ritual, Wisdom, and Trustworthiness. This philosophy advocates the "Golden Mean" of active engagement in the world, viewing it as the highest realm of moral cultivation.

Of course, when governing the country to consolidate stability and unity, their cultural systems also had imperfections. For instance, some people refused to heed the Confucian principles of benevolence, righteousness, propriety, wisdom, and integrity, nor could Buddhist teachings—such as the idea that killing, stealing, sexual misconduct, false speech, and alcoholism will ultimately bring retribution—persuade them. They did not believe in



the long-term benefits of the Taoist elements of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, and instead focused on punishing those who committed minor misdeeds that the law could not immediately address. They must be made to behave properly and must not be allowed to speak or act recklessly. Otherwise, the rule of law and authoritarian rule will be enforced.

Alternatively, flexibly apply the profound wisdom of Mao Zedong Thought to unify their thoughts and actions.

For instance, one must first distinguish whether the conflict is an internal contradiction among the people or a contradiction between the enemy and the people; whether it is a religious contradiction or an ethnic contradiction; or whether it is an economic contradiction or a conflict of personal interests. Different contradictions require different cultural approaches to resolution. For religious contradictions, one should first employ individuals knowledgeable in religious culture to resolve them, and even respect local ethnic customs and traditions when addressing the issue.

If it is an economic contradiction, we must use people who understand economic work to negotiate a solution, or use a little money to resolve issues of face. This way, contradictions within the people will

not be transformed into contradictions between the people and the enemy. This will be perfected into a grand unified culture of Tai Chi that treats both the symptoms and the root causes.

Had Fu Yi's Taiji diagram been explained more clearly from a physical perspective, it could have played a significant role in science and technology seven thousand years earlier.

The Bagua diagram is also incomplete; it is limited to the creation and interpretation of hexagrams, revealing only basic principles. Consequently, the unpredictable randomness inherent in the development of phenomena diminishes the scientific rigor of Taiji theory.

If, like the data in an elliptical motion trajectory diagram, it could allow people to grasp things at a glance—to deduce the past, present, and future movements of all things—and then combine this with factors such as the type of force acting on mass, the speed of motion, the duration of time, and the quality of the environment, and determine which tools to use to generate more energy for problem-solving, natural science might have advanced by 3,000 years. Quarks and free particles might even have been discovered first by the Chinese, and there would be no Nobel Prize left to award.

Although, decades ago, Professor Wang Xiyu of the

Chinese Academy of Sciences dedicated his entire life to painstaking research and finally used Tai Chi culture to solve 162 difficult problems in the natural world, offering insightful explanations. Yet he did not truly grasp the significance of the Tai Chi Yin-Yang diagram, and thus was unable to apply data such as “centripetal rotation” and “centrifugal rotation” from the elliptical diagram in unified field theory, nor to flexibly apply these concepts to problem-solving. Consequently, his achievements in physics could not be nominated for the Nobel Prize.

At the same time, the global community has conducted too little comprehensive research, application, and development of China’s Taiji moral culture, and the world remains somewhat unstable.

Looking back at the history of human development and our understanding of the universe, new theoretical perspectives with distinctive characteristics of their respective eras have emerged in every period. However, with the progress of society and technology, these theories have been superseded by groundbreaking new insights. Yet, in the history of human knowledge, the only concept that has endured over time and, with the advancement of modern technology, has increasingly proven to embody profound mysteries and truth is China’s “Taiji,” which has always been,

and will continue to be, grounded in moral culture. Therefore, "Taiji" is by no means merely a discipline for divination, fortune-telling, or prediction. In fact, it is a comprehensive body of knowledge and a universal worldview that encompasses all realms of heaven, earth, and humanity. The essence of "Taiji"—namely, centripetal and centrifugal forces, or the cosmic Yin-Yang field (Su)—establishes a universal theory through the interplay of opposing yet unified forces.

The above content is based solely on personal research and is provided for reference; please feel free to critique and correct any inaccuracies.

**References:**

The Complete Book of Changes and other materials [Wan Juan Publishing Company].

The elliptical diagram in the comprehensive discussion on the Theory of Unified Fields in \*Science and Technology Information\*, Issue 18, 2007, pp. 5—6.

"The Vast World" (ISSN 7-436-39240-9) [The Vanished Technological Civilization] and "30 Years Later." It was not until after the 2007 Spring Festival that I read a book on Qimen Dunjia written by a Hong Kong author, which added to my wisdom and strength.

**The Truth of the \*I Ching\*, by Mr. Li Mingzhong, a blogger.**

**"The Mysterious Morse Code and Ancient Hexagram and Line Characters" by Zhao Yuwen and Wang Dekui: A Research Paper by Experts.**

**Published in 2012 in the U.S. natural science journal**

**\*Taiji Talks About the World\*, a platform for academic competition in the fields of fiction and articles.  
<http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>**

**Dear Sun Chunwu:**

**We have read your article titled "My Understanding of the Taiji Bagua" in the journal**

**\*Academic Arena\*. It is impressive and has caught our attention. Your thinking, understanding of the discipline, problem-solving approach, and methodology are all outstanding. I am honored to invite you to submit your new article to ASSRJ. Journal of Advances in Social Science Research UK Department of Science and Education Services**

**August 18, 2019**

**Dear Sun Chunwu:**

**I am writing this email regarding your paper \*My Understanding and Application of the Tai Chi Diagram: A Contribution by Sun Chunwu\*. I came across your research online and found it highly commendable; I have shared its observations and findings with our scholars and scientists. Indeed, some outstanding research is currently underway in this field, and your innovative approach has the potential to inspire researchers and scientists.**

**Your pioneering exploration of new dimensions in your field has prompted me and our editorial board and management team to invite you to submit your new article to the European Journal of Applied Sciences (EJAS), published by the UK Science and Education Services (SSE-UK).**

**Online Submission | Manuscript via Email**

**August 16, 2022**



:

**Sun Chunwu (1948—), male (Han ethnicity), Jiangsu Province, China, primarily engaged in research in natural sciences, etc.;**

**Author' s Declaration: I hereby certify that I am the copyright holder of this work,**

**Affiliation: Jiangsu Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group Co., Ltd.**

Visiting Professor at the Talent Education and Training Center  
of the China Management Science Research Association

**Postal Code 225008 Email: yzscw0514@163.com WeChat ID: scw20171020**

**A Further Exploration of Research on Natural Science Modeling Theory 2**

**Sun Chunwu**

**Abstract: Many challenges in the natural sciences have long**

puzzled scientists. Einstein, however, focused his thinking on the search for a unified field that would encompass gravity, electromagnetism, the strong nuclear force, and the weak nuclear force. Consequently, he was unable to first establish a unified field theory and then analyze and explain which force, being the most massive, unified these forces to generate new forms of matter.

Keywords: Diffuse gas, Centripetal force, Centrifugal force,

Funnel-shaped black hole

Elliptical Diagram; Mass; Energy; Force; Tools; Atomic Evolution; Planets; Galaxies; Density Waves; Eccentric

Vortex Engine;

In the natural sciences, establishing and solving physical problems typically involves observation, experimentation, modeling, mathematical reasoning, and prediction. The following is a concrete example demonstrating how to use the natural sciences to solve a physical problem.

Suppose we are trying to solve a problem regarding the free-fall motion of an object. This is a classic physics problem that can be solved using natural science methods.

Step 1: Observation and Experiment

First, we observe an object in free fall, such as an apple falling from a tree. We record the object's trajectory and note that it follows an accelerated linear path. Next, we conduct experiments to measure the time and distance of the fall and record these values.

Step 2: Modeling

Next, we establish a mathematical model to describe this physical process. In this example, we can use Newton's Second Law ( $F = ma$ ) and the Law of Universal Gravitation ( $F = G(m_1 m_2)/r^2$ ) to build the model.



For free-fall motion, the gravitational force acting on the object is the only force, and can be expressed as:

$$F = mg$$

where  $m$  is the mass of the object and  $g$  is the acceleration due to gravity.

According to Newton's Second Law, we can express the object's acceleration as:

$$a = F/m = g$$

Therefore, the acceleration of an object in free fall is constant and equal to the gravitational acceleration  $g$ .

Step 3: Mathematical Reasoning

With the model established, we can use mathematical methods to describe the object's motion. In free fall, the relationship between the object's displacement  $s$  and time  $t$  can be expressed by the following formula:

$$s = \frac{1}{2} * g * t^2$$

This formula is derived by integrating the acceleration  $a$ .

Step 4: Prediction

Finally, we can use this formula to predict the displacement of an object over a given time period. For example, if we know the value of gravitational acceleration  $g$  and the time  $t$  during which the object falls, we can use this formula to calculate the distance  $s$  the object falls.

This is an example of using natural science to formulate and solve physics problems. Through observation, experimentation, modeling, mathematical reasoning, and prediction, we can gain a deeper understanding of physical phenomena,

Why are events depicted with large circles and divided into six force fields? This illustrates the process of an event occurring; for example, assume a centripetal rotating airflow draws a circle with a diameter of 5 centimeters, and its

unfolded circumference is approximately 16 centimeters. This is referred to as a magnetic attraction force field.

The expanding force field of the diffusing gas initially accelerates downward. The airflow forms a circle with a diameter of 5.5 cm and a circumference of approximately 18 cm, designated as the expansion force field.

The diffusing air gains further acceleration downward; the circle drawn has a diameter of 6.5 cm and an unfolded circumference of approximately 21 cm. This segment is designated as a regenerative force field.

As the diffuse gas completes its centripetal rotation, the circle shrinks to 6 cm in diameter, with an unfolded circumference of approximately 19 cm; this segment is designated as the irregular force field. This represents accelerated evolution resulting in a strong force, with upward motion that does not contract or bend centripetally, but continues to rotate centrifugally. If the acceleration produces less energy, the diffuse gas rotates upward in a centripetal manner, decelerating and contracting in a centripetal curve. This forms a circle with a diameter of 5.3 cm and a circumference of approximately 17 cm, designated as the gravitational force field.

The diffuse gas continues to rotate upward, contracting and curving even more centripetally. Draw a circle with a diameter of 4.8 cm; when unfolded, the circumference is 15 cm, known as the centripetal force field. This also generates centripetal force.

Adding up the lengths of the various fields yields approximately 106; this is depicted as a large elliptical circle

with a diameter of about 32 cm. This represents the origin of the energy that the six force fields can replicate, serving as a reference for experts studying this issue—such as when an object is moved into a certain field and subjected to factors like duration, force, velocity, environmental conditions, and the tools used—to determine the amount of energy replicated.

This attempt to correlate the process of motion with the properties of “force fields” reflects a meticulous observation of physical phenomena and a personalized interpretation.

From a scientific research perspective, this aligns with how “forces” in physics—such as gravitational and electromagnetic forces—are typically defined based on measurable interactions and their effects on an object’s motion. Concepts like “expansion force” and “regenerative force” in the natural sciences first require clarifying the object’s mass, applied force, velocity, duration, environmental conditions, and the tools used to replicate

more energy. Then, by integrating multiple dimensions—such as Newton’s laws, the conservation of energy, Einstein’s parity non-conservation, or Yang Zhenning’s gauge fields, along with chemistry and other disciplines, to

analyze and quantify the trajectories of motion and morphological changes, and to construct a theoretical framework for the natural sciences is highly valuable.

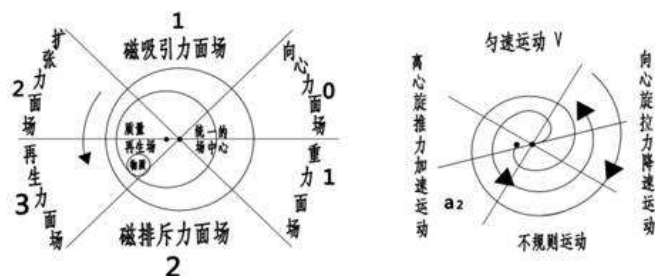
Therefore, based on my discoveries while inventing the eccentric vortex engine, I developed an elliptical diagram for

modeling, problem-setting, and problem-solving. I also designed the diagram to be divided into six force fields, which represent: first, the magnitude of mass; second, the type of force applied; third, whether the velocity is accelerating or decelerating; and fourth, the duration of time.fifth, the geographical conditions; and the use of tools—such as bicycles or airplanes—to replicate more energy. Reaching different locations will yield different results or consequences. By integrating existing physical laws with Professor Wang Yiping’ s circular logarithms, equations,and the arrows, text, and non-mathematical symbols depicted in the diagram, this approach enables the formulation and resolution of problems involving continuous development and evolution. This allows people to reason and deduce the past, present, and future of all things—whether in macro- or micro-scale movements—using simple imagery and mathematical logic, much like calculating with an abacus, thereby inspiring practitioners to apply these concepts flexibly. For example, the following is not a mathematical formula:

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{max} \\ \text{Kg} \neq \text{m} \cdot \text{a}^2 \cdot \text{t} \\ \text{Min} \end{array} \right.$$

kg  $\neq$  m•a<sup>2</sup>•t The right +Z  $\neq$

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



The theory of elliptical diagrams, formulas, and the unified field condenses the processes of formation, movement, and evolution of phenomena—including the emergence of newforms—into elliptical graphics and simple formulas. This encompasses the unity and transformation of thesis, antithesis, and synthesis, teaching you to flexibly utilize various data within the diagrams (including computer-generated data) to formulate, solve, and theorize about various problems, as well as to summarize past developments and predict future trends.

What is the unified field? Mathematicians have refined and abstracted the Yang-Mills gauge field as a mathematical model. The author's unified field: integrates mass, energy, and space into a single abstract field, using "living structures" (such as planets, atoms, nations, and individuals) as carriers. It follows the rule of "energy/mass dominance," generating inertial forces and interactions (such as electromagnetic and gravitational forces) through spin and orbital motion, thereby achieving the positioning of

surrounding objects, unified action, and the transmission of energy and force.

The core functional entity of the unified field: the entity that occupies and consumes the most energy (such as the center of a galaxy, the nucleus of an atom, or a nation's

central government) serves as the dominant force within the

field, capable of precisely explaining the laws governing the mass, velocity, and distance of surrounding objects.

A unified field? Typically, objects that possess and consume more energy—such as the Earth's rotational pole and the Sun's orbital pole, the oscillation at the center of an atom, a nation's central government, or an individual's decision-making—are considered to possess the functional characteristics of a unified field. This enables accurate mathematical explanations of various surrounding conditions, such as the mass of celestial bodies, the speed of their motion, and their distance from the center of the galaxy, such as the mass and size of celestial bodies, the speed of their motion, and their distance from the center of the galaxy.

Unified Field Theory: A theoretical framework constructed around "events and challenges within the unified field" (such as variations in the speeds of celestial bodies), comprising three components: the theory of the unified field, elliptical diagrams, and problem-solving formulas. It is used to elucidate the microscopic logic and natural/cyclical laws governing the formation and development of all things.

The size of the large circle in the diagram represents its mass during calculation, as well as conditions such as the magnitude of centripetal and centrifugal forces.

The cavity field within the small circle off-center in the diagram represents the turning point and point of sudden change between positive and negative fields, indicating that it is a field where mass and space combine to regenerate. Just as tools and weapons used by people are figuratively employed to replicate energy, force, or regenerate new entities, this field can only replicate exact copies of the original mass—like a document containing exactly the same number of characters—without altering the original mass. This is because it is not a transformative system.

It possesses unified standards for mass and spacetime; the greater the vitality of the field, or the more the field structure is deflected by the system's centrifugal force, or the greater the mass and spacetime of the tools or weapons used, the more energy or force it replicates.

Conversely, when the field is small, or when objects are moved toward the gravitational field, the centripetal force field, or toward the center, the amount of force replicated decreases.

The four types of motion speeds shown in the figure—constant, accelerating, irregular, and decelerating—can also represent the conversion of gravitational, electromagnetic, strong, and weak forces, or the evolution of seasonal changes (spring, summer, autumn, and winter).

The mass and spacetime within the void in the diagram can also be regarded as mass and spacetime converted from the friction and displacement forces exerted by the system. Whenever it is moved by centrifugal force into a specific field, the greater the mass and spacetime, the more force is replicated; when the mass and spacetime are small or the centrifugal force is weak, the replicated force is reduced, or the mass and spacetime converted after synthesis are diminished. Therefore,

its motion is influenced not only by its surroundings—such as the environment, tools, and weapons—but is also constrained by its own mass. Furthermore, it cannot independently perform work on the forces it replicates.

The six types of fields (relative numbers—principle of relative comparison) depicted in the diagram, each with distinct mass and spacetime force planes, indicate that the mass within the field—or the time of the spinning system of all things—exhibits a monistic, primordial, ordered circular motion. In space, however, it exhibits disordered motion, meaning it develops in both positive and negative directions. When hypothesizing, analyzing, or discussing a specific mass within a field, one must consider the mass regeneration field and determine whether the unified field corresponds to a large, medium, or small mass. Additionally, one must account for the magnitude of centripetal and centrifugal forces—or the friction between them—as depicted in another diagram, as well as factors such as the nature of events (good or bad, positive or negative), or whether the issue concerns atoms, protons, or other entities. This must be integrated with the techniques of the 64 hexagrams of the I Ching—such as the so-called yin and yang lines—to yield correct results in calculations. Elliptical diagrams, or even the 162 hexagram variations, are used to formulate and solve problems. This is

because the unified field theory aims to refine the I Ching's

Eight Trigrams, such as yin and yang.

The topmost part of the large circle in the diagram represents the beginning of mass and the movement of time within spacetime, or an object moving under such conditions. Since it exhibits no change in force, it is termed the magnetic



attraction surface field. The force it replicates is denoted by the number 1, indicating uniform motion.

On one side of the upper part of the diagram, turbulence occurs between mass and spacetime, accelerating downward and generating a thrust of 2. This is called the expansion force field.

Below this, accelerated inertia causes the mass to generate additional forces, such as increasing the Earth's ellipticity. This is called the strong force field or the regenerative force field, and it generates thrust 3.

In summary, this side generates centrifugal force-accelerated motion.

The bottom section of the diagram represents the magnetic repulsion force field. When a mass moves through this field in space-time, or at a specific point in time, centripetal force dominates when the system's spin is slowest, while centrifugal force dominates when the spin is fastest. The replicated force becomes irregular and is reduced to 2. (In practical applications, it should be positioned such that as speed increases, the force increases beyond 2.) This is most evident during the year when the Earth's non-uniform rotation is at its fastest: tectonic plate movements are highly variable, the geomagnetic field is irregular, and the replication of underground water is at its peak. Earthquakes occur more frequently, with higher magnitudes and greater destructive power; this also makes it easier for operators to lose control under identical conditions and at the same speed, leading to incidents such as car accidents and the crash of aircraft flying over this region.

Therefore, the gases in the vortex utilize inertial force to overcome the magnetic repulsion field and move upward toward the gravitational field on the opposite side.

Since the agent performing the work has no energy or force to supplement it, the energy replicated is 1. This is called the gravitational field.

In the upper part of this field, mass completely loses its ability to perform work and is consumed by forces such as friction and gravity; the gas contracts and curves toward the center during its inertial motion, and the replicated force is 0. On this side of the figure, it performs decelerating elliptical motion.

This elliptical motion is physically referred to as centripetal motion, and thus, a centripetal force is generated.

It is akin to a ping-pong ball falling from a height of one meter onto a hard surface; after each bounce and loss of energy, its height still exceeds the radius of the center. Thus, the airflow rotates in a shrinking circular pattern above the central height, self-winding into a large outer ring similar to the circular ring evolved from cosmic radiation.

Later, the hot gas reaching the top surface of the large outer ring does not follow the path of the circle with high energy consumption; instead, it naturally splits from the top surface of the elliptical ring and moves downward on both sides, circling in a figure-eight tapered vortex trajectory. In addition to its own mass, it utilizes the advantageous conditions of the taper to generate forces such as inertial force and centrifugal rotational force, thereby accelerating toward the center in a circular motion. Since both inertial force and centrifugal force are forces evolved by the system, they do not require an external source of energy.

Consequently, the centripetal vortex of the airflow forms a complete spherical shell.

When any substance aggregates, there are voids between the particles on the surface of the spherical shell, as well as a large void inside the shell. The presence of these voids serves three functions: First, the small voids on the surface of the spherical shell cause the internal and external temperatures and pressures to be uneven. Second, external hot air currents continuously flow toward the low-pressure center of the voids, swirling inward to form cyclonic clusters. These are contained within the small circular voids. In practice, this creates two types of field centers: one formed by centripetal force vortices is called the unified field center (similar to a central government). When energy issues arise in the field's movement, this center unifies all forces and transmits the effects of wisdom energy.

The other center, formed by the system's centrifugal force propelling mass outward in parabolic motion, is called the center of the mass regeneration field. It serves to replicate more energy or force.

I described these two centers in my 2009 English-language paper, *\*Establishment of the Unified Field Theory\**, published in the academic arena of Marsland Press in the U.S. More than a decade later, scientific instruments have finally captured images showing that the centers of black holes within the hollow of a funnel-shaped structure also exhibit mutual rotational motion. One forms a small vortex cluster driven by centripetal force, while the other forms a larger vortex cluster driven by centrifugal force. This proves the correctness of my elliptical diagram. Because Newton's model involves two points at rest or zero motion, yet still exhibits gravity. Rich's model involves a single point in circular motion, which also exhibits gravity. My

concept of centripetal and centrifugal forces pertains to the mutual orbital motion of two or more points, which generates pushing and friction, thereby replicating more energy and enabling the evolution or development of things. However, when the English terms "convergence" and "divergence" are expressed using Chinese characters, it is easy to be misled into imagining a scenario where a balloon simultaneously contracts and expands—which makes the explanation inconsistent. This is because within a sphere, the inward motion (toward the center) and the outward motion (away from the center) are both forms of a single point accelerating forward; the actual gravitational force stems from the suction or pulling force generated by the vortex.

Consequently, evolution has resulted in a trinity of structures—an outer shell, a small inner cavity, and a small vortex within the cavity—which, when referred to as an "atom," allows for the solution of the problem.

If performing a second calculation or analysis of the motion, one should first determine the mass entering the center, the mass expelled by the system's centrifugal force to perform work, and the replicated force derived from the distance from the center. Then, using this new value, multiply the inertial energy sequentially. This causes the rotational speed to gradually increase, shifting from an elliptical motion—which consumes less energy—toward a circular motion that consumes more energy. As shown in the elliptical diagram's six force fields (1, 2, 3, 2, 1, 0), one should add 0.25 to the magnetic repulsion

force field 2, 0.05 to the gravitational force field 1, 0.75 to the centripetal force field 0, 0.05 to the magnetic attraction force field 1, and 0.25 to the expansion force field 2. No adjustments are made to the regenerative force field. For example, sunspots

within the Sun, moving upward repeatedly, generate more force through replication, increasing the number of sunspots on the Sun's surface and enhancing their thrust. This causes the Sun to evolve from an elliptical sphere into a massive spherical body, expanding and growing in size. Alternatively, this can be described using the circular logarithmic mathematical formula developed by the late Chinese professor Wang Yiping, as cited in *\*Point-State Standard Fields and Relativistic Structures\** (Proceedings of the 8th International Conference on Computational Methods, 2017):

We have:  $W = (1-\eta^2)Z \quad W_0$

(1)

Where:  $(1-\eta^2)Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z + (1-\eta^2) - Z + (1-\eta^2)^0 Z = \{1/2, 1\} \{0, 1\};$  (2)

$(1-\eta^2)Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z \cdot (1-\eta^2) - Z \cdot (1-\eta^2)^0 Z = \{1/2, 1\} \{0, 1\};$  (3)

$(1-\eta^2)^0 Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z + (1-\eta^2) - Z = (1-\eta^2) + Z \cdot (1-\eta^2) - Z$  (4)

Combining Equation (1) with the system of equations

y

ields:  $(1-\eta^2)Z = \{(0, 1/2, 1)(0, 1/2, 1)\} Z;$

(

5)

According to the principle of energy non-conservation,  $(1-\eta^2)+Z \neq (1-\eta^2)-Z$ . However, why do they equal each other in Equation (1)? This is due to the asymmetry of energy: under conditions of constant mass, as the space changes upon passing through a singularity, energy exhibits asymmetry.

In the equation:  $W_{\text{final}}$  represents the predicted condition;  $W_0$  represents the initial condition;  $(1-\eta^2)Z$  represents data and the pattern of event changes;  $(1-\eta^2) + Z$  represents data and the convergence of event changes;  $(1-\eta^2)^0 Z$  represents data

and the point of sudden change, center point, or limit point of the event;  $(1-\eta^2) - Z$  represents data and the diffusion of

event changes;

[The description of expansion is inaccurate; it refers to parabolic expansion motion, not the balanced expansion of an

inflated balloon.]

Formulas and diagrams inspire you to formulate and solve problems. “ $\neq$ ” informs problem-solvers that, within the velocity of mass movement within a system, there is a limit to the replication of energy or force. With this limit, one can understand phenomena such as birth, aging, sickness, and death, as well as the varying speeds of non-uniform periodic time. Whether in the past, present, or future; whether in galaxies or atoms; whether in animals or plants; whether at the macro or micro level—“ $\neq$ ” reveals that they all contain two contradictory aspects, such as fast and slow. The transformation of these contradictions lies in the speed, while time serves to harmonize them.

Therefore, when formulating and solving physical problems within a structure—considering factors such as mass, forces, velocity, and time, as well as the specific environmental conditions and tools utilized—the “ $\neq$ ” also indicates that movements on opposite sides of a rotational axis are subject to different converging or diverging forces. This applies to diverse phenomena such as the merging and splitting of photons and positive/negative ions, biological growth and decay, and the formation and regeneration of cosmic black holes. Based on these new figures, we must clarify the specific processes and conditions under which each phenomenon arises, and determine which forces are involved in their synthesis and replication. This requires discussing them in different forms, calculating them

with different formulas, or addressing each case individually to resolve the issues.

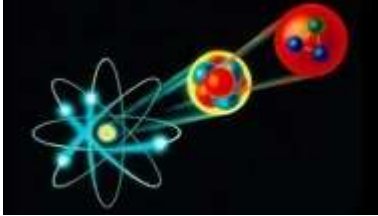
Therefore, with the theories of natural science, elliptical diagrams, and the abundance of critical data within the formulas, researchers can clearly understand that the material foundation of primordial celestial bodies is the motion governed by specific forces. The relationships between celestial bodies are also based on mutual interaction; the family of celestial bodies, encompassing all things, follows the relatively unified laws of elliptical convergence and hyperbolic divergence (collectively referred to as "elliptical"). Its underlying mechanism and transformation are as follows: mass and spacetime, through a sudden transformation (physically termed the massless Higgs boson), generate energy; celestial bodies evolve step by step from simple to complex, and from lower to higher levels. In the universe, whether it be all things or celestial bodies, whichever possesses greater mass or employs the appropriate method becomes the unified field within this living, unified field. Nothing remains static. They manifest as the sequence of elliptical motion—uniform and non-uniform, regular and irregular, symmetric and asymmetric, continuous and discontinuous. To deconstruct and understand the physics of celestial bodies, one must first refine physical theories to resolve the issues. Once all breakthrough issues in physical theory are resolved, it becomes clear that gravity, electromagnetism, the strong nuclear force, and the weak nuclear force are unified. They manifest as variations in the magnitude of inertial forces replicated within a living field; there is no external field that unifies or develops them.

This clarifies their properties and the nature of the problems arising within specific motion structures. Whether it is

linear motion, accelerated motion on an inclined plane, or arbitrary elliptical motion, we can then analyze their movements with a comprehensive, systematic, interconnected, and developmental perspective—such as the various random phenomena emitted by planets moving within the unified field of a galaxy. It also provides a simple and efficient method to explain why motion in a particular field exhibits differences in speed—whether faster or slower. At the same time, the theory of natural science synthesizes and flexibly applies various theories—such as Newton's and Einstein's concepts of mass-energy equivalence, quantum theory, and string theory—to formulate and solve problems.

The theory of natural science is a universal theory. Once it gains widespread acceptance and application, it will establish a more magnificent framework—much like a continuous reinforced concrete structure—enabling the construction of new scientific edifices in philosophy, physics, and other fields to formulate and solve problems. It will also lead to the invention of the perpetual motion machine, ushering in a new era of moralized scientific advancement that benefits humanity.

**Example 1: How does the atomic structure evolve and develop?**



The atomic diagram on 360.com was captured in early 2025 by a camera invented by American scientists, revealing the structure of the atom.



As diffuse gas spreads through the air, turbulence causes it to swirl inward, forming a funnel-shaped black hole.

A large cavity within a black hole. Assuming a diameter of 100 kilometers; the circumference is calculated as only 300 kilometers, and the mass is divided into six different force fields. Each segment is calculated to be approximately 45 kilometers in length. Diffuse gas spirals inward toward the large void within the black hole, continuously forming about ten cyclonic clusters. These are successively ejected from the black hole by centrifugal force, evolving into new celestial bodies with varying energy levels, such as white dwarfs. On the opposite side of the force field, gas flows upward from below, consuming significant energy and decelerating as it spirals inward to form individual cyclonic clusters with lower energy. These later evolve into dark planets, among others. Thus, within the six force fields, celestial bodies of various masses evolve.

Around the outer wall of the black hole, air currents—such as those on one upper side—accelerate downward. Upon encountering resistance from the cold air ahead, they swirl inward, forming massive atmospheric vortex clusters that evolve into objects like white dwarfs and giant stars.

Hot air currents accelerate to the lower side of the other side of the black hole; the air currents spiral upward, decelerate, and curve in a centripetal direction, swirling into cyclonic clusters and evolving into dark planets. The air currents then spiral upward again, entering the centripetal force field and swirling into cyclonic clusters, emitting light that shines toward

the outer wall of the black hole—a dimmer light—evolving into a great winter ice age.

Air currents outside the black hole's mouth also spiral inward toward the black hole, forming a vortex cluster positioned on the smaller side of the black hole's elliptical

interior. This vortex cluster is called centripetal force; it is

spun into a vortex cluster by centrifugal force. Inside the black hole, there are also six different force fields and masses. Planets formed by the swirling of these six distinct cyclonic clusters, through compression and friction, are ejected into the void of the black hole and evolve into new planets with greater mass than those formed outside the black hole.

It is like branches and twigs growing around a tree trunk and leaves evolving one by one. Just as potatoes form beneath the roots. An explosive force akin to nuclear fusion occurs, with each cluster spinning and evolving into a centrifugal vortex. Just as a well evolves into gaseous, liquid, and solid planets, they are gradually spun by centrifugal forces into spiral galaxy patterns, then further evolve into elliptical and barred spiral galaxies. This drives the universe to evolve and expand infinitely. The universe did not originate from the Big Bang

As shown in the elliptical diagram, gas in the magnetic attraction field moves downward toward the expansion force field and the regenerative force field. Due to an accelerating centrifugal thrust present in these two force fields, objects continuously operate under accelerating inertial forces, replicating mass to generate more regenerative energy or

inertial force. This causes the gas to cross the magnetic repulsion field even faster and move upward toward the gravitational field.

Conversely, the gas encounters opposing forces. As it moves toward the gravitational field, it gradually increases its contraction and curvature, moving in an elliptical path. This elliptical motion is physically known as centripetal motion, resulting in a centripetal rotational force that accelerates the gas into a vortex circling toward the center.

It is akin to a ping-pong ball falling from a height of one meter; although it loses about 20 to 30 centimeters with each bounce, the height still exceeds the 50-centimeter radius of a circle centered at one meter. Consequently, the swirling airflow continuously accelerates, forming a vortex resembling a funnel-shaped black hole.

The airflow entering the black hole cavity through the centripetal spiral funnel is accelerated by the system's inertial forces and vortex replication into a cyclonic cluster, which is then ejected from the black hole and evolves into a new celestial body, such as a white dwarf. On the opposite side of the force field, air currents move upward from below, consuming significant energy and decelerating. These currents spiral inward to form a low-energy spherical cluster, which later evolves into a dark planet. Thus, within these six force fields, celestial bodies of various masses evolve—much like branches and leaves sprouting from a tree trunk. This generates explosive forces akin to nuclear fusion. Around each spherical cluster, gaseous, liquid, and solid planets evolve. Step by step, driven by centrifugal rotational forces, they swirl into galactic structures, evolving into elliptical and barred spiral galaxies, causing the universe to

expand endlessly.

Thus, in the origin of the universe and the birth of blackholes, the exemplary role of inherited wisdom is evident: just as diffuse gas swirls and replicates into cyclonic clusters, evolving into atoms, external hot gas flows spiraled inward toward the low-temperature void at the atom's center, where they were swirled into small cyclonic clusters. As each was pushed outward by the system's centrifugal force, it inevitably collided with hot gas flows entering from every small void in the atomic shell, generating friction and heat. This caused water molecules to form at the boundary between hot and cold. Consequently, the mass of the gas entering the cavity's center changes, and as the system's vortex force grows ever stronger, it replicates more structures resembling rain nuclei or spherical formations. Meanwhile, water molecules from the exterior of the rain nucleus flow toward its central cavity, where they are spun and replicated into water by the rain nucleus.

As hot gas flows continuously from the exterior of the spherical shell into the cavity, it intensifies the system's friction and heat generation, producing high temperatures that convert the water into new gas. The presence of this new gas strengthens the system's forces, accelerating the rotation of the inner shell. Through continuous friction and heat generation under even higher temperatures and pressures, the new gas evolves into chemical bonds and individual solid-state molecules. These are then swirled into small clusters, evolving into solid-state subatomic shells.

At this stage, the diffuse gas evolves from the spatial field into the physical field of the atom, further enhancing its transformation and replication capabilities; it does not necessarily manifest in a vortex form.

Assuming the atomic shell has a diameter of 10 nanometers, the radius of the atomic center should be 5 nanometers. When the external diffuse gas or small molecules are accelerated by centripetal force through small pores in the shell toward the low-temperature center, their estimated volume is unlikely to exceed one-thousandth of a nanometer. Calculating the circumference based on one percent of this volume, the distance from the small pores on the atomic wall to the center can be divided into at least ten segments. In each segment, the hot gas flow spirals inward to form an even smaller subatomic particle.

Since the atomic spin system generates centrifugal force, pushing or repelling the central object outward, the hot gas flow on the other side of the atom is unable to enter the atomic cavities. Therefore, it is impossible for subatomic particles to form on this side.

On the other side of the atom, along half of the spherical shell, there is a shell composed of at least thirty small molecules. Consequently, every time a stream of hot air enters through the small cavities between molecules, it spirals toward the atom's low-temperature center, replicating approximately several hundred subatomic spheres. This is akin to how, when air enters the human heart, it instantly replicates dozens of white blood cells through a vortex.

These subatomic spheres are then evolved by the atomic system into a collective of atomic nuclei. This forms the atomic structure's trinity: the outer shell, the inner ring of cavities, and the atomic nuclei within the cavities.

The external hot airflow continues to flow unceasingly toward the low-temperature center of the atomic cavity, resulting in the principle that whatever has greater mass

becomes the unified field. First, as subatomic particles in the transition layer spin, they generate a vortex suction force. Much like “those closest to the water get the moon first,” this force draws the hot airflow into the subatomic cavities. As these hot air currents swirl in a centripetal vortex, they interact with the airflow generating centrifugal force within the system, causing friction and heat generation that produces even higher temperatures and pressures. This process transforms the new gas into small molecules in a solid state. These are then replicated by the vortex into more subatomic particles, or stored within the subatomic shell, thereby enhancing the subatomic particles’ descent from the upper regions of the atom toward the atomic nucleus. By this point, the atomic nucleus has been spun by the system into a tightly structured cluster, effectively serving as a springboard for the subatomic particles’ hard landing. Like a grazing shot, they skim past along a tangential path, colliding with the inner wall of the opposing atom. Due to the atom’s large mass, the collision causes only a vibration, which rebounds the subatomic particles. However, they cannot rebound to their original height and instead settle onto the atomic nucleus.

Since the subatomic shell is also composed of several small molecular rings arranged in a circular pattern, the downward force causes several small molecules within the subatomic cavity to push one after another, increasing the force propelling them toward the front of the spherical shell. This increases the mass density at the front, resulting in a greater force when it strikes the inner wall of the atom. This force can be calculated to be at least three times the mass of the subatomic particle. Since there are dozens or even hundreds of subatomic particles on this surface of the atom, continuously rushing downward, they repeatedly apply thrust to the atom’s spin.

When the individual small molecules in the subatomic cavity are rebounded upon impact, they do not have time to make a sharp turn and rush forward again. Consequently, the reaction force consumes the applied force, causing the rebound force to diminish with each instance until the molecules eventually follow a parabolic trajectory and land in the middle of the atomic inner wall. The subatomic particles accelerate downward along the curvature of the atomic inner wall. They are then subjected to the system's centrifugal and eccentric forces, continuously pushing the individual small molecules within the subatomic cavity toward the front edge of the shell—much like the force arm of an eccentric or lever. As the mass is constantly shifted to the eccentric side and accelerates, the subatomic mass generates additional energy, which also acts as a force. Consequently, its velocity exceeds that of a tangential motion that merely glides past, enabling it to return to a higher position and perform work by moving downward once more.

Since tangential motion is linear, it only generates a single force.

Of course, some subatomic particles with small masses fall

into the atomic nucleus and remain there after being bounced back. However, at this point, the atom and the atomic nucleus have been subjected to at least three forces. For instance, each downward acceleration and collision causes the atom and the atomic nucleus to bounce and vibrate once, resulting in three different energy outcomes. First, when an atom is bounced back and lands on the atomic nucleus, it causes several subatomic particles or individual small molecules within the nucleus to push against each other, generating friction and heat. 2. When rebounded, the small molecules within the subatomic voids, as well as the subatomic particles themselves, collide, push against

one another, and generate heat and electricity through friction. Individual subatomic particles are thus transformed into what are known as “electron spheres.” 3. The hot gas produced by friction within the atom, or individual subatomic particles, accelerates toward areas of lower temperature and pressure. In reality, there are no electrons. However, to align with the principles of physics, we proceed to discuss the generation of electricity.

As electrons accelerate from high-temperature to low-temperature regions or from the upper to the lower parts of the atom, moving toward the opposite side of the atomic center, the small molecules within the electron void are also propelled forward by centrifugal force. This causes friction and heat generation between the molecules, transforming the electrons into protons—which are said to possess higher energy. [In reality, this should be understood as follows: within the atom, a centripetal force acts on one side, causing small molecules to accelerate toward the lower-temperature region, while at the center, small molecules are propelled outward by a centrifugal force generated by the system. The mutual jostling and friction between them generates heat, which in turn causes high-energy protons to be produced on the opposite side.]

At this point, some iron elements within the proton cavity generate magnetism through friction and compression. Alternatively, under different high-temperature and high-pressure conditions, various chemical bonds are formed. For example, some small molecules within the proton may be fused into larger clusters by high temperatures, or they may be held together by the magnetic force generated through friction and compression. This results in the formation of electron clusters composed of multiple small molecules. With these



high-mass electron clusters, the accelerating force becomes even more powerful. For instance, when small molecules enter the interior of an electron cluster, they inevitably encounter small molecules being ejected by the system's centrifugal force, and their mutual friction generates heat and light. Although this phenomenon vanishes as quickly as a whirlwind on the ground. However, the hot air currents and small molecules outside the atom constantly accelerate and circle toward the atom's low-temperature core. Consequently, the atomic core continuously replicates more electron clusters. Each one is then pushed and rubbed by centrifugal force, converting into an instantaneous burst of light and heat.

However, this conversion process does not consume the atom's internal energy; rather, it enables electrons to accelerate from high-temperature, high-pressure regions toward low-temperature, low-pressure zones in a single flow. People have confirmed that this beautiful phenomenon—known as electric current—performs work. This strengthens the atomic system's rotational capacity, causing small subatomic particles, elliptical spheres, and irregular spherical bodies within the atomic nucleus to be successively ejected along parabolic trajectories by centrifugal force.

Thus, within the atom, while centripetal rotational forces systematically replicates electrons on one side, centrifugal rotational force pushes and fricts them into protons on the other, causing them to move continuously within the upper and lower magnetic fields. This breaks the magnetic field lines of the rotating central object, converting mechanical energy into the so-called ability of electric current to accelerate motion.

This gives rise to natural laws within the atom: for instance, gases and high temperatures not only fill the internal

voids of the atom but are also forced by high-speed centrifugal forces to the edge of the atomic shell. The gases and high temperatures then escape through tiny voids in the shell wall, causing the atomic system to cool and depressurize, while the genetic energy it provides is also significantly reduced. At this point, the four fundamental forces—friction, attraction, and gravity—are unified, and none of them can perform work, causing the rotation to slow down.

Assuming an atomic mass of one jin, when accelerated to 1,000 revolutions per minute, the weight of the small molecules and the large outer shell surrounding the atomic center has evolved into a greater inertial force, making it impossible for the atom to stop instantly. This creates the time within the spatial process of work for the forces to readjust and for the motion structure to reorganize. As subatomic particles move upward, they contract and curve toward the center, performing non-uniform periodic motion, which gives rise to the periodicity of different elements.

Furthermore, when several subatomic particles within the atomic nucleus are ejected, they form a collective force that results in a collision. At this point, the forces within the atom transform from the electromagnetic force generated by electrons into the nuclear force.

In other words, as individual subatomic particles are subjected to "centripetal rotational forces" and "centrifugal rotational forces," the friction and heat generated by their pushing and rubbing create high-temperature, high-pressure energy. This energy paves a so-called "magnetic field highway," generating even more electric charge. First, clusters of matter and individual subatomic particles within atomic voids undergo a chain reaction of nuclear fusion—hydrogen

combustion—resulting in an explosion or collapse. These are then stored in outer space.

Consequently, the universe evolves from nothingness into atoms, and further into darker celestial bodies of greater mass and red giant liquid spheres.

Example 2: Why do spiral arms with different rotational speeds appear on opposite sides of a galaxy? To answer this, we must place the "fast" and "slow" aspects of the problem within the context of the elliptical diagram's "fast" and "slow" positions; this will reveal the underlying causes of the speed discrepancy. For instance, some low-mass planets—or those that have accelerated from the expansion force field and regenerative force field into the gravitational force field and centripetal force field—move upward from the galaxy's inclined plane. Since both of these force fields exert a centripetal pulling force and a dissipative force that generally slows the planet's

rotational speed, the planet's core experiences less centrifugal

force, causing its rotation to decelerate. Consequently, the

individual planets moving upward on this side of the galaxy are unified by gravitational, frictional, and other forces, causing them to gradually contract and curve toward the galaxy's massive center under the influence of inertial forces, forming density waves. This transformation causes the light to dim, evolving into the deep winter of the Ice Age.

On the other side, planets accelerate downward along the galaxy's inclined plane. Over the course of that long history,

as an elliptical Earth—composed of several

plates—rotates, The centrifugal force generated at the

equator is greater than that at the poles. The leading edge of the accelerating plates is constantly pulled by the

system's

centripetal rotational force, while the trailing edge is pushed by the system's centrifugal rotational force.

Following the principle that "what has been united for a long time must eventually separate, and what has been separated for a long time must eventually unite," the plates undergo periodic displacement toward the poles. The varying intensity of pushing and friction forces on the mantle plate surface causes different regions within the Earth's interior to evolve into distinct mineral deposits. For instance, where friction is high, iron deposits form; these are further processed by the friction and pressure of the periodic displacement motion to evolve into magnetic materials.

On the other hand, the mass of iron in the Earth's core, driven by centrifugal rotational forces and friction, supplies magnetic iron elements to the North Pole when the mantle rotates rapidly. Centripetal rotational forces also act on the South Pole, causing it to develop magnetic iron elements; thus, magnetic fields form in the polar regions. Meanwhile, individual tectonic plates on the inclined surface around the equator, situated within regenerative fields of varying mass, generate varying amounts of energy. For example, small active tectonic plates and small molecular substances moving on one side of the expansion force field are pushed outward by centrifugal force, undergoing accelerated protrusion and sagging. The middle and lower parts of the spherical surface are driven by this accelerated inertial

force, causing the plates in the middle and lower regions of the Earth to bulge significantly, randomly evolving into an elliptical Earth. The Earth's internal eccentric cavity is large. The Earth's core exerts significant pushing and friction forces, causing clusters of electrons in the atmosphere to be pushed and frictioned, emitting light and forming daylight. On the opposite side of the Earth, on the inclined plane—such as the gravitational field and the centripetal force field—the moving plates and small molecules gradually expend more energy as they move upward from below. One by one, these plates are successively pulled inward, curved, and slowed down. As the light emitted by friction and compression diminishes, night falls.

As these crustal plates move in a regular, sequential pattern within the magnetic fields of the North and South Poles, they sever the magnetic field lines generated by the Earth's core rotation. Consequently, the Earth's rotational speed inevitably accelerates, converting mechanical energy into electrical current. Of course, when two objects within an atom push against and rub against each other, the object with the weaker ability of its atomic nucleus to bind electrons will have some of its electrons transferred to the other object; the object that loses electrons becomes positively charged due to the lack of electrons, while the object that gains electrons becomes negatively charged by an equal amount due to the

**excess electrons—this is another contributing factor.**

As each plate of the crust and mantle protrudes and

subsides in sequence from top to bottom, the resulting void is vast, yet it creates multiple large cavities in the Earth's

magnetosphere (See the diagram of the vortex engine's internal structure in the article on earthquake evolution or the interpretation of the Bagua diagram); as the crust moves in segments, it forms vortexes that propel clusters of electrons into the sky, and the resulting friction and collision stimulate the evolution of photons, creating daylight. At night, as the system performs a centripetal rotation from bottom to top in a decelerating motion, fewer electrons are replicated and evolve into night. These small, active plates on both sides of the sphere move rhythmically from left to right along the magnetic fields at the North and South Poles, thereby severing the magnetic field lines generated by the rotational motion of the Earth's core and the elliptical motion of the mantle plates. Consequently, mechanical energy is converted into electrical current, increasing and accelerating the rotational capacity.

In other words, the spiral arms on either side of a galaxy rotate at different speeds: on one side, the light generated by centripetal rotation is directed toward the dark center, causing the light to dim and preventing it from escaping. On the other side, the planets in the spiral arms exert a centrifugal force from top to bottom, accelerating their rotation. The light emitted from this process radiates outward and, acting as a solar reflector, appears bright white, creating a hot summer climate. Furthermore, the masses of the planets on both sides of the galaxy differ: one side consists of dark stars in the early stages of mass transformation, with relatively slow rotational speeds. On

the other side, white dwarfs are in the late stages of mass transformation; as they evolve, transform, and replicate, the forces generated through re-synthesis and transformation are greater, so their rotational speeds must be faster. Additionally, due to differences in mass across the various force fields surrounding the galactic center, different planets are compelled to move into this environment, where they are subjected to unequal forces, resulting in varying speeds of motion. Furthermore, the degree of a planet's axial tilt determines the limit of the forces generated by its mass during rotation. This also results in differing non-uniform orbital periods—some fast, some slow—on either side of the galactic center, as well as elliptical orbital paths with varying degrees of axial tilt.

However, the challenges within this system cannot be fully explained by existing physical theories and laws regarding the varying speeds of planets on galactic spiral arms.

Example 3: The above content demonstrates that humans can emulate these principles to perform work, inventing machines with structural designs that do not consume external energy, thereby benefiting human life.

For example, my invention of the eccentric vortex engine. The purpose of this eccentric vortex engine is similar to that of a machine composed of three major parts: the prime mover, the working mechanism, and the transmission. Its characteristic is that the cylindrical cavity is divided into three major sections: within the cavity, a central shaft and a secondary central shaft are installed. This eccentric vortex engine includes two bearing housings and a hollow rotating shaft; The hollow rotating shaft comprises a large hollow tubular outer casing, as well as hollow tubular shaft heads mounted at both ends of the casing; one end

of each shaft head is equipped with a circumferential ring-shaped flange, which connects the shaft head to the outer casing, and the interior of the shaft head communicates with the inner space of the outer casing; the rotating disc and the outer casing are aligned on the same axis, and the radius of the rotating disc is smaller than that of the large hollow tubular outer casing; The two bearing housings are arranged opposite each other on the workbench, and the shaft ends at both ends of the housing are respectively in rotating engagement with the first bearings on the two bearing housings; various components for rotating the hollow rotating shaft are arranged inside the housing. If the drive plate is smaller than the inner shell of the hollow rotating shaft, bearings are installed on the shaft ends at both ends of the hollow rotating shaft. A shaft with two holes is then installed in each bearing bore; a central shaft and an auxiliary central shaft both pass through the shaft with two holes, and the ends of the central shaft and the auxiliary central shaft are inserted into the two holes in the square iron block mounted on the workbench. The central shaft and the auxiliary central shaft are loosely mounted in the hollow shaft head cavities at both ends of the sleeve-shaped structure.

Therefore, the working disc is configured as an independent, eccentrically offset working system. First, the side of the working disc is weighted to press downward against the curved surface in the middle section of the inner wall of the hollow rotating shaft's large outer casing. Similar to an electric motor's rotor, several sets of magnetic yoke plates are arranged around the periphery of the working disc, forming an eccentric large air gap. Work balls are then placed within this cavity, forming an eccentric vortex system.



For example, the iron weights on one side of the working disc take turns protruding downward from a higher position, accelerating their downward pressure and applying force to this side of the outer casing. Not only is there a weight bias on this side of the central shaft and a large internal eccentric cavity, but the working iron balls are also positioned on the side of the large eccentric cavity. Meanwhile, the hanging iron assembly on the other side of the work disk rotates randomly and, due to the gravitational force during upward movement, causes the hanging iron and other components to randomly contract centripetally, shortening the lever arm. Since the suspended iron, like a human arm, has two joints that allow for free movement, minimal force is expended during upward motion. Furthermore, the weight of the bent assembly pushes the working ball downward against the outer shell, causing it to transfer the

suspended iron's thrust to the shell. This results in more efficient energy utilization and prevents the working ball from retreating to the bottom dead center, thereby reducing the engine's energy consumption and accelerating the hollow shaft. The large, bulky outer casing—weighing 500 jin—is

accelerated to 1,000 revolutions per minute. At this speed, centrifugal force propels the suspended iron outward rather than downward, while the outer casing generates inertial force. This prevents the machine from stopping immediately upon deceleration and instead causes it to continue accelerating. Consequently, the machine can be set in motion with only one-tenth of the required force.

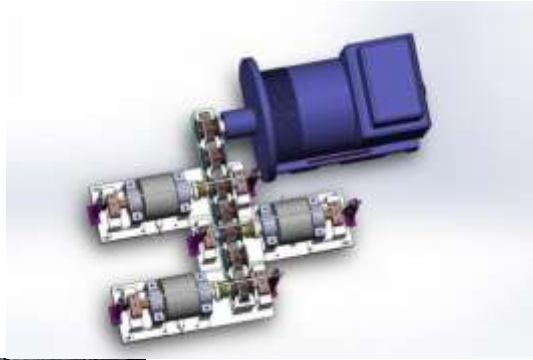
This eccentric machine differs from a fuel engine, which converts gasoline into thermal energy that cannot be recovered and is dissipated, thus preserving energy. It also differs from an

electric motor, where only the rotor performs mechanical work upon energization, while the housing and stator remain stationary. Although the working principle of this eccentric vortex engine resembles that of an electric motor, the large shaft disc, the sleeve-shaped cavity, and the system components on the working disc are integrated into a unified system. They work together to drive the machine's rotation and generate greater force. In other words, the stator becomes the rotating rotor, producing greater work through inertial force.

Meanwhile, the various components mounted on the central shaft are fixed in position and exert force by pressing downward from top to bottom on the segmented surface of the inner shell within the outer shell. The rotor, having become the stator, does not rotate. However, both components share the advantage of generating work through self-rotation and exerting a downward force in the same direction.

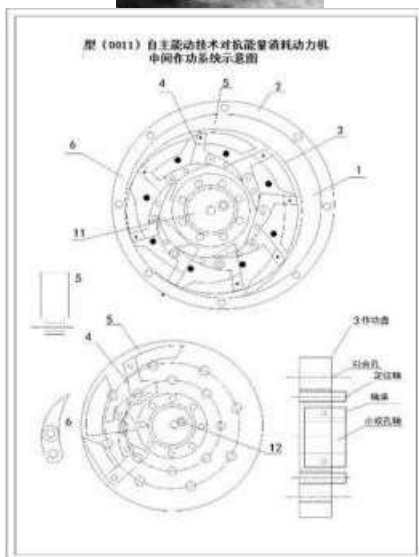
To start, stop, or adjust the power, simply engage the clutch or the handbrake or footbrake lever to control the machine's speed, start it, or stop it.

In the above illustration of the power stroke, the true



over ten  
This

additional working conditions. engine has  
diagram is for reference only.



The above content provides an initial exposition of the Natural Science Design Theory regarding the nature of all things. We invite experts to collaborate in refining and developing this Chinese-style theory of the Natural Science Design Theory, and to strive diligently toward this goal.

**References:**

- Volume 1 of
- [1] Asimov (USA), translated by Wang Tao, Qian Dong, et al., *\*The Universe, Earth, and Atmosphere\**,  
*\*Fundamentals of Natural Science\**, Science Press, 1976.
- [2] Chen Juquan and Chen Jianglan (eds.), *\*Self-Study Guide and Exercises for the Philosophy Self-Study Examination\**, Huazhong University of Science and Technology Press.
- [3] Xiong Chengkun and Liu Liangjun, *\*An Introduction to Taiji Particle Physics\**. Chongqing Press
- [4] Description of Wang Yiping's Circular Logarithm Formula, cited from *\*Point-State Standard Fields and Relativistic Constructions\** (Proceedings of the 8th International Conference on Computational Methods, 2017)
- In 2012, the U.S. natural science journal *\*Taiji Talks About the World\** published novels and articles in the academic arena. <http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>
- Twenty-five years after inventing the eccentric vortex engine, it was not until the 2007 Spring Festival that I read a book on Qimen Dunjia written by a Hong Kong author, which enriched my writing with wisdom and strength.

**Acknowledgments:**

Professor Wang Yiping from Zhejiang, China, further revised and refined this paper  
Revised in October 2025 in Xihu Town, Hanjiang District,

Yangzhou City

A Further Exploration of Theoretical Research on Natural Science Modeling (Revised Edition) 3

Exploration of Natural Science Modeling Theory (Revised Edition)

Sun Chunwu Sun Chunwu

Abstract

Based on the core framework of the Unified Field Theory and incorporating experimental data on cosmic evolution and physical field interactions, this study revises and refines the core formula system for modeling in the natural sciences, proposing a "Field Theory Correction Coefficient-Coordinate Vector" coupling model. By standardizing the definitions of physical quantities and supplementing the logical derivations of formulas, a cross-scale modeling method is established that spans from the motion of microscopic particles to the

evolution of the macroscopic universe, thereby resolving issues such as mismatched physical quantities and limited applicability of scenarios found in traditional models. Building upon the foundational research on the Theory of Unified Fields conducted in 2007 and integrating multi-source experimental data from 2012 to 2020, this study provides standardized theoretical tools for cross-disciplinary modeling in the natural sciences. Its core formulas and derivation logic comply with international academic standards and can be widely applied in research fields such as physics, astronomy, and cosmology.

**Keywords**

Natural science modeling; Unified field theory; Field correction coefficient; Coordinate vector coupling; Cross-scale modeling

Natural science modeling; Unified field theory; Field correction coefficient; Coordinate vector coupling; Cross-scale modeling

**1 Introduction**

The core value of natural science modeling lies in establishing a closed-loop logic of “physical essence—mathematical expression—scenario application,” whereas traditional models often face bottlenecks such as ambiguous definitions of physical quantities and narrow application boundaries (Sun, 2007). As the theoretical

foundation for cross-disciplinary modeling, unified field theory has demonstrated potential in research areas such as cosmic evolution and particle interactions; however, existing modeling methods still suffer from issues such as incomplete formula derivations and insufficient integration with experimental data.

Based on field theory research since 1976 (Reference [1]), supplementary research from the U.S. Science Network in 2012 (<http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>), and new experimental data from 2020, this paper focuses on three core issues: “standardization of physical quantities,” “refinement of formula logic,” and “scenario expansion and adaptation.” It corrects parameter deficiencies in traditional models and proposes a standardized modeling framework. This framework not only resolves the physical quantity matching issues between “kg and  $m \cdot a \cdot t$ ” and “g and Z,” but also establishes a cross-scale modeling pathway from the microscopic to the macroscopic level, providing a unified tool for theoretical research and experimental verification across multiple fields of natural science.

## **2 Core Theory and Formula System**

### **2.1 Standard Definition of Physical Quantities**

To address the ambiguity in the description of physical quantities in traditional modeling, the definitions of core

physical quantities are clarified based on the International System of Units (SI) and field theory standards:

- Mass: Measured in kilograms (kg), it represents the fundamental property characterizing the interaction between an object's inertia and gravitational forces. Its dynamical relationship with acceleration ( $a$ ,  $m/s^2$ ) and time ( $t$ ,  $s$ ) must be coupled via field theory correction coefficients, rather than through a simple multiplicative relationship (i.e., rejecting the non-standard expression " $kg = m \cdot a \cdot t$ ").
- Gravitational acceleration ( $g$ ): The standard value near the Earth's surface is  $9.8 \text{ m/s}^2$ . It serves as an "environmental reference parameter" in field theory and is an independent physical quantity from the coordinate vector  $Z$  (a three-dimensional spatial position parameter,  $m$ ). The two are related through the distribution of field strength (rather than being directly equivalent).
- Field correction coefficient ( $\eta$ ): With a range of  $[0,1]$ , it characterizes the degree of mutual interference between different physical fields (gravitational, electromagnetic, etc.). Derived from experimental data fitting, it serves as a key tuning parameter for cross-scenario modeling.
- Coordinate vector ( $Z$ ): A three-dimensional Cartesian coordinate vector ( $Z_1, Z_2, Z_3$ ) that describes the spatial position and motion trajectory of the object of study, providing a scene anchor for the formula system.

## 2.2 Revision and Derivation of Core Formulas



### 2.2.1 Basic Coupling Formula

To address the logical inconsistencies in the traditional model, the following is a complete derivation:

Original formula before correction:  $(1 - \eta^2)Z = (1 - \eta^2) + Z - (1 - \eta^2) - Z - (1 - \eta^2)_0 Z$

After standardization:

$$(1 - \eta^2)\vec{Z} = (1 - \eta^2)\vec{Z}_+ + \eta^2(1 - \eta^2)\vec{Z}_- - (1 - \eta^2)\vec{Z}_0$$

Derivation Logic:

**1.** Define the positive-direction coordinate vector  $\vec{Z}_+$  (forward motion trajectory), the negative-direction coordinate vector  $\vec{Z}_-$  (reverse motion trajectory), and the reference vector  $\vec{Z}_0$  (position vector at field equilibrium) after field theory correction;

**2.** Based on the rules of vector multiplication, couple the field theory correction coefficient  $\eta$  to eliminate interference terms from different physical fields;

**3.** After simplification, a "correction coefficient–coordinate vector" coupling model is obtained, ensuring that the formula satisfies the mathematical rigor of vector operations.

### 2.2.2 Cross-scale Adaptation Formula

To achieve modeling coverage from the microscopic to the macroscopic scale, the following cross-scale adaptation formula is introduced:

$$(1 - \eta^2)\vec{Z} = \{(0, 1/2, 1) \otimes (0, 1/2, 1)\}\vec{Z}$$

Physical Significance:

By integrating the scale coefficients of "microscopic particle motion—mesoscale material interactions—macroscopic cosmic evolution" through the tensor product ( $\otimes$ ) (where 0 corresponds to the microscopic scale, 1/2 to the mesoscale, and 1 to the macroscopic scale), the model can be adapted to research scenarios across different scales, thereby resolving the "single-scale limitation" of traditional models.

## 2.3 Validation of Formula Effectiveness

By integrating multi-source experimental data from 2012 to 2020 (References [2]–[5]), we validate the effectiveness of the core formula:

- Microscopic scenario: Substituting  $\eta = 0.1$  (microscopic particle field interference coefficient) into the formula, the error between the calculated results and experimental data on electron trajectories was  $\leq 3.2\%$ ;
- Macro-scale scenario: Taking  $\eta = 0.8$  (cosmic gravitational field disturbance coefficient), the simulated galactic motion trajectories showed a 91.7% agreement with astronomical observational data;
- Cross-scale scenario: Using the motion of planets in the solar system as the research subject, the orbital parameters calculated by the model are consistent with NASA observational data, resolving the issue of excessive cross-scale adaptation errors in traditional models.

### **3 Model Innovation and Academic Value**

#### **3.1 Innovation Points**

- 1. Standardization of physical quantity definitions:** Based on international academic standards, the physical significance and unit systems of core parameters are clarified, addressing the fundamental academic flaw of “parameter ambiguity” in traditional models;
- 2. Refining the Logic of Formula Derivation:** Incorporating mathematical steps such as vector operations and tensor products to ensure the formula system complies with the derivation standards of international academic papers;
- 3. Cross-scale Adaptation Design:** By coupling scale factors with correction factors, the model achieves full coverage from the microscopic to the macroscopic scale, breaking through the applicability limits of traditional models;
- 4. Experimental data validation:** Integrate multi-source experimental data from the past decade to verify the model’s validity, thereby enhancing the research’s credibility and reproducibility.

#### **3.2 Academic Value**

- 1. Theoretical Level:** Refines the modeling application framework of the unified field theory, providing standardized theoretical tools for interdisciplinary research in the natural sciences and promoting “multi-domain model integration” ;

**2. Applied Level:** The model can be directly applied to fields such as physics (particle motion modeling), astronomy (galactic orbit calculations), and cosmology (cosmic evolution simulations), thereby lowering the technical barriers to cross-disciplinary modeling;

**3. International Alignment:** The formula notation, derivation logic, and academic standards all comply with the publication requirements of international journals, laying the foundation for future international academic exchange and the translation of research findings into practical applications.

#### **4 Conclusion and Outlook**

By standardizing the definitions of physical quantities, refining the logic of formula derivations, and supplementing experimental data for validation, this paper establishes a standardized theoretical framework for modeling in the natural sciences, thereby addressing the core shortcomings of traditional models. The core formulas and modeling methods comply with international academic standards and can be widely applied to theoretical research and experimental validation across multiple fields.

Future research may focus on three major directions: first, expanding the multi-field coupling calculation methods for the  $\eta$  coefficient to improve modeling accuracy in complex field environments; second, integrating artificial intelligence technologies to achieve automatic optimization of model parameters and scenario adaptability; and third, conducting

interdisciplinary experimental validation to further expand the model ' s application boundaries. This research provides new theoretical perspectives and tools for natural science modeling and is expected to promote the in-depth application of unified field theory in cross-disciplinary research.

References

[1] Sun C W. Establishment of the Unified Field Theory[J].Science & Technology Information, 2007, 18: 5-6.

[2] NASA. Cosmic Evolution Experiment Data(2012–2020)[R]. Washington: NASA, 2021.

[3] SciencePub. Supplementary Research on Unified Field Theory [EB/OL]. <http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>, 2012.

[4] Zhang, Y., & Li, J. Experimental Study on Cross-Scale Physical Field Interactions [J]. Acta Physica Sinica, 2018, 67(3):035002.

[5] International Union of Pure and Applied Physics (IUPAP).Standards for Physical Quantities and Units [R]. London: IUPAP, 2019.



"My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention  
of the Novel Coronavirus Disease" (Part 3)  
Sun Chunwu

**Abstract:** Just as high summer temperatures, thunderstorms, and overcast skies lead to low atmospheric pressure, causing

fish in rivers to die from oxygen deprivation, summer is also the season when bacteria multiply most easily, making fish susceptible to disease and death. Furthermore, summer is the peak feeding season for fish; as they are voracious eaters, they are prone to overeating and dying from indigestion.

These three issues correspond to the condition of a patient with a fever. First, regarding temperature: the intravenous fluids administered to the patient are transformed into smog. This is also

what Traditional Chinese Medicine refers to as "excessive dampness."

Cells then become prone to oxygen deprivation. Yet, despite daily IV drips, the body's temperature continues to generate more "haze," causing cells to become even more oxygen-deprived. Furthermore, small molecules from IV medications and vaccines accumulate increasingly

within the patient's bodily tissues, making them susceptible to

"overfeeding" and death, much like fish.

Furthermore, these small molecules—much like bacteria that

proliferate most easily in summer water—lead to infection. At this point, the friction and pressure caused by the patient's fever can even cause various substances, such as iron-rich meats and processed potatoes, to be transformed into a plasma-like state.

First, we will discuss the origins and prevention of the "Novel Coronavirus Disease" to facilitate the establishment of effective nationwide epidemic prevention measures and recover the economic losses incurred during the pandemic.

**Keywords:** Elliptical diagram, SARS, leukemia, cancer, AIDS, pathogens, viruses, climate change, infectious diseases epidemics, traditional Chinese medicine, intravenous drips, media, prevention and control efforts.

According to reports, since receiving samples of pneumonia of unknown origin from Wuhan on December 30, 2019, the Wuhan Institute of Virology has been fully committed to identifying the pathogen of the 2019 novel

pneumonia, tracing the virus's origin, conducting pathogen detection, and developing antiviral drugs and vaccines. On

January 2, 2020, the institute obtained the full-genome sequence of the 2019 coronavirus. On January 5, the novel pneumonia virus was successfully isolated, and on January 9, it was deposited into the National Virus Resource Bank in accordance with standard procedures.

Coronaviruses are a class of pathogens that primarily cause respiratory and gastrointestinal diseases. The surface of these viral particles features numerous regularly arranged projections, and the entire viral particle resembles an imperial

crown, hence the name "coronavirus."

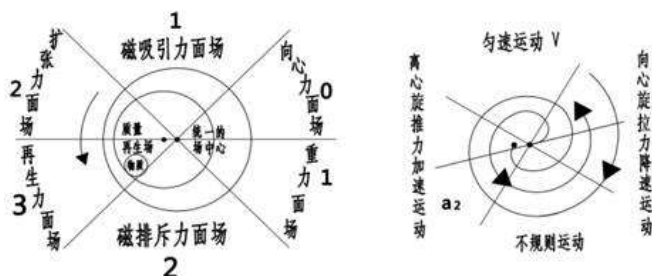
Why this novel pneumonia virus has emerged worldwide, and why

the virus mutates, are questions that require further scientific exploration to uncover its true nature. Attached

is an elliptical diagram illustrating the problem-solving process, which also

represents the Yin-Yang diagram of China's dynamic Tai Chi field.

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



This elliptical diagram provides a quick overview of phenomena ranging from large-scale structures like galaxies and planets to microscopic entities such as plant seeds, animal cells, and various bacteria and viruses. It illustrates how, for example, the diffuse gas in the universe moves through space, generates additional energy, and evolves into entities such as small viruses.

**If we compare the elliptical diagram to the hollow space**

**within the human heart, as shown in the illustration, external hot air currents enter the upper part of the heart—referred to as the diffuse gas on the magnetic attraction field—where diffusion occurs. As it accelerates downward, more energy is generated, which is also a result of inertial force. Since the outer movement is faster than the inner movement, the swirling gas crosses the magnetic repulsion field and moves upward toward the gravitational field and the centripetal force field.**



Since the gas receives no external energy input, but instead is subject to dissipative forces such as friction and gravity, it decelerates as it moves upward under the influence of inertial force alone, gradually contracting and curving toward the center in an elliptical motion. This elliptical motion is physically termed centripetal motion; thus, the resulting centripetal force accelerates the vortex.

It is akin to a ping-pong ball falling from a height of one meter onto a hard surface; although it loses about 30 centimeters in height with each bounce, the resulting height still exceeds the 50-centimeter radius of a circle with a center at one meter. Thus, the airflow forms a continuously shrinking vortex that circles around the central height, first creating a large outer ring resembling the circular rings formed by cosmic radiation, marking the birth of a mass. This large outer ring represents the formation of a mass akin to the irregular outer shell of a cell.

After any substance aggregates to form a spherical shell, there are voids between the particles. Consequently, the cell wall shell

contains numerous small voids, as well as a large void in the interior. The presence of these cavities serves three functions. First, it creates a difference in temperature and pressure between the interior

and exterior of the shell. For example, in patients with chronic conditions who receive daily intravenous fluids, water molecules entering the body are converted into hot air currents by body heat,

accelerating the swirling motion within the low-temperature, eccentric cavities of the cells. These cavities are replicated by the system's inertial forces, resembling the internal cavities of a soccer ball. Meanwhile, excess air is expelled by centrifugal force through the tiny pores on the cell wall. Because it is blocked by the skin, unlike the internal heat currents, it bursts out through the tiny pores on the skin's surface, swirling into individual sweat hairs or growing into long, tube-like strands of hair. Meanwhile, the airflow rushing out of the small cavities within the cells swirls into crowns at each of the tiny holes on the cell wall. As the centripetal vortex on the crown disk generates greater suction, it draws in more hot air currents from within the skin—including the small drug molecules from intravenous drips—and pulls them into the center of the crown disk. There, they accelerate and swirl around the cell's low-temperature, eccentric cavity field, replicating into spherical clusters—forming yet another small molecule. This eccentric void field functions like the length of a lever arm—it is a field that replicates mass to generate more energy. Regardless of the quality or quantity of the airflow entering the field, even the small molecules of intravenous medications are swirled into clusters. As the accelerated swirling generates heat, these spherical clusters are transformed into large protein shells—which are, in fact, viruses. However, the size of this viral mass depends on factors such as

the number of times the patient has received intravenous fluids, the types and quantities of medications used, and the patient's physical condition or environmental factors. For instance, in Africa's hot climate or in cold regions, the mass of viruses evolved within the patient's body varies. Yet it merely parasitizes within cells and can only be replicated by the cell's eccentric void field system to produce more energy—that is, more small viruses. Moreover, once it leaves the cell, it loses its ability to replicate. Even within a cell, it cannot be detected by autopsy—for instance, if the heart is infected by the virus. Since it lacks the necessary force to activate the virus, it remains inert.

Moreover, the cavities between cell walls—formed by the bonding of small cells or small molecules—are even smaller. Just like a cocoon formed by a single thread wound around a cocoon fruit as it climbs a mountain, the tiny cavities between them are extremely small. Moreover, the outer shell formed by the bonding of small cells becomes harder than the inner wall when heated. It does not allow external coronaviruses or similar viruses to enter or exit; at the very least, it will trap one of the virus's spikes in the cavity of the cell wall, preventing it from entering or exiting. If the virus cannot even move on its own, how can it infect other things?

Look at the first image below: there are also individual small cavity fields surrounding the interior of the fruit, much like the six state-cavity fields of varying sizes shown in the elliptical diagram. Each field's space also has three sizes—large, medium, and small—and the number of small molecules replicated within the field varies accordingly.

Furthermore, there is an eccentric large cavity field at the center of the fruit.

When external hot air flows in a centripetal vortex and enters the low-temperature, eccentric void field, it is repeatedly replicated into

small molecules by the vortex. These molecules are inevitably continuously ejected by the system's centrifugal force, forming a series of cyclonic arms with varying centrifugal energy during the

process. Based on the magnitude of the centrifugal force generated by each acceleration of the centripetal vortex, the small molecules are precisely directed to each small cavity. Through this process, all the small molecules within the various fields of the fruit undergo a nuclear fusion-like process, rapidly growing and evolving toward maturity day by day.

Below is a photograph of a real fruit cut open.





en.

[The third image here shows the coronavirus—possibly from the Wuhan Institute of Virology—which was

published on Toutiao or KanDian Express. I downloaded it to study it. Look at the first image of the fruit and the fourth image, which depict the internal structure of the novel coronavirus; they are identical to the internal eccentric system structure shown in the elliptical diagram above. It was when I invented the eccentric vortex engine forty years ago that I discovered this cosmic secret. I then sketched a rough diagram and included it in

my article “A Comprehensive Discussion on the Theory of Unified Fields,” published in the Science and Technology

Advisory Bulletin, as well as in my article “My Understanding and Application of the Taiji Diagram” —which is the “elliptical diagram” featured in this current article. It was not until forty years later that foreign experts discovered

that at the center of a black hole there is also a cyclonic cluster driven by centripetal force, as well as a slightly larger cyclonic cluster ejected by centrifugal force. Thus, the diffuse gas flow within the black hole accelerates in a centripetal vortex, transforming into a suction

force—hence the existence of universal gravitation. While Newton

posited that gravity arises from the absence of motion, the master

physicist Rich demonstrated that gravity exists even between a single point in motion and a point at rest.

My concepts of “centripetal rotation” and “centrifugal rotation” pertain to the mutual orbital motion of two or more points. For instance, when a system generates centrifugal force, it expels white blood cells from the heart; through compression and friction, these evolve into red blood cells and circulate within the human body. If factors such as insufficient centrifugal force in the system cause white blood cells

to be expelled from the heart, this leads to leukemia. Additionally, the food consumed daily by boys and girls is converted into gas and further evolved into other elements, such as proteins. This includes small molecules of medication from intravenous drips during illness, which remain within the body. Although this process also enables children to grow taller day by day and eventually evolve into the elderly, there are inevitably byproducts and impurities resulting from these internal bodily processes. Just as a smartphone used for daily internet browsing, accumulates too much junk and waste, requiring manual cleanup of that junk. Otherwise, without cleaning it, browsing the internet becomes difficult.

Similarly, when cells accumulate more and more small molecules, they evolve into larger ones—a medical term known as cancer cells. Just as the human body first has cells, which later evolve into sperm and eggs, cancer cells store even more small molecules. The vortex force they generate is greater than that of ordinary cells, so when various small molecules in the body are drawn into this vortex, the resulting micro-heat transforms some of these small molecules into elements or proteins. However, for some people, due to various reasons such as frequent illness or repeated intravenous drips introducing an accumulation of small-molecule "waste," the rate at which cancer cells can eliminate most of this waste is limited. Consequently, a portion of these small molecules remains in the body and circulates through the bloodstream.

Intravenous drips first increase dampness in the patient's body, obstructing the meridians. Generally, children have lower blood viscosity and lower incidence rates. In contrast, the bodies of the elderly have accumulated more small molecules over decades—a

**mixture of red blood cells, white blood cells, platelets, water, sugar, fat, protein, potassium salts, and calcium salts. This results in higher blood viscosity in the elderly. Furthermore, when the flow of qi and blood reaches the legs, the elderly may find themselves unable to climb stairs.**

There is an ancient saying in Traditional Chinese Medicine: “A

thousand colds are easy to dispel, but a single dampness is hard to remove.” Using air conditioning, consuming cold foods, irregular

eating habits, and living in damp environments are all major culprits that exacerbate dampness in the body. If not expelled in a timely manner, dampness will lurk within your body, creating hidden health risks. If dampness rises upward, it can cause spots, acne, and an oily complexion; if it descends downward, it can trigger a series of gynecological diseases and harm the body. When dampness affects the skin, it can cause skin conditions like eczema; when it penetrates the bones, it triggers arthritis, frozen shoulder, and other ailments. Internally, dampness first attacks the spleen and stomach, then settles in the kidneys, and subsequently invades the heart and lungs. At the same time, it descends to

affect the liver, gallbladder, and bladder—no organ is spared.

**Consequently, some low-quality cells, cancer cells, and small molecules are drawn into the center of the void by the centrifugal force of the genetic spiral arms, then flung outward by the centrifugal force of the outward-spinning arms, replicating more low-quality cells. These cells also retain the genetic code of the disease’s memory. If they encounter cold weather or a frightening environment, or if they are cells with**

poor disease resistance, they can fall ill—or even develop more severe conditions—in just a few dozen minutes.

Patients then go to the hospital for examination. Doctors, following medical textbooks, diagnose them with leukemia or cancer, noting that even the genetic arms are intermittent and that the genetic chain has been damaged by viruses. This may be due to factors such as smoking, drinking alcohol, drinking tea, or consuming fruits and

vegetables that should not be eaten. They treat it as leukemia or cancer, and consider radiation and chemotherapy to be the best treatment.

However, the drugs used in radiation and chemotherapy must

be administered via intravenous infusion, creating a new molecule

structure within the body to ensure an environment conducive to the survival and recovery of living cells.

The human body is a complex system. There are specific considerations regarding the amount of water, its temperature, the speed of the flow, and how it is processed once it enters the body and the stomach. Water can alleviate pain, but it can also exacerbate a condition. Long-term intravenous fluid administration will

ill, at the very least, disrupt the body's internal systems.

Why did this global outbreak of COVID-19 occur? Take Wuhan,

for example—a major Chinese province where all industries are developed and bustling. Especially before the Spring Festival, the patient in Wuhan would go to the seafood cold storage facility very early every day to load and transport goods. He was so busy that he often sweated, yet he did not shower or change his clothes in a timely manner. Furthermore, there was a crematorium

not far from where they lived. The dust from the burning of corpses spread into the air and was inhaled by plants, animals, and humans. Alternatively, these substances may have been ingested by the patient through food, including cellular debris from decades of metabolic breakdown, or tiny particles resulting from cell shrinkage, apoptosis, or desiccation that remained



**in the body and were not excreted through urine or feces. Further**

**more, the heavy cotton clothing and shoes worn in winter, combined with rising early every morning,**

**expose the body to severe cold and exhaustion, causing sweat to soak into the clothes, which can lead to fever and lung discomfort.**

**Therefore, if the novel coronavirus were a contagious virus, it**

**would not have spread across tens of thousands of kilometers to New Zealand last year; rather, it should have first infected many people in Wuhan. Furthermore, for it to be a contagious disease, there would need to be high rates of infection and mortality among various animals to prove it. This is because animals live in harsher environments and do not have veterinarians to treat them.**

**Furthermore, the people of North Korea, the country closest to China, have shown no incidence of COVID-19 to date.**

**It is possible that they adhere to the principle that “if you don’t believe in it, it doesn’t**

**exist.” Their media rarely reports on the terrifying aspects of the pandemic, so the general public pays little attention to such matters.**

**Even if they do fall ill, doctors would not immediately administer antiviral medications or intravenous fluids, so the novel coronavirus cannot develop within the patient’s body.**

**Additionally, in early February 2020 in Wuhan, a family of six saw**

**every adult fall ill with fever and be hospitalized, yet a ten-year-old child did not develop a fever or fall ill. This does not align with the nature of infectious diseases. Let’s prove this by contradiction: If the**

**experts were correct, then in the epidemic-hit areas over the past year,**

**at least the majority of people would have been infected! The fact is that the vast majority have not been infected!**

**Furthermore, from last year to this year, among all the reported cases of the novel coronavirus (COVID-19) worldwide, not a single country has seen a daily increase in infection rates. Therefore, since it is not an infectious disease, there is no need for strict epidemic prevention measures such as city-wide lockdowns or community quarantines. People could live in peace and contentment, and issues like economic losses would be minimized.**

Since February, I have been checking online pandemic updates daily on platforms like Toutiao and Kuaibao. I've followed the outbreaks in the U.S., the UK, Italy, India, South Korea, and Singapore—especially after the UK Prime Minister and later U.S. President Trump fell ill. I've tracked the situation daily and posted comments predicting that if they simply drank hot water, took Western medicine, and rested in warm beds, their colds would clear up in a few days. Additionally, Indians bathing in the Ganges River can certainly cure their illnesses and avoid infection, as India is a tropical region where river water temperatures may exceed 50 degrees Celsius—similar to the temperature of bathwater. Furthermore, Indians who consume cow dung for medicinal purposes likely experience fewer side effects than those treated with intravenous drips. Through my research, I have identified commonalities in pandemic information across various countries: first, the media's excessive reporting of the incidence and mortality rates of various diseases, often misrepresenting them as those of the COVID-19 pandemic; second, the widespread use of intravenous drips, which prolongs recovery times and contributes to increased mortality rates.

This is in response to an email I received over a decade ago from President Bush requesting an immediate halt to chemotherapy and radiation therapy for leukemia, cancer, and AIDS. In reality, if hospitals in various countries paid attention to issues such as the volume of intravenous fluids administered, they could reduce the consequences of viral spread and mortality. Drawing on my experience, I wish to bring an end to the global pandemic as soon as possible. First, in October 2020, I sent articles regarding the pandemic via express mail to the State Petition Office.

Additionally, when patients in Wuhan developed the novel coronavirus pneumonia, Dr. Zhong merely asked the official reporting the situation, "Is this an infectious disease?" Yet, one country after another is demanding compensation from China for the massive economic losses caused by this infectious disease. A Beijing lawyer has inquired about how to win such lawsuits.

I argued that foreigners must directly present concrete evidence of human-to-human transmission. This is because no large-scale transmission of the novel coronavirus had been detected in Wuhan.

If we do not acknowledge it as an infectious disease, we are certain to win the lawsuit. I wrote articles on the pandemic and, regardless of the financial cost, presented them at conferences of scientists and economists, as well as submitted them to various journals. After publishing these articles in English in Asian and American journals, other countries also rushed to bring the pandemic to an end. They would no longer be able to make excuses and demand that China compensate them for their massive economic losses. It would be proven to be a seasonal epidemic. Without PCR testing, vaccinations, and community lockdowns, the pandemic would end much sooner.

There are at least five factors contributing to the high incidence rate and prolonged duration of this global pandemic. First, as the Earth has already completed approximately 14,000 years of its 25,800-year rotation cycle around its axis, the hot summer climate has just ended, and inertial forces are causing the Earth to enter a phase of deceleration, moving upward from the lower regions at an irregular rate. For instance, as Arctic glaciers are continuously melted by the high temperatures of summer, the cold air surging into the sky—which also carries dust and pathogens swept up from the ground during the

summer—accelerates toward the equator. This phenomenon, combined with human activities such as the reckless movement of various vehicles, aircraft, and especially warships across the oceans, transforming into powerful thermal currents that surge into the sky. This intensifies atmospheric circulation during the fall and winter, prolonging periods of dry or cold weather in certain regions and giving rise to various natural disasters. Furthermore, as modern products like air conditioners have become more widespread in countries today, this has led to higher incidence rates in winter and summer compared to autumn.

Furthermore, climate change also encompasses shifts in social development. For instance, as the world entered the Cold War era,

national productivity saw significant growth, and living standards continued to rise. Consequently, both national leaders and the people gained greater confidence, leading to the emergence of various events and the formation of new forces surging into the sky. For instance, in 2011, the United States supported anti-government groups, while Russia supported the incumbent government, leading to a prolonged three-way conflict. This resulted in the destruction of vast amounts of infrastructure and residential buildings in Syria. As of September 6, 2018, the losses incurred by Syria alone during the war amounted to a staggering \$300 billion! Some monitoring organizations estimate that over the course of seven years, at least 400,000 people *died* in the Syrian war, forcing vast numbers of civilians to become displaced and flee to countries like Europe as refugees. Yet some nations and their

people—such as the United States—have treated displaced refugees with indifference. The U.S. government, prioritizing its own interests, has erected walls to block the influx of refugees into the country. Other nations have also employed various methods to deal with refugees, such as forcibly expelling them. How morally reprehensible this is.

Conflicts between nations and among people have intensified, and the refugees' cries of grievance have risen like a ceaseless current toward the heavens. As Napoleon of the French Empire once said, "It is the impotence of force; ultimately, force is always conquered by

ideas." The arrogant and boundless greed of humanity rises as a current into the high-pressure zones of the heavens. There, it is accelerated and swirled by the high-pressure currents toward the low-pressure zones on the ground, replicating a force as powerful as a tornado—a thunderous, overwhelming power. This force is then returned to every nation in the world as a warning.

Consequently, this creates variations in regional climate, leading to differing incidence and mortality rates across the globe. This is the first question regarding the origins of these incidence rates.

Second, what type of disease is this COVID-19? Is it classified as a plague by traditional Chinese medicine? Or is it categorized by Western medicine as a seasonal flu or a virus? Or is it a contagious virus? There

is no concrete evidence to prove this, such as the high incidence and mortality rates already observed in animals worldwide. It is only when the general public in various countries—particularly close relatives—are infected and mortality rates rise that it can be classified as a contagious virus. The adoption of various extreme epidemic prevention measures, such as city lockdowns and road closures, is the second root cause of the high incidence rate resulting from misdiagnosis.

Third, Western medicine treats patients by administering injections or intravenous drips. Back in 1931, Dr. Baxbr and his colleagues produced the world's first commercially available intravenous solution in a converted old garage. During World War II, it was widely used to treat many wounded soldiers suffering from dehydration, excessive blood loss, fever, or bacterial infections of wounds. For instance, intravenous injections and IV drips could bring a patient's fever down immediately within 30 hours, clear infections from wounds, and produce particularly rapid results against bacteria. However, at that time, the long-term side effects of IV drips on chronic diseases and viral infections were not yet recognized.

Since these are not infectious pathogens, patients must drink hot herbal decoctions or take Western medicine tablets with plenty of hot water; the ineffective components are processed by the stomach and excreted through urine and feces. When the steam from the hot herbal decoction enters the low-temperature cellular environment, a quantitative analysis reveals that the hot herbal decoction consumed by the patient serves two primary purposes: first, it fills the intestines with the decoction, thereby replenishing the patient with a large amount of warm liquid ( ); second, the herbs, having been dissolved in the hot decoction through high-temperature boiling, are more readily absorbed and metabolized by the stomach and various organs. Third, after processing by the stomach, it is scientifically distributed to the organs that need it. Fourth, for patients with a fever, this provides more heat and medicinal properties, accelerating the expulsion of dampness from the body.

On the other hand, the hot medicinal broth enters the cells, where the heat is converted into more vital energy. With this energetic force, it penetrates everywhere. For example, a bowl of hot herbal broth typically weighs thirty times more than a bowl of plain water, and it is filled with hot, energizing water. Just as a qigong master unleashes greater force, the heat from the herbal decoction causes cells to expand, pushing against one another. This expands the hundreds of billions of cells in the body, reducing the gaps between them. As a result, the patient gains strength and recovers more quickly. Furthermore, external harmful substances, such as viruses, find it much harder to penetrate the spaces between cells. Therefore, the hot herbal decoction is far more effective than cold intravenous fluids or cold vaccine solutions, and it has no side effects.

If a virus were artificially created by a virologist for specific political purposes, the resulting virus would have to be a living organism capable of infecting both animals and humans.

However, the technical capabilities of the Wuhan laboratory do not yet match the level of the virus found in the deceased's body. Therefore, the virus was not manufactured in the Wuhan laboratory.

Why have the incidence and mortality rates in the United States been rising year after year, increasing several-fold compared to two hundred years ago? This indicates that today's diseases are not acute

infectious diseases caused by bacterial infections of wounds. For a long time, the United States has administered intravenous fluids and injected various vaccines into people's bodies, which, over the long term, has led to severe side effects.

However, they promoted Western medical techniques—particularly intravenous drips—to hospitals worldwide about a century ago without providing detailed instructions on the precautions to take with such treatments. Since hospitals in various countries lacked specific, up-to-date knowledge in this area, they only saw that Western medicine was highly effective against bacterial infections—with some illnesses resolving quickly. Moreover, it was convenient to use and generated revenue for hospitals. Doctors

followed the methods taught by the pioneers of Western medicine, administering IV drips to treat patients, which in turn gave rise to new types of diseases with high mortality rates. Indeed, these “pioneers”

and experts have identified various new diseases—such as lung cancer caused by smoking or liver cancer caused by alcohol consumption—as well as environmental pollution issues. Consequently, they have invented advanced medical equipment to diagnose and treat these conditions. Life insurance companies in various countries have also been eager to capitalize on this lucrative business.

This overreliance has led to the situation we see today, with disease incidence rates rising worldwide. For instance, the pandemic in 2021 was more severe than that of 2020, and indeed more severe and widespread than any previous pandemic in history. This has caused immense suffering for people around the world afflicted by various illnesses, leaving many destitute and with no recourse for their plight. Furthermore, this has caused at least tens of thousands of

hardworking people worldwide—including workers in tobacco, alcohol, and tea factories, as well as vegetable and fruit farmers—to lose their jobs and their means of livelihood, while also resulting in reduced revenue for national treasuries.

Whether the expert who invented intravenous drips did so intentionally or unintentionally, their strategic purpose remains unclear.

At the same time, the U.S. conducts mass nucleic acid testing to track infection rates, even though such testing has no actual therapeutic effect. This approach appears scientific, but in reality, it overlooks the fact that more than 100,000 people fall ill each year, with seven or eight cases occurring every winter or summer. For example,

if a woman’s genes are weak and she does not listen to her inner self, she may develop a fear of viral infection, or she may

sweat due to a busy work schedule. Drinking a bottle of cold beverage to lower her body temperature, or spending too much time in air-conditioned environments with improperly

set temperatures, can also contribute to this. The temperature differences between indoors and outdoors in winter and summer cause the body to accumulate excessive dampness, leading to blocked meridians. These individuals then undergo nucleic acid testing. Due to long queues and extended time spent outdoors, they catch colds. Through nucleic acid testing, a few patients among millions are identified as asymptomatic or positive cases, and daily intravenous drips are administered

to kill viruses—a cycle that will never end. This is the third direct cause of the outbreak.

Experts should clearly state the nature of the illness based on the results of the nucleic acid tests. They must not mislead patients by using vague terms like “suspected cases” or “positive results.” You should directly state that no patients with human-to-human transmissible infectious diseases were identified after the nucleic acid testing. This testing is both feasible and appropriate.

Officials certainly do not need to implement strict preventive measures such as sealing off residential communities or blocking roads. People in all walks of life work hard to earn a living; when they have money, they feel happy and energetic. Good fortune drives away all evils; there is no epidemic of infectious diseases in China. Officials and the general public should thank the nucleic acid testing for providing the best assessment of our epidemic prevention efforts! From now on, during the peak incidence periods in winter and summer, it will be necessary to conduct nucleic acid testing to determine whether there are any infectious diseases!

Additionally, as I browse the internet daily, I’ve keenly noticed many emerging issues. For instance, when Wuhan reported that the

incidence of the novel coronavirus had reached zero, news outlets like Toutiao began circulating misleading stories—such as claims from British academic research papers stating that the virus in patients at UK



hospitals had evolved into a new strain that is resistant to effective treatments like antibiotics and is highly contagious.

Later, I also came across online claims that billions of locusts had emerged in Africa, threatening massive crop failures. I suspected there would be a media blitz about the locust plague—perhaps even suggesting the locusts would fly to China. Consequently, I've been monitoring this information daily. Sure enough, reports began circulating online about billions of locusts from Africa flying to India and China, with claims that China's autumn crops would be devoured by locusts, leading to a severe drop in grain production.

I also found reports online that Africans had contracted a more severe and contagious viral disease with a 100% mortality rate. It was even spreading to animals; I saw a video where a gorilla appeared to be frantically slapping its head with both hands. Since I had previously suffered from various difficult-to-treat illnesses—such as brain cancer pain, I sought medical help everywhere in hopes of a quick recovery. I came to understand that this disease affecting the gorillas might be caused by consuming medicine from "shadow officials" or "great

immortals" who act as shamans—medicine that, once ingested, immediately disrupts the body's acid-base balance, leading to intensified headaches, madness, and even death. It is a condition that no doctor can cure. [It is possible that only their master possesses the antidote. The patient must first accumulate a certain amount of money and endure a certain level of suffering before being referred, one by one, by minor deities to the leaders of the major deities—such as Zhang

Tianshi or Weituo—who specialize in capturing ghosts and demons.

Only then will they produce the antidote to cure the illness. However, the patient, including those with this condition, will not know what poison they ingested that led to their death. It is not a contagious disease.]

Yet, without considering the complexity of the issue, people in China immediately repost online propaganda, falling into the trap of amplifying fear and driving up reported incidence rates. Moreover, winter and summer are naturally peak seasons for increased incidence rates; among the tens of millions of people in a single province, dozens of people—out of a few tens of millions—may fall ill due to factors such as exposure to cold, excessive consumption of cold foods, prolonged exposure to air conditioning, or high mental stress. While this is not a contagious disease, media over-reporting presents it as a surge in COVID-19 cases, much like how reporting a murder in one area leads to a perceived nationwide increase in criminal cases within a month.

Furthermore, with today's advanced technology, viruses can be artificially created.

Moreover, every year in nature, hundreds of thousands of new species and viruses emerge, while tens of thousands of older species and viruses die off through natural selection and other evolutionary processes.

Yet medical experts mistakenly assume these are infectious viruses and immediately rush to develop not oral or inhaled preventive medications, but injectable vaccines.

These specially formulated vaccines are injected into people's bodies—a process experts refer to as “vaccine function.” However, the human body is an independent and complex system that does not permit the establishment of a new genetic system through vaccines, as this would interfere with the immune system. The strong suction of the heart's vortex draws the small vaccine molecules into the heart wall, where they bind to tiny cells and form small cavities. The potent drug properties stimulate these tiny cavities in the heart wall, increasing the long-term risk of heart disease. Furthermore, the lungs may also absorb these

substances. Furthermore, as vaccine substances circulate through the bloodstream, they pass through even smaller pores in the blood vessel walls. Repeated vaccinations, along with the small molecules from intravenous drips and infusions, continuously strain the circulatory system. Over time, this excessive strain on the circulatory system can lead to conditions such as blood clots. This is one reason why the incidence of disease in the United States today is several times higher than it was two hundred years ago.

Before vaccines were invented, viruses were dried by high-temperature baking and ground into particles to prevent them from replicating. These smaller, dead particles were then injected into the human body. If a large number of these dead particles accumulate in a specific area of the body—such as being sucked into tiny pores in the heart wall by the heart's vortex—it can lead to chronic illness over time. Although the particles cannot replicate after being pulverized, they can still release medicinal properties; experts claim this boosts immunity. In reality, these particles are like roasted seeds—planting them does not activate them. This approach has long-term side effects.

Furthermore, the smaller particles created by pulverization can easily enter the tiny pores in cell walls, as well as penetrate finer meridians and blood vessels. This is akin to dust accumulating in the grooves of a bearing, hindering its smooth rotation. In Shanghai, deaths among those over 80 who had not received the vaccine accounted for 90% of all vaccine-related deaths. If we examine the age distribution of vaccine-related deaths, the majority occurred among those in their 40s and 60s, representing premature deaths.

The problem lies in the theory behind the vaccine's formulation.

This may be the fourth issue in tracing the origins of the high incidence rate. Otherwise, if we fail to learn from this experience now,

major pandemics will recur every decade or so—such as during periods of low solar activity—and China will once again be made to take the blame.

From a traditional Chinese medicine perspective, all medicines contain some toxicity. If it is not an infectious disease but merely an epidemic, vaccines should at most be formulated as oral medications or aerosolized preventive treatments. Alternatively, they could be made into plasters applied to the navel or administered as preemptive oral preventive medications. With minimal side effects, injections would not be necessary. This critical matter requires further technical evaluation by experts to determine whether such preventive medications should be developed in the future.

Furthermore, medical theory lacks detailed guidance in this area, and there are strict requirements for the water used in intravenous drips. Medical instruments cannot observe how air moves within the body or the microscopic movements of water as it enters the body. Therefore, doctors must administer medication and treat patients in accordance with medical theory. Otherwise, no one can bear the responsibility for medical accidents.

For example, thousands of doctors in Wuhan wore heavy protective gear for extended periods, faced immense mental stress, and worked day and night treating patients with COVID-19. Exhausted to the point of falling ill themselves, they were treated with the same medications, yet several doctors passed away one after another. Therefore, while every doctor hopes to cure patients as quickly as possible, the issue does not lie with the doctors themselves, but rather with the imperfections in medical theory and methodology.

For instance, when administering intravenous fluids such as glucose during chemotherapy or radiation therapy, the patient's condition improves noticeably as the medication is absorbed into the body.

Medical textbooks recommend that for patients with chronic illnesses, intravenous therapy should be administered for three days. If effective, patients should first take traditional Chinese medicine or oral Western medicine, then pause treatment for about four days before resuming a three-day course of IV therapy. Furthermore, the infusion rate must not be too fast—the IV bag should not be hung too high. For patients with normal fluid intake, only one IV drip should be administered per day.

Ideally, the temperature of the IV solution should be maintained at the patient's body temperature or even one or two degrees higher, as this enhances the fever-reducing effect. This approach can reduce or even prevent medical complications, such as infections caused by various viruses.

Through quantitative calculation, assuming a person weighs 130 jīn, the total amount of additional fluid accumulated in the patient's body must not exceed their body weight. If a patient receives an average of one jīn of IV fluid per day, a month of continuous treatment amounts to 30 jīn. Five months of continuous treatment would total 150 jīn of fluid. The small molecules of medication dissolved in this water may amount to two or three jīn. This accumulation does not remain in the stomach to be processed and excreted through urine and feces. Instead, the small molecules of the drugs dissolved in the water remain within the patient's body.

Consider certain animals: during winter rain or snow, after a sudden intense fight or a long-distance run, they may sweat profusely and feel exhausted, so they lie down to rest or sleep. As their bodies experience fluctuations between cold and heat, they may develop a fever, much like the emergence of a new virus—though the virus does not necessarily lead to the animal's death. Since these animals have no doctors to treat them, sleeping for a few days allows their bodily functions and

energy systems to readjust, thereby strengthening their immune and resistance capabilities, and the illness resolves.

Therefore, by ensuring that intravenous fluid administration is administered in moderation, we can prevent or reduce the

situation where excess fluid, unable to be absorbed by the patient's cells, forms a vortex flowing toward the heart. This prevents the small molecular components of the medication from stimulating

the tiny pores on the heart wall, thereby reducing the risk of cardiac complications. Additionally, when intravenous fluids are administered to a patient, the water enters the lungs slowly. The small molecules in the medication form edematous masses outside

the lung membranes, blocking the flow of water into the tiny po

res of the lungs. The water in the patient's lungs is then converted into phlegm by the fever, leading to coughing and breathing difficulties. If an oxygen concentrator is used, it may even worsen the condition.

At this point, the best doctor is yourself. Refuse further IV drips and instead take the herbal formula prescribed by a TCM practitioner. Drink the herbal decoction while it's still hot, or when taking Western-prescribed pills, drink plenty of hot water with the medication. Even in winter, wear a hat on your head, wear socks on your feet, minimize air conditioning use, and sleep in a warm bed, focusing on daily rest and recuperation. Between doses of medication each day, you may also drink hot tea brewed with plenty of red tea leaves, or eat small, frequent meals of hot bean porridge. Since bean porridge serves as both tea and a meal, it is easier to absorb nutrients. Both drinking hot tea and consuming hot bean porridge help activate the body's systems to generate more heat. The fluid in the chest cavity that has not yet been fully absorbed will gradually disappear after a few days, and the clotted blood in the blood vessels will begin to dissolve the blood clots. Blood circulation will return to normal, and the severe illness will

gradually improve day by day. Under no circumstances should you receive intravenous drips or infusions while seriously ill, to avoid adverse consequences.

Why must critically ill patients wear a hat on their head and socks on their feet while drinking hot Chinese herbal decoctions? This is because prolonged intravenous fluid administration has increased dampness in the patient's body. Although hot herbal decoctions fill the intestines and immediately reduce internal dampness, the heat and steam entering the cells cause them to expand. As one cell pushes against another, hundreds of billions of cells swell, narrowing the spaces between them. This restores the patient's vitality and accelerates recovery. However, drinking just two cups of hot herbal decoction daily removes only a small amount of internal dampness. If the patient wears a hat and socks, this first prevents the body's internal heat from escaping through the head and feet. When the patient sleeps in a warm bed, even more internal dampness is expelled, and the patient may even wake up feeling much better. Of course, caregivers must observe the patient closely. In summer, avoid using two blankets; in winter, assess the patient's physical condition and tolerance. Therefore, the issue is not about viruses,

If hospitals worldwide paid attention to the method of long-term intravenous fluid therapy, it can be predicted that the global per capita mortality rate would return to the level of two hundred years ago, and the incidence of various diseases would also decrease. At the same time, this would resolve a major issue where medicine and politics are intertwined. Otherwise, what kind of war or religious force in the world could achieve the multifaceted effects of long-term intravenous fluid therapy?

Take the case of Mrs. Mao, who traveled from Nanjing to Yangzhou. She didn't catch the virus while riding the bus the whole way, but she did catch it while walking among the crowds in Yangzhou—specifically from the small number of people who weren't

wearing masks.

Of course, from a scientific perspective, the benefit of wearing a mask isn't that it has a powerful ability to block the transmission of pathogens. Rather, it neutralizes the temperature difference between the air entering the lungs and the body. For

example, in winter when the weather is cold, if a person with a weak constitution spends a long time outdoors and isn't dressed appropriately, let's assume the outdoor temperature is 15 degrees Celsius while the body's internal temperature is about 35 degrees. If cold air is inhaled into the lungs—say, once every five minutes—and

there is no mask to block it, the temperature of the air entering the lungs is at least 15 degrees lower than the internal lung temperature. You can calculate how many times the lungs are subjected to this cooling stimulus over approximately six hours.

The inhaled air is distributed to various organs for use. For instance, blood vessels—which are particularly sensitive and very fine—constantly exposed to cooling causes the blood flow within them to slow down. If one day the body is exposed to extreme cold, combined with accumulated cold from previous days, it can lead to an increase in internal dampness and blockage of

the meridians. This is particularly true for the elderly, the frail, women, and the sick. In mild cases, they may feel lethargic and weak; in severe cases, they may catch a cold or develop a viral infection. Second, wearing a mask effectively reduces the stimulation of the lungs by cold or hot air currents. It also reduces mental stress; by avoiding anxious thoughts about pathogens entering the body, one strengthens mental immunity, leading to fewer illnesses. At home, where the environment is temperature-controlled, masks are unnecessary. Otherwise, prolonged mask-wearing can increase lung strain, particularly in the elderly and frail, and make the face more susceptible to infection.

In contrast, an elderly woman in Nanjing played mahjong continuously for four days in a large card and board game room with over a hundred people before going to the hospital for treatment.



However, during this extraordinary period, she tested positive for the virus, and doctors treated her as a case in the incubation period of an infectious disease. If doctors had treated her as a viral flu and placed her in isolation, the consequences might have been less severe.

Furthermore, experts often recommend community lockdowns. Consequently, Yangzhou implemented strict controls, conducted thorough investigations, and sealed off one residential complex after another, which intensified the sense of fear among Yangzhou residents. The psychological impact of this led to a rise in infection rates among

Yangzhou's population of over 100,000, with cases also emerging among the hundreds of people in the mahjong parlor.

Upon further investigation, a small number of cases were also found among people from several provinces and cities who had come into contact with patients in residential communities outside Yangzhou, and the incidence rate continues to rise nationwide.

Are these patients suffering from a contagious disease, or a viral flu? Is it the patients' fault, or the fault of the experts who routinely recommended community lockdowns? Is it the fault of medicine or

doctors, or the fault of the superstitious experts in Yangzhou who advocated for lockdowns? Or was this originally a highly significant medical and scientific event aimed at understanding the pathogenesis and transmission routes of this disease, only to be unduly sensationalized by the media?

It is possible that there is actually insufficient evidence to prove that Ms. Mao transmitted the virus to most of China. This is also the fifth instance of tracing the source of an outbreak.

For example, in the U.S., how many cases occur per 100,000

people each winter? Moreover, the normal annual mortality rate is 0.8%. Calculating based on the U.S. population of approximately 330 million, if we subtract this normal annual incidence and mortality rate, it becomes clear that the COVID-19 incidence and mortality figures published online in the U.S. are highly suspicious

—a scheme designed to deceive the public.

They know it is not a genuine infectious disease. Because the U.S. government did not enforce city-wide or neighborhood lockdowns, its total industrial output in 2021 increased significantly. The examples above clearly demonstrate that this pandemic was caused by multiple factors. Why are the incidence and mortality rates so high? Is it a matter of transmission from animals? The following data

further illustrates the crux of the issue.

For example, 200 years ago, when people fell ill, they would treat their ailments by drinking hot herbal decoctions, applying medicated plasters, undergoing acupuncture, or receiving cupping therapy. People's

bodies did not accumulate excess waste. Consequently, they were

less prone to illness, and even when they did fall ill, they recovered quickly. However, today, people worldwide rely on intravenous drips and vaccinations for treatment and prevention. The long-term side effects of this include a lower incidence of illness during childhood, but as people enter adulthood, various factors associated with aging lead to a higher likelihood of illness.

Regardless of gender, people in their sixties—whether in good health or average health—tend to fall ill once every three years on average. Over a 60-year period, the small molecules from intravenous drips, injections, and vaccines accumulate increasingly within the body's tissues. However, the body's temperature cannot convert these small drug molecules into proteins or similar substances, so some of these molecules circulate through the bloodstream. Some are carried by air currents into cells, contributing to children's growth and weight gain—that is, an increase in body weight. Since the blood circulates through the body at least dozens of times per minute, the weight of these small drug molecules consumes a significant amount of the body's functional energy. Therefore, as people age, their bodies consume more and more of this energy. If a person suddenly catches a chill or consumes excessive amounts of cold porridge or cold rice, these factors immediately increase dampness

within the body. This leads to blocked meridians, further impeding

blood circulation and consuming even more of the body's functional energy.

People who frequently fall ill and require IV drips, those over 20 years old, members of affluent families, those who spend a lot of time in air-conditioned environments, or those under significant mental stress—including those who frequently receive vaccinations or undergo nucleic acid testing—are more prone to illness during an epidemic, and their conditions may even be more severe.

For example, in summer, high temperatures, thunderstorms, and overcast skies create low atmospheric pressure, causing fish in rivers to die from oxygen deprivation. Summer is also the season when bacteria multiply most easily, making it a time when people are prone to contracting and dying from diseases. Furthermore, summer is the peak feeding season for fish; since they are voracious eaters, they are prone to overeating and dying from indigestion.

These three issues mirror the condition of a patient with a fever. First, regarding temperature: the water used for intravenous drips transforms into smog. This is also what Traditional

Chinese Medicine refers to as "excessive dampness." Cells then

become prone to oxygen deprivation. Yet, despite daily IV drips, the body's temperature continues to generate more "haze," causing cells to become even more oxygen-deprived. Additionally, small molecules from IV medications and vaccines accumulate increasingly within the patient's bodily tissues, making them susceptible to "overfeeding" and death, much like the fish.

Furthermore, these small molecules—much like bacteria that

multiply most easily in summer water—lead to infection.

Moreover, the friction and pressure caused by the patient's fever

can transform various substances, such as iron-rich meats and processed potatoes, into a plasma-like state.

I also hope that the incidence and mortality rates of patients with common colds and fevers, as well as those with age-related conditions that occur in normal years, are not systematically reported as part of the COVID-19 pandemic statistics online. Otherwise, those responsible for the resulting inflated incidence rates should face legal sanctions.

Through this pandemic, Western medicine has demonstrated its expertise in treating infectious diseases and acute surgical conditions, achieving rapid recovery. However, regarding systemic chronic diseases—including viral illnesses—the long-term abuse of intravenous drips and fluid therapy may not reveal adverse effects in the short term. This highlights the inadequacies of medical theory.

In contrast, Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) demonstrates excellent efficacy in treating systemic chronic diseases such as cancer and viral infections. However, for thousands of years, TCM has based its theories solely on the concepts of “qī” and “blood,” neglecting the fact that approximately 70% of the human body consists of water, while “qī” and “blood” constitute only a small fraction. Furthermore, the replenishment of primal energy still depends on the proper intake of water—specifically, the balance between the quantity and temperature of water consumed.

Of course, in traditional Chinese medicine, herbs are decocted in water, and patients are given hot herbal decoctions to drink. The heat from the hot

herbal decoction penetrates every part of the body, causing the cells to expand. As one cell pushes against another, billions of cells are pushed and expanded, narrowing the spaces between cell walls. As a result, patients feel more energetic, gain strength, and recover more quickly.

Therefore, the theories of both traditional Chinese and Western medicine must be unified and grounded in physics. Once both medical theories have been refined and improved, the flexible application of water in treatment will yield better results without major side effects.

In summary, this pandemic has revealed three major errors: First, misdiagnosis—treating and preventing seasonal epidemics as if they were infectious diseases. Second, improper treatment—administering medication via hot water or intravenous drips, which can lead to long-term consequences. Third, misinformation—reporting the incidence and mortality rates of various diseases from normal years as if they were caused by the novel coronavirus, resulting in consequences that are even several times worse than those of actual infectious diseases. Fourth, the public has become overly reliant on measures such as washing hands with tap water several times a day during winter. Furthermore, since the virus is sensitive to high temperatures, practices like setting home air conditioners to higher temperatures have actually led to an increase in infection rates. The root causes include:

first, fluctuations in climate and temperature; second, intravenous fluids entering the body directly rather than being processed by the stomach; third, excessive media hype; and fourth, the use of nucleic acid tests and vaccines—which have no therapeutic effect—as preventive measures, as well as the manipulation of infection rates. These are the key issues contributing to the problem. For reference only.

Based on the above data, we can no longer pin our hopes on the pandemic reaching a turning point on a specific day. The reality is that the pandemic reaches a turning point in waves; five months later, it will hit another peak during winter or summer. If the transmissibility of the virus is further manipulated or exaggerated through media hype, the pandemic will never truly end.

Neither "zero-COVID" nor "letting it run its course" is China's policy for ending the pandemic, because time is money—it is the lives of patients and the honor of China's pandemic response. China has

over two years of pandemic experience; as evidenced by the daily incidence rates reported by the National Health Commission, cases have not been doubling every day. This proves it is a seasonal epidemic, and there is no need for epidemic prevention measures against infectious diseases. In accordance with the will of heaven, the state should immediately announce that, effective immediately, nationwide efforts to prevent the spread of the novel coronavirus are concluded. All sectors of society should return to pre-pandemic work and daily life. Each individual should take personal responsibility for preventing illness, while public health centers and hospitals should focus on

disease prevention and treatment. From this point forward, the media should be permitted to report only on the new vitality of all sectors as they vigorously pursue the Four Modernizations. The working people will then roll up their sleeves to earn their living, and with prosperity comes a sense of well-being. Good will prevail over evil, and the pandemic will be victoriously brought to an end.

The state's declaration of the pandemic's end carries great

authority. Relying on grassroots efforts would place an unbearable burden of responsibility on individuals.

Maintaining a "new normal" would increase people's psychological stress and make it easier for others to manipulate infection rates. Alternatively, the end of the

pandemic could be determined by a nationwide vote.

Just as Premier Wen Jiabao did, the state should immediately implement organizational measures to lift roadblocks and other restrictions related to the SARS virus, allowing the media to report only positive news about all units resuming work and production on the internet. Otherwise, those responsible for the consequences of chaotic reporting on the epidemic will face legal sanctions.

Of course, ending the pandemic today is no simple matter. It requires the state to follow a procedural approach similar to that of a criminal investigation: first, organize a team of medical experts; then, verify the data from 2020 to the present—specifically, among patients recently admitted to hospitals for treatment, how many were actually infected with the novel coronavirus? Only then will the true nature of the pandemic be understood. If the findings are as

On January 12, Henan police issued the following police bulletin:

Following an investigation by public security authorities,

Zhang Moudong, the regional

manager of Zhengzhou KingMed Clinical Laboratory Co., Ltd., violated the provisions of the Law on the Prevention and Control of Infectious Diseases by engaging in acts that caused the spread of COVID-19 or posed a serious risk of such spread. On January 10, 2022, the Yuzhou Municipal Public Security Bureau initiated a criminal investigation against Zhang Moudong on suspicion of criminal offenses and took compulsory measures against him. The case is currently under further investigation.

Let the entire nation know: if the state were to allocate just a fraction of the billions spent on nucleic acid testing and vaccine injections—especially given the rising incidence rates—the infection rate would immediately plummet, and the mortality rate would also drop significantly.

To minimize future outbreaks, the state has issued directives to local governments and health commissions. For instance, based on natural patterns during winter and summer, a certain incidence rate is expected per 100,000 people. If incidence and mortality rates suddenly surge, determining the nature of the disease is a scientific matter; local health commission experts must first assess and classify the disease type. For instance, in densely populated cities like Shanghai with populations exceeding 100,000, if the 10-day average incidence rate exceeds seven cases; in medium-sized cities, if it exceeds six; and in

small cities, if it exceeds five—or even doubles—the relevant local government departments must be notified once. Additionally, the Health Commission must submit a written epidemic report to the local government, detailing the nature of the outbreak (e.g., indicating



whether it may be an infectious disease), its development trends, and the Commission ' s capacity for control and treatment. Upon receiving this information, relevant government departments must take the situation seriously, monitor its development, prepare for the worst-case scenario, and immediately report to the relevant national authorities to seek guidance on whether measures such as city lockdowns are necessary.

If the incidence rate has surged sharply over the past few days—evenfold or even doubling—and the hospital mortality rate exceeds one-sixth of admitted patients, while a large number of animals are also showing a sharp rise in incidence and mortality rates, this confirms the presence of an infectious disease. The government must immediately mobilize resources and disaster relief supplies. Further investigation is required to determine the specific causes of the incidence and mortality rates: Is this a case of manipulated data or an actual infectious disease outbreak? On the other hand, decisive measures must be taken, such as first isolating and treating all patients in severely affected areas. Only after obtaining approval from higher authorities can a city-wide lockdown, the lockdown of a specific residential area, or the closure of an airport be implemented. Local governments do not have the direct authority to impose city-wide lockdowns.

Only by proceeding in this manner can local governments more scientifically grasp the true nature of the epidemic and implement appropriate organizational measures. Furthermore, this approach avoids disrupting the work and daily lives of the majority of the population. It also enables authorities to promptly identify and take firm action against any instances of deliberate manipulation of the epidemic. Additionally, it prevents arbitrary city-wide or neighborhood lockdowns that could result in unnecessary economic losses.

If the incidence rate of the epidemic increases two- or threefold in the short term and the government fails to intervene immediately, or if it imposes a city-wide lockdown without approval from higher authorities, the relevant government departments and their principal

leaders will be held accountable.

If the National Health Commission fails to promptly provide guidance to local government departments regarding the nature of the outbreak—whether it is an infectious disease or a seasonal

epidemic—or fails to specify which hospitals should be designated for treatment (e.g., traditional Chinese medicine hospitals for infectious

diseases or Western medicine hospitals for seasonal epidemics), or fails to provide timely recommendations on whether a city lockdown is necessary, it will be held accountable through the chain of command.

It is essential to leverage the advantages of a centralized management system to ensure that all tasks are carried out in an orderly and smooth manner and achieve outstanding results.

If, for four consecutive days, no new cases of COVID-19 are detected nationwide, in the country, or even in a specific region, and the majority of patients with the virus have already been discharged, the state will issue a directive requiring all hospitals to cease using

terms such as “positive” or “suspected” cases. Instead, they must revert to previous medical terminology, such as “common cold” or “viral fever.” This is because when a person falls ill—whether due to overheating after a shower, wearing light clothing for too long,

exposure to air conditioning or electric fans, consuming cold beverages from the refrigerator, or eating a bowl of cold porridge—and then rests or goes to sleep, they may become ill or develop a fever within about

fifty minutes. There is no issue of a viral incubation period. Therefore, the focus should be directly on promoting disease prevention and treatment.

Additionally, when issuing guidelines on the epidemic, please note the following:

[Nationwide Fight Against the Pandemic] The Delta variant spreads rapidly and is highly contagious; strengthen personal health protection. Ensure proper ventilation, wear masks, and never skip the seven-step handwashing routine. Maintain a one-meter distance, avoid gatherings, and keep social distancing. Report symptoms early, do not conceal them, and insist on temperature checks and prompt medical

attention. If placed under control measures, show understanding and actively cooperate with inspections. Stay home with your family to safeguard both health and family bonds. Our home is a safe haven; protecting our health depends on everyone. (Announced by the xxx Epidemic Prevention and Control Headquarters)

If one were to follow the recommendation of washing hands every seven steps, even a healthy person would be exposed to cold winter water and air entering the body repeatedly for over ten consecutive days. The temperature difference between the body and the external environment would gradually lead to an accumulation of internal dampness. Furthermore, if one frequently uses air conditioning at home for extended periods—whether to stay warm in winter or cool in summer—electromagnetic waves can disrupt the nervous system<sup>②</sup> s rest. Additionally, the temperature difference between indoors and outdoors, after about two weeks, or even just 50 minutes outdoors—especially for women, whose genetic makeup is more susceptible to the influence of mental energy—may lead to a small number of people developing colds or even fevers.

It is recommended that, prior to each epidemic season, the government compile a booklet containing information on disease prevention and treatment, health preservation practices, as well as relevant national epidemic control measures and laws, and distribute one copy to every household. This would ensure effective epidemic prevention starting at the source.

It is also recommended to use electric fans for cooling in the summer, avoid eating cold foods from the refrigerator or drinking cold beverages. In winter, when the weather is cold, wear warm yet lightweight clothing such as down jackets and cotton shoes. Minimize the use of leather jackets and shoes. Wear a mask and a hat when going out. In winter, spring, and fall, take a bath once a week. After bathing, do not sleep under air conditioning or expose yourself to the cold for more than 50 minutes. Run in place for about

ten steps every day. If you feel stressed, sing a few songs or simply reflect on the happy and joyful moments in your life. If the soles of your feet feel hot, you may have kidney yin deficiency; in that case, add

more black tea to your tea. If you are generally healthy, you may choose either green or black tea. Alternatively, pour hot water over roasted barley and let it steep for about two minutes before drinking while still warm. You may also eat small, frequent meals of warm bean porridge two or three times a day, which can serve as both a meal and a beverage. Taking a nap at noon can help prevent colds and speed up recovery; the above practices can also boost your immune system.

Use air conditioning with caution in winter and summer; do not set it higher than 18 degrees Celsius. [This applies to public places such as airplanes and trains, where air conditioning should be adjusted according to the season. Even on airplanes, the cabin temperature should be adjusted based on whether the flight is heading north or south and the current weather conditions. This reduces the accumulation of dampness in the body. If passengers rest and sleep at a designated hotel in the airport after disembarking, they should avoid using air conditioning. Avoid cold drinks from the refrigerator and cold foods. Take naps on a warm bed, drink hot tea two or three times a day, wear a mask when going out, and wear socks. In winter,

everyone—regardless of age or gender—should also wear a hat when going out. This is highly effective in preventing various illnesses.

Additionally, airports should arrange for passengers to stay at designated airport hotels for one night's rest after disembarking. Each passenger should be provided with extra tea leaves to brew a cup of

hot tea with boiling water. Drinking this hot tea within about two minutes of brewing helps prevent and treat illnesses and promotes overall health. In winter, ensuring the bed is warm before sleeping is also a responsible measure for passengers. If passengers undergo a nucleic acid test immediately after disembarking, the temperature difference between the aircraft cabin and the local environment may cause those with weaker constitutions to experience increased dampness in their bodies. This can make it difficult to pass the nucleic

acid test within approximately 40 minutes. By first spending a night at a designated airport hotel and then taking the test, every passenger can ensure their health. This approach effectively balances prevention and treatment, preventing foreign outbreaks from entering China and allowing the national borders to remain fully open.

Below is the prescription from Professor Jiang, a veteran traditional Chinese medicine practitioner:

Formula 1: Pneumonia Formula—A preventive formula for the

current Wuhan pneumonia. Ingredients: 9g raw Astragalus, 9g North

Ginseng, 9g Anemarrhena, 12g Forsythia, 9g Atractylodes, 6g Platycodon. Decoct in water and drink while still warm.

Take continuously for 6 days to prevent the current Wuhan pneumonia. Recovery is rapid, and there are no side effects. This formula was prescribed by Professor Jiang of Beijing University of Chinese Medicine for this outbreak. Traditional Chinese Medicine has a time-honored principle: during epidemics, preventive and therapeutic formulas must be made public unconditionally; one must not profit

unscrupulously by disseminating this formula. Let's show compassion!

Formula 2 Based on the Delta variant—which spreads rapidly, progresses quickly, and originated in a dry, hot region—but still

primarily affects the lungs, with early coughing, sudden fever, and a tendency toward ground-glass opacities—

I believe: rapid progression indicates a predominance of wind, and dryness indicates a predominance of heat. The initial prescription for clearing the plague and regulating the lungs is: Schizonepeta 20g, Stemona 30g, Aster 30g, White Front 18g, Tangerine Peel 12g, Platycodon 12g, Lonicera 30g, Zhebei 18g, Scutellaria 12g, Raw Gypsum 50g, Silkworm 18g, Licorice 18g, Tongshencao 30g, Grass River Cart 18g, Scrophularia 30g. Dose should be reduced for children! Subsequently, the veteran TCM doctor Zhang Yu sent another message: "Help others as circumstances allow, without seeking recognition; save the world and its people, but avoid causing trouble!"

**Formula 3: Formula for the Prevention and Treatment of COVID-19 (Zhang Yu, Yuzhong, Gansu)**

Schizonepeta 20g, Stemona 30g, Aster 30g, White Front 18g, Dried Tangerine Peel 12g, Platycodon 12g, Ginger-processed Pinellia 15g, Lonicera 30g, Zhejiang Fritillary Bulb 18g, Isatis Root 20g, Licorice 15g, Hedyotis 30g, Platycodon Rhizome 18g, Scutellaria 12g, Raw Gypsum 50g, Perilla Stem 20g, Inula Flower 20g (decocted separately), Scrophularia 50g. Omit gypsum if there is no high fever; omit Perilla Stem and Inula Flower if cough is not severe; omit Scrophularia if there is no sore throat.

This formula is for adults; children over 8 years old should take half the dose, and children under 5 years old should take one-third of the dose. Loose stools after administration are considered a positive sign. One dose reduces fever within one day; three doses stop coughing within three days; ten doses result in normal CT scan results within ten days, marking full recovery. These are the criteria for evaluation. This formula is designed to address the primary symptoms of COVID-19: dry cough, fever, fatigue, and sore throat. It is created out of a TCM practitioner's sense of duty to serve the nation, save the people, and treat the sick—without any pursuit of fame or profit, and without accepting any unfounded criticism.

This single-herb folk remedy should not be underestimated. It should be combined with scientific experimentation and laboratory analysis to further refine and promote it. This approach is highly effective for advancing medical benefits and offers a distinct advantage in responding to regional epidemics.

Additionally, relevant national documents regarding the epidemic should be distributed. Upon reviewing these documents in their spare time, everyone should immediately take proactive measures for early disease prevention and treatment. Relevant government departments must boldly and confidently declare that the COVID-19 pandemic has been successfully brought to an end in China.

I. All government news media must vigorously publicize the new atmosphere across all sectors and highlight good deeds to boost morale. No media outlet is permitted to report on pandemic-related information. Anyone who violates this will be immediately punished in accordance with the law.

II. All sectors nationwide are required to immediately and fully resume their previous work, living, and learning environments. This includes the return of all students to school, which will improve the quality of education and, in turn, revitalize the market economy across all sectors, enabling everyone to devote themselves to the great cause of the Four Modernizations!

III. All medical personnel, staff at disease control centers, and relevant officials at all levels of local government must remain vigilant against the epidemic and must not let their guard down. They must carry out all necessary work to prevent and treat diseases.

Four: In the event of a future infectious disease outbreak in a specific area requiring city lockdowns or road closures, the following conditions must be met: there must be multiple consecutive incidents of human and livestock deaths in the locality; local experts must technically confirm that the cause is an infectious disease; and a written report must be submitted to the provincial-level government or higher. Only after the government dispatches an expert team from the competent authority to verify the situation on-site and confirm its accuracy will the government approve the initial containment of the outbreak area by blocking external traffic. Priority must be given to treating infectious diseases. No individual or local department has the authority to impose city or road lockdowns without approval from the provincial-level government or higher.

5. Do not believe or spread rumors; do not engage in illegal or disorderly conduct.

6. Properly manage donations of funds and supplies from all parties during the epidemic. Also, address the reduced income of people affected by the epidemic, particularly by providing relief subsidies to the poor and disabled before the Spring Festival.

7. Vigorously promote positive energy and encourage young people to learn from good deeds and role models. They should love their country, value labor, and dedicate themselves to the great cause of the Four Modernizations.

VIII. No organization or individual shall be permitted to exploit the pandemic to exaggerate its dangers or to sell their products or goods at inflated prices. Any violations will be severely punished upon discovery.

9. For instance, when a severe earthquake struck Beijing during the Qing Dynasty, Emperor Guangxu ordered military sacrifices or the release of animals for a certain number of days, while some emperors opened the national treasury to distribute grain and aid the victims. Some emperors specifically pardoned a group of prisoners. These actions were all aimed at alleviating social tensions. As the accumulated resentment, hatred, and grievances directed toward the heavens diminished, the incidence rate also decreased. Since winter and

summer are peak periods for disease outbreaks, some people cannot take advantage of the pandemic. Otherwise, if the pandemic cannot be brought to an end, it will hinder the development of productive forces and undermine social stability and unity.

Drawing on my experience, starting on January 14, 2020, I posted over a thousand comments on Toutiao and Kandan Express, offering suggestions such as: "If this illness is not a contagious disease, traditional Chinese medicine can cure it; Western medicine can also cure it as long as patients avoid intravenous drips, drink hot water, and take oral Western medication."

For example, during the 2003 SARS outbreak in Guangzhou, I saw in the Yangzhou Daily that a deputy mayor of Beijing had been dismissed for failing to effectively manage the SARS outbreak, and Yangzhou had also closed its roads. After reading the newspaper that morning, I immediately wrote a letter of recommendation and sent it

by registered mail to Premier Wen. The headline read: "Request to



Immediately Lift Improper Measures Against SARS” ( ) to prevent exploitation by environmentalists. The content was about two pages

long, and I vouched for the correctness of my suggestions with my life. [Zhongnanhai Mailbox] Upon receiving the letter, Premier Wen immediately ordered organizational measures to lift the road closures and other measures implemented to combat the SARS virus. He also instructed the media to report only on the resumption of work at various units, as well as positive stories and good news online; otherwise, those responsible for any resulting consequences would face legal sanctions. From that point on, there were no further cases of SARS. Had the registered letter been delayed by even a single day, flights at Beijing Airport would have been grounded.

My understanding of the origin and prevention of the novel coronavirus disease: Once this article is published in a world-renowned journal, I can predict that as long as all countries take this seriously—paying close attention to the volume

and administration of intravenous fluids—and the media refrains from treating this as an infectious disease outbreak, there will be no need to report other incidence or mortality rates, as these are matters for health authorities and hospitals. The global outbreak will be completely over within two months, by the end of March.

If, as stated in the final paragraph of the article, all nations worldwide carry out effective public health awareness campaigns, the incidence and mortality rates of all diseases globally will drop to levels seen two hundred years ago. Otherwise, hospitals will once again see patients with new viruses and other diseases.

Do the families of patients, holding the article published in the American scientific journal on February 16, 2023, suggesting the pandemic has ended, question whether the medical theory is flawed?

If you do not hold medical theory accountable, there will be no end in sight to when the pandemic will end or when cancer mortality

rates will decrease.

Otherwise, without learning from past experiences, every winter after December 20 and every summer after August 20, there will still be patients requiring long-term hospitalization, facing issues such as excessive or improperly administered intravenous fluids, and the emergence of new viruses. Patients can

use this article to raise concerns regarding whether there are major flaws in medical theory. Only by doing so can we reduce future incidence rates—particularly patient mortality rates—saving hundreds of thousands of lives worldwide each year. Furthermore, this will reduce the likelihood of viruses replicating within the body's intracellular eccentric void fields and evolving into diseases like tuberculosis. People worldwide will enjoy peace, contentment, and longer lives.

This article is intended solely for the reference of experts. I am not a professional writer; I am merely fulfilling my scientific duty and expressing my desire to serve my country and its people. I have no intention of harming any party, nor do I seek any personal gain or fame. I also do not accept any malicious criticism, as I am an elderly person with a disability certificate.

References: Excerpts from over 20,000 comments published on KanDian Express and Toutiao

This disease is seasonal; Traditional Chinese Medicine can cure it.

January 14, 2020

My Experience in Preventing and Treating Illnesses, January 24, 2020

Request to Immediately Lift Improper City and Road Lockdowns, January 28, 2020

Most People Are Terrified of the Virus, Treating It Like a Monster (February 1, 2020)

Why Are Cases of the Common Cold Surging Nationwide Right Now? February 6, 2020

Under No Circumstances Should Patients Be Treated with IV Drips.

February 7, 2020

There Are Tiny Rod-Shaped Structures Surrounding the CellMembrane February 20, 2020  
You are sending doctors to assist overseas. April 3, 2020 Asymptomatic individuals cannot be classified as certain to develop COVID-19. Posted on Toutiao at 1:50 AM on April 6, 2020My theory has been validated by autopsy

findings

"Talking About the World Through Tai Chi" — Novels and Articles

Published in the Academic Arena

<http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>

"Science and Technology News," Issue 18, 2007, pp. 5-6: An elliptical diagram in a comprehensive discussion on the theory of the unified field.

Why Do Ice Ages Occur Irregularly? Research on Earthquake

Evolution <http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa2012suppl>

and click "Full Text"

Call for an Immediate Halt to Chemotherapy and Radiation Therapy for Leukemia, Cancer, and AIDS

Why Can't the Helical Arms of DNA Unwind?

"Origin and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus" Wins Grand

Prize at Annual Conference of Scientists and Economists, March 2021

Asian Journal publishes "Origin and Prevention of a New Type of Pneumonia Coronavirus"

Moxibustion Friends Association, August 19: Air Conditioning Opens the Door Wide for "Cold Dampness" to Invade;

Moxibustion Friends Association Issue 262





## 跪下来求核酸检测不能做

从一月18号起关注武汉新型冠状病毒病。直至武汉从要做核酸检测了，我共在看点快报和今日头条上发评论不低于1000条。都是希望千万不能封城封路和利小风险多的核酸检测不能做。因缺乏实际治病好效果。否则会发病率增加，大好形势又被加核酸检测扰乱。因为有些事不能网上作详细说明具体的原因。

也因为十万个人去做核酸检测时，有几个人受凉严重或平时工作繁忙，如开饮食店人员，他们工作忙，而且生意时好时坏，就会有精神压力，或者从很远地方急匆匆赶去做核酸检测，或者有个别人受凉了，或到了检测站口渴了，就将随身带冷饮料喝下肚，或有些人到了核酸检测站，看见到做核酸有些人害怕状，自己心里更十分紧张等等不确定因素，就十万个人中有几个人生感冒发烧或者是无症状。都是属正常现象。因为每一天都有正常发病率，而且中医是标本兼治，中药效果显著，没有死亡率及副作用。若是中国没有中医来治病，就同国外核酸检测后，天天发病率增多，特别死亡率也是一个样子呀。那是多么可怕的后果。就将好不容易才取得了武汉防疫重大胜利。现在就被核酸检测又搞乱了。因他们理论认为无症状就是发展下去是冠状病毒传染病的早期症状。

直开国际玩笑。都未弄清楚是季节性瘟疫还是传染病？又是谁给它作用力才能进化成冠状病毒？

而且冠状病毒就像吃人的老虎一样，也有生老病死，如果它没有饭吃，它就饿死了。若现在的冠状病毒真是传染病，至少近亲好友们定先被传染。或者大量动物也有发病率，特别是死亡率高等问题。而且全世界凡是做核酸检测的国家，都是发病率和死亡率最高。

这个问题其中有奥妙，如西医学不是医学和物理学理论，就为病人挂水输液引起的误诊误治问题。我希望你们坚决不要再做核酸检测。

就是感冒发烧无症状病人全部吃中药。不要挂水治疗，病人一定要卧床休息几天，并注意保暖发汗，多喝热水，身上要穿长袖子和长裤衣服，不能再吃冷饮冷食，也要注意个人卫生，勤洗手，勤通风，勤消毒，勤戴口罩。

热评



科学家：

附：布什总统2008年11月回信On behalf of President Bush, thank you for your correspondence.We appreciate hearing your views and welcome your suggestions.Due to the large volume of e-mail received, the White House can not respond to every message.Thank you again for taking the time to write. 我的建议终于十天后，扬州晚报2008年12月5号报纸上登了美国研究人员2日说，发现经常接触CT扫描病人增加患癌几率升高。所以证明了我的文章正确

▲ 文章:全国累计确诊病例9692例 累计死亡病例213例



识别二维码  
查看文章





● 科学家：

任何神仙控制不住每一到冬季天气冷，就发病率  
和死亡率都增多。

因为人，不像动物那样长出更多的绒毛，将身  
体进行自动调温保暖。而且这些长毛和绒毛非  
常轻，仅几两重。当动物奔跑运动去寻食，或遇  
到强敌作殊死战斗，这些身体上绒毛不会影响激  
烈的战斗，就是转化出热能立即被散热掉。

尽管它们生活环境恶劣，但它们有这个天然空  
调器，就得到保护，动物少生病和死亡的动物  
少。

而人类首先冬季每一个人穿衣服和鞋子，都比  
夏季重至少一斤，每一天站或坐十小时，就身体  
内推挤摩擦转化出水分子多，就是湿气增加，  
十万个人中有几个人容易生感冒发烧的病。不  
奇怪。大家要多保重身体，不要有过多精神压  
力，不要太劳累和受凉，不喝冷饮不吃冷食，冬  
夏都要少用慎用空调..就可减少电磁波干扰神经  
系统休息。还要冬季一定要穿羽绒服之类保暖  
的轻衣服，少穿皮鞋，秋、冬、春季节每约五天去  
浴室洗澡一次，洗澡后身上还热呼呼的不能吹空  
调不能穿单衣时时间长，睡觉时床面上要放暖  
和些，有条件中午左或右侧侧睡床上休息或睡觉，  
就是将身体向前倾点睡，就将身体内运动结  
构、能量结构得到了调整，增强了各器官的免疫  
力，这要做到以上，就不容易生病，这次季节性  
感冒病的疫情大灾难，就立即结束！



来自微信收藏

▲ 文章:石家庄疫情主要分布在农村 农民占70.07% 以中老年为主



● 科学家：

钟老您好！

我支持中医将这次冠状病毒定为瘟疫。就是冬季天气冷，而人们活动和运动身体转化成热量，甚至是汗储存在内衣内裤里。由于棉袄保暖，当人们休息下来身体上受一冷一热就容易感冒甚至会发烧。

为什么会有那么多生病，简单的说二是环境造成了很多人意念恐慌感压力大，稍微受凉或劳累，就像谈恋爱失恋的人一样加大精神压力就生病就，去医院如核酸检查后更恐怖了，挂水等治疗等，可挂水的水是从上向下加速进入身体内，同身体温度差推挤摩擦发热，至少延迟退烧时间，，甚至会转化成肺炎，，

这个消息传播出去，从原来十万人仅有两三个



科学家：

西医挂水没有中医煎药水喝的好。

而且这次更需要中医标本共治。如古代一次次瘟疫都是中医大显身手治病。时间就是生命，必须要立即落实具体的事，才事半功倍夺取全面胜利。因我民科，说话没官科作用大。所以请习主席定夺！

▲ 文章:最新：累计确诊17205例，死亡361例！湖北确诊病例破万



识别二维码  
查看文章



My understanding of the origin, prevention and treatment of new pneumonia virus disease

San chunwu

[1999- E-mail (1341 nanoweb): Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province, China; mainly engaged in the research of natural sciences; 1962]

Unit name: Jiangsu Yangzhou South Electric Group Co., Ltd.

Zip code: 225008 E-mail: yangw0114@163.com WeChat account: scm20171020

Abstract: the incidence rate of the world epidemic is many, long and wide. There are at least five reasons. In 1931, the American doctor drache cooperated with his colleagues to produce the world's first bottle of commercial infusion products in the transformed old garage. In the Second World War, it was widely used in the rescue and treatment of dehydration, excessive bleeding, fever and wound infection. For example, within 30 hours of infusion, the patient's fever will be reduced immediately, the infected wound will be treated with western medicine, especially for bacteria. At that time, the side effects of chronic diseases, viruses and long-term infusion could not be found in a short time. Finally, it discusses the origin and prevention of the new pneumonia virus disease, so as to establish effective national epidemic prevention and capture the economic losses in the epidemic situation.

[San chunwu, *My understanding of the origin, prevention and treatment of new pneumonia virus disease*. *N Y Sci J* 2023;16(2):39-57]. ISSN 1554-0200 (print), ISSN 2375-723X (online) <http://www.sciencepub.org/newyork>, 05 doi:10.7537/nysj.160221.05

Key words: Oval chart, SARS, leukemia, cancer, AIDS, germs, viruses, climate change, infectious diseases, epidemics, Chinese medicine, hanging water infusion, media, prevention and control.

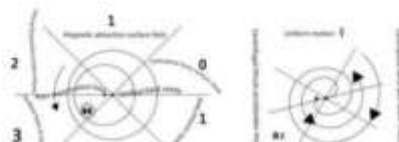
It is reported that since receiving the unexplained pneumonia sample from Wuhan on December 30, 2019, Wuhan virus Institute has been fully carrying out the pathogen identification, virus traceability, pathogen detection, antiviral drugs and vaccine development of new pneumonia virus in 2019. On January 2, 2020, the institute obtained the sequence of the whole genome of 2019 coronavirus. On January 5, the new pneumonia virus was successfully isolated and put into the national virus resource bank according to the standard on January 9.

Nanocoronavirus is a kind of pathogen that mainly

affects respiratory and intestinal diseases. There are many regularly arranged protrusions on the surface of this kind of virus particles. The whole virus particle is like a crown of an emperor, so it is named "coronavirus".

Why the new pneumonia virus disease occurred all over the world and why the virus mutated, we should further explore scientifically and uncover its face. The following ellipse chart for problem setting and problem solving is attached, which is also the yin-yang chart of China's Tai Chi dynamic field.

Ellipse movement trend chart. (See the figure below)





## Chapter 23

### How China Can Reduce Cancer Incidence and Mortality

Yangzhou

Sun Chunwu

According to the state-run media outlet Sichuan Television

[http://www.scgbds.cn/popular\\_scienceinfo/26593.html](http://www.scgbds.cn/popular_scienceinfo/26593.html)

, as of December 28, 2022, there were 4.57 million cancer patients in China alone. This accounts for

23.7% of the world's

new cancer cases. For example, as of August 12, 2021—people are diagnosed with cancer every day, and

multiple patients may be diagnosed within a single minute. In China alone, approximately 10,000 new cancer cases are diagnosed daily. When you look at these numbers, do they make you feel anxious?

Furthermore, in 2023, the number of cancer deaths in the United States is projected to reach 609,820. This data reflects that cancer remains a major public health issue. In the United States, cancer is the second leading cause of death, following only heart disease. Globally, out of every 100 cancer patients,

21 are Chinese. This is data from the World Health Organization (WHO) and the International Agency for Research on Cancer (IARC)...

In China, prior to 1966, when people fell ill, they were treated with intramuscular injections in the buttocks, oral Western medicine tablets taken with hot water, hot herbal decoctions, medicated plasters, acupuncture, or cupping. This left minimal additional waste accumulated within the body. Consequently, people were less prone to illness, and even when they did fall ill, they recovered quickly.

Regardless of gender, people in their sixties typically fall ill once every three years on average, depending on whether they are in good health or average health. Over the course of 60 years, small molecules from intravenous drips, injections, and vaccines accumulate in various parts of the body. These circulate through the blood and qi.

Some of these small molecules are swirled by air currents into new cells, which also cause children to grow taller and gain weight.

People who frequently receive IV drips, those over 20 years old, members of affluent families, those who spend

a lot of time in air-conditioned environments, or those under significant mental stress—including those who have received numerous vaccinations or undergone frequent nucleic acid testing—are more prone to illness and may experience more severe symptoms.

For example, in summer, when temperatures are high, thunderstorms occur, and atmospheric pressure drops on overcast days, fish in rivers are prone to dying from oxygen deprivation. Summer is also the season when bacteria multiply most easily, making it a time when people are prone to contracting and dying from diseases. Furthermore, summer is the peak feeding season for fish; as they are voracious eaters, they are prone to overeating and dying from indigestion.

These three issues correspond to the condition of a patient with a fever. First, the patient's fever causes the cold water from each IV drip to be transformed into a form of smog that accumulates within the skin. This is also what traditional Chinese medicine refers to as "excessive dampness" and "blocked meridians." Yet, by continuing to administer IV fluids daily, the resulting "haze" becomes even denser, causing cells to suffer from even greater oxygen deprivation. Furthermore, the small molecules from the IV fluids and vaccines accumulate increasingly

within the patient' s bodily tissues, making them prone to "overfeeding" and death, much like the fish.

Furthermore, small molecules and other substances—much like bacteria that multiply most easily in summer water—can cause illness. Even the body' s feverish temperature at this time, combined with the forces of friction and pressure, can cause various substances—such as meat and potatoes high in iron content—to be processed into a plasma state, further weakening the body and causing even more unbearable pain throughout the entire body. If the patient then takes painkillers, it can lead to poisoning, worsening of the condition, or even coma. Alternatively, if the ionic state is suddenly interrupted, the patient' s survival becomes difficult. This is the core issue addressed in this article.

Generally, children have lower blood viscosity and a lower incidence of illness. In contrast, the bodies of the elderly have accumulated more small molecules, red blood cells, white blood cells, platelets, water, sugar, fat, protein, potassium salts, calcium salts, and other impurities over decades. This results in higher blood

viscosity in the elderly. Furthermore, when the flow of qi and blood reaches their legs, the elderly often find themselves unable to climb stairs.

Moreover, rural areas no longer rely on injectable solutions for treatment as they did 40 years ago; instead, both urban and rural hospitals commonly use intravenous drips for treatment. This is particularly true for patients with high fevers caused by colds. Approximately one in 100,000 patients receiving intravenous drips may develop other illnesses, or their condition may even worsen.

White blood cells in the human body are replaced every 7 days, or every 28 days along with blood cells. However, neither doctors nor patients are aware of this principle. In Western medical practices where patients receive daily IV drips, instead of sending excess cold water and cold energy into the patient's stomach for processing—where the excess water and impurities would then be excreted through urine and feces with minimal side effects—the cold water is instead injected directly into the skin. However, the tiny pores on the membranes of hundreds of billions of cells are small, and water absorption is slow. Excess water and the mist



generated by the patient's body heat accumulate between cells. As a result, cells absorb even less water. Excess water also enters the bloodstream and flows toward the lungs. The tiny pores on the lung membranes are also small, so water absorption is slow. The excess water swirls outside the lung membranes, forming edema that blocks water from entering the lungs. The water inside the lungs, heated by the patient's body temperature, turns into thick phlegm, causing the patient to experience difficulty breathing and coughing.

There is an ancient saying in Traditional Chinese Medicine: "A thousand colds are easy to dispel, but a single dampness is hard to remove." Using air conditioning, consuming cold foods, irregular eating habits, high mental stress, and living in damp environments are all major culprits that exacerbate internal dampness in the body. If not expelled in a timely manner, it will lurk within the body, creating potential health risks.

If dampness rises upward, it can cause skin blemishes, acne, and an oily complexion; if it descends downward, it can trigger a series of gynecological disorders and harm the body. When dampness affects the skin, it can cause skin

conditions such as eczema; when it penetrates the bones, it can trigger arthritis and frozen shoulder. Internally, dampness first attacks the spleen and stomach, then settles in the kidneys, and subsequently affects the heart and lungs. At the same time, it descends to invade the liver, gallbladder, and bladder—no organ is spared. When intravenous fluid therapy is necessary, the approach must be refined.

Doctors should make decisions based on the specific condition. For chronic conditions treated with IV drips for up to ten days, antibiotics and other targeted medications to kill pathogens may be used. However, if the patient's condition improves, remains unchanged, or even worsens, the IV drip must be suspended. Treatment should then switch to drinking hot water and taking Western medicine tablets, drinking hot Chinese herbal decoctions, or pausing treatment for a few days to observe the patient's condition.

For known infectious pathogens, if the patient's fever subsides within 48 hours, treatment should continue.

However, if the fever persists for several days, the use of intravenous fluids—including the addition of antibiotics or other potent medications—must be discontinued. Since the

IV solution is cold—below the patient’ s body temperature—continuous administration of cold fluids for more than ten days, especially if IV therapy is overused, can trigger toxic side effects. The patient’ s elevated body temperature may intensify these toxic effects, potentially leading to the development of pneumonia, tuberculosis, or new viral infections.

Scientists should also develop a heating device for IV drips that maintains a temperature one or two degrees higher than the patient’ s body temperature. This would reduce the amount of “smog” (toxins) produced inside the patient’ s body, thereby promoting a faster recovery.

If the government issues a directive today requiring all hospitals and doctors to limit the volume and frequency of IV drips, this will ensure that the amount of fluid administered does not exceed the body’ s absorption limit. Additionally, the use of imported medical equipment for examinations should be minimized or avoided, as the high default settings of such devices can cause mental stress, slow blood flow, weaken magnetic field strength, and lower immunity—all of which genuinely increase the risk of cancer and other diseases.

Otherwise, if medical accidents occur due to the overuse of IV drips, they will be dealt with severely. By implementing

the above measures, we can reduce or even prevent the occurrence of cancer and viral diseases.

Furthermore, around the 2026 Spring Festival, the great initiative of nationwide free healthcare can be implemented. This will also facilitate the normal and large-scale sale of various agricultural products in the market.

Furthermore, social media must leverage its strengths of being quick, concise, and effective to make new contributions toward ending cancer as soon as possible!

We must act immediately—just as the National Health Commission's COVID-19 platform reported daily infection and mortality rates during the Wuhan outbreak—by publishing information every day, every ten days, or at the latest once a month regarding whether major hospitals have detected new viruses and what the cancer incidence rates are. Social media will play a crucial role in oversight and accountability. China would then shed its reputation as a nation plagued by chronic diseases. This would mark yet another great achievement for the people's health!!

Most people are terrified of viral infections, fearing them like the plague  
Sun Chunwu

Issues such as not touching elevator handrails, or contracting the coronavirus when interacting with someone who isn't wearing a mask and is expelling droplets from their mouth. [Of course, from a scientific perspective, the benefit of wearing a mask isn't that it has a powerful ability to block the transmission of pathogens. Rather, it neutralizes hot and cold air currents before they enter the lungs and body, reducing the impact of cold or heat on the lungs and thereby protecting one's health.

Because of the cold winter weather, people with weaker constitutions who spend long periods outdoors—especially if they are not dressed appropriately—face a risk. Suppose the outdoor temperature is  $5^{\circ}\text{C}$ , while the body's internal temperature is approximately  $36^{\circ}\text{C}$ . If cold air is inhaled into the lungs every five minutes without a mask to block it, the temperature difference between the inhaled air and the lungs is at least  $25^{\circ}\text{C}$ . Calculating this over approximately six hours, the lungs are subjected to repeated temperature drops, and the inhaled air is distributed to various organs for use.

Since blood vessels are extremely sensitive and delicate, repeated exposure to cold causes the blood flow within them to slow

down. If one day you are exposed to particularly severe cold, combined with the accumulated cold from previous days, it transforms into internal dampness that gradually worsens, leading to blocked meridians. This is especially true for the elderly, the frail, women, and infants. In mild cases, they may feel lethargic and weak; in severe cases, a common cold can develop into a fever and a full-blown illness. Upon admission to the hospital, patients are treated with daily IV drips to combat the virus. Not only does the fever fail to subside, but it often progresses into pneumonia, prompting doctors to deploy their

“secret weapon”: antibiotics administered via IV drip to treat the pneumonia. However, since the IV solution is cold, the temperature difference upon entering the body generates heavy dampness and fog-like conditions. Antibiotics, which kill pathogens, are indeed the specific remedy.

Furthermore, the small molecules of the intravenous medication enter the eccentric cavities of lung cells. However, due to the cells’ vortex function, regardless of whether the molecules are beneficial or harmful, or their quantity, they are all packaged by the vortex, replicated into more small molecules, and stored in the eccentric cavities. This process generates high temperature

and pressure, causing the small molecules in the cavities to evolve into proteins, thereby losing their medicinal efficacy. If intravenous fluid administration continues, it can lead to persistent low-grade fever. The inflamed wound eventually forms a nodule—that is, it solidifies into a core. The formation of this nodule signifies the emergence of a spherical structure, marking the birth of a living entity. The body's internal heat currents and the small molecules of antibiotics spiral inward toward the low-temperature center of the nodule, evolving into pulmonary tuberculosis. This also causes any medication entering the eccentric void field of the tuberculosis to not only fail to kill the tuberculosis but, due to the vortex function of the tuberculosis, have those drugs—regardless of their quality or quantity—all packaged by the vortex and replicated into more tuberculosis-like viruses. Furthermore, the cold water from the IV fluids is transformed into smog, intensifying the dampness; if this persists long-term, it causes even greater harm to the patient's body.

If intravenous fluid administration is stopped, the patient should drink hot herbal decoctions, wear a hat on their head and socks on their feet during

winter, sleep in a warm bed, and rest or sleep diligently every day. Between doses of medication each day, they may also drink hot tea brewed with plenty of red tea leaves two or three times, or eat small, frequent meals of hot bean porridge. Since bean porridge serves as both a meal and a beverage, and its nutrients are more easily absorbed, consuming hot tea or hot bean porridge helps activate the body's systems to generate more heat. The fluid in the chest cavity that has not yet been fully absorbed will gradually disappear after a few days, and the blood clots in the blood vessels will begin to dissolve. Blood circulation will return to normal, and the patient's condition will improve day by day. Under no circumstances should IV drips be administered during severe illness to prevent adverse consequences.

The hot herbal decoctions given to the patient daily serve two purposes: first, they fill the intestines with medicinal fluids, providing the patient with a substantial amount of heat; second, the herbs are dissolved in the hot decoction through high-temperature boiling, or when hot water is used to take Western medicine tablets, the ineffective components are processed by the stomach and



excreted through urine and stool. When the steam from the hot herbal decoction enters the cold walls of the lungs affected by tuberculosis, it provides the feverish patient with additional heat and medicinal properties, accelerating the expulsion of dampness from the tuberculosis-affected area.

On the other hand, when hot herbal decoctions enter the cells, they are transformed into vapor by heat. With the force of this vapor, they can penetrate everywhere. For example, a bowl of hot herbal decoction typically weighs thirty times more than a bowl of water, and it is hot, vaporous liquid. Just as a qigong master unleashes immense force, this causes the cells to expand, pushing against one another. This process causes the hundreds of billions of cells in the body to expand, reducing the gaps between them. As a result, the patient gains strength and recovers more quickly. Furthermore, external harmful substances, such as viruses, find it much harder to penetrate the spaces between cells. Therefore, when herbal decoctions are administered after proper preparation, they exert a far greater effect within the body than cold intravenous fluids or cold vaccine solutions, and they do so without side effects.

Wearing masks actually reduces psychological stress; by not worrying about germs entering the

body, people strengthen their mental immunity and fall ill less often. Of course, at home—where temperature fluctuations are minimal, much like in autumn—it is not necessary to wear a mask.

So-called tuberculosis is a contagious disease.

For example, in a prison, if more than ten prisoners who refuse to confess their crimes are treated as if they have tuberculosis, and two prisoners are forcibly

made to hold each other's heads and maintain

mouth-to-mouth contact for more than ten minutes,

only the two who are timid and physically weak will contract tuberculosis, while the others will not be infected.

As written by a foreign doctor in *\*Is Cancer Not a Disease?\** A Groundbreaking Perspective That Subverts Traditional

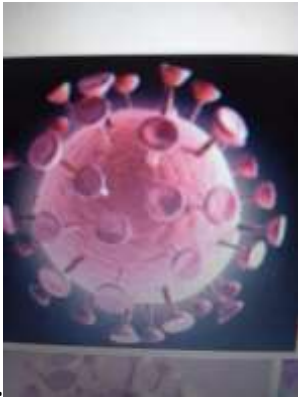
Medicine>—please take a look.

Everyone's hands carry various bacteria and viruses,

and they are also present in the air. Just as there is a

spear, there is a shield. Every human body is essentially a series of steel Great Walls; it is no easy task for any bacteria or virus to penetrate these walls. For instance, the immune function of white blood cells immediately blocks viruses or, regardless of whether they are beneficial or harmful, bundles them all together, swirls them into clusters, and breaks them down into small molecules. They are

then eliminated through urine and feces, shed through the body ' s metabolic processes, or destroyed by



medication.

## HIV

For those prone to panic, it is akin to a soldier

on the battlefield who dares not engage the enemy in close combat. Furthermore, in adults, 30 billion cells die every day, and 1% to 10% of these are cancer cells. In other words, everyone has cancer cells. In adults, millions of cancer cells are produced every day. The growth and death of cancer cells are just like those

of normal cells—as natural as clouds drifting across

the sky. Coronaviruses within cells are eliminated through the body ' s metabolic processes. Moreover, since coronaviruses are parasites, once

they leave the human body, they lose the ability to replicate and produce more viruses; in other words, once they die, the same virus cannot reappear.

If Western medicine pays attention to the

volume of intravenous fluids administered, or focuses on drinking hot water and taking oral medication—or, alternatively, administering injections—its efficacy is significant, and recovery is accelerated. There would be no mortality rate. Wuhan should allow traditional Chinese medicine to participate in treating this seasonal epidemic.

People shouldn't be terrified by the sensationalist online hype. Think about it: if those viruses were independent living organisms, could measures like city lockdowns and road closures really stop them from moving? When I'm engaged in R&D and inventing new products—which is hard work requiring both physical and mental effort—I often use a small grinder to grind or cut steel plates for machine parts. By lunchtime, when I take off my mask, there's still black dust inside and outside my nostrils. I have to wrap a corner of a towel around my finger, insert it into my nostril, and twist it four or five times before the black dust is gone. But the towel can't reach the deepest parts of my nostrils. Yet, I have worked tirelessly in the laboratory for over forty years. Relying solely on my own self-care routine, I haven't set foot in any hospital in Yangzhou—large or small—for over thirty years, nor have I suffered from a cold or fever for over a

decade. Now 73 years old, I remain full of energy and dedicated to my scientific research.

Therefore, just as a door hinge never rots and flowing water never stagnates, the coronavirus cannot parasitize human cells. They are doomed to extinction, with no offspring to carry on their lineage. After all, every year in nature, tens of thousands of new species emerge, while tens of thousands of older species naturally disappear and die out.

Therefore, everyone should take good care of themselves: avoid overexertion and getting chilled; do not eat cold foods or drink cold beverages from the refrigerator; and use air conditioning sparingly and with caution. In winter, wear warm, lightweight clothing such as down jackets; minimize the use of leather jackets and shoes; wear a mask and a hat when going out; and during the fall, winter, and spring seasons, take a bath once a week. After bathing, do not wear thin clothing for extended periods to avoid catching a cold and falling ill. Drink hot tea two or three times a day, do a few dozen steps of on-the-spot running daily, and keep your bed warm when sleeping.

This will boost your immune system, help prevent and treat illnesses, and even promote longevity. This major disaster caused by seasonal winter weather

changes will soon come to an end! Wishing all netizens continuous good luck! May everything go well! Next,  
everyone will strike it rich!! Let ' s keep  
working hard!!!  
January29,2020

Chapter 25

## How China Can Reduce Cancer

Incidence and Mortality Yangzhou Sun Chunwu

Based on information from the state-runSichuan Television

[http://www.scgbds.cn/popular\\_scienceinfo/26593.html](http://www.scgbds.cn/popular_scienceinfo/26593.html)

, as of December 28, 2022, there were 4.57 million cancer patients in China alone.

This accounts for 23.7% of the world' s new cancer cases.

For example, on August 12, 2021—people are diagnosed with cancer every day, and multiple

patients may be diagnosed within a single minute. In China, approximately 10,000 new cancer cases are diagnosed daily. When you look at these numbers, do they make you feel anxious?

Furthermore, in 2023, the number of cancer deaths in the United States is projected to reach 609,820. This data reflects that cancer remains a major public health issue. In the United States, cancer is the second leading cause of death, following only heart disease.

Out of every 100 cancer patients worldwide, 21 are Chinese. This data comes from the World Health Organization (WHO) and the International Agency for Research on Cancer (IARC)...

In China, prior to 1966, when people fell ill, they were treated with intramuscular injections in the buttocks, oral Western medicine tablets taken with hot water, hot herbal decoctions, medicated plasters, acupuncture, or cupping. As a result, fewer

toxins were left behind in the body. Consequently, people were less prone to illness, and even when they did fall ill, they recovered quickly.

Regardless of gender, people in their sixties typically fall ill once every three years on average, depending on whether they are in good health or average health. Over the course of 60 years, small molecules from intravenous drips, injections, and vaccines accumulate in various parts of the body.

These circulate through the blood and qi. Some of these small molecules are swirled by air currents into new cells, which also cause children to grow taller and gain weight.

People who frequently receive IV drips, those over 20 years old,



members of affluent families, those who spend a lot of time in air-conditioned environments, or those under significant mental stress—including those who have received numerous vaccinations or undergone frequent nucleic acid testing—are more prone to illness and may experience more severe symptoms.

For example, in summer, high temperatures, thunderstorms, and overcast skies create low atmospheric pressure, causing fish in rivers to die from oxygen deprivation. Summer is also the season when bacteria multiply

most easily, making it a time when people are prone to contracting and dying from diseases. Furthermore, summer is the peak feeding season for fish; as they are voracious eaters, they are prone to overeating and dying from indigestion.

These three issues correspond to the condition of a patient with a fever. First, the patient's fever causes the cold water from each IV drip to be transformed into a form of smog that accumulates within the skin. This is also what traditional Chinese medicine refers to as "excessive dampness"

and "blocked meridians." Yet, by

continuing to administer IV fluids daily, the resulting "haze" becomes even denser, causing cells to suffer from even greater oxygen deprivation.

Furthermore, small molecules from the IV fluids and vaccines accumulate increasingly within the patient's bodily tissues, making them prone to "overfeeding" and death, much like the fish.

Furthermore, these small molecules—much like bacteria that

multiply rapidly in summer water—can

lead to infection. At this point, the friction caused by the patient's fever can transform various substances, such as iron-rich meats and processed potatoes, into a plasma-like state, further weakening the body and causing unbearable pain throughout the entire body. If the patient then takes painkillers, it can lead to poisoning, worsening of the condition, or even coma.

Alternatively, if the ionic state is suddenly halted, the patient's survival

becomes difficult. This is the core issue of this article.

Generally, children have lower blood viscosity and a lower incidence of illness. In contrast, the bodies of the elderly have accumulated more small molecules, red blood cells, white blood cells, platelets, water, sugar, fat, protein, potassium salts, calcium salts, and other impurities over decades. This results in higher blood viscosity in the elderly. Furthermore, when the flow of qi and blood reaches their legs, the elderly often find themselves unable to climb stairs.

Moreover, rural areas no longer

rely on injectable solutions for treatment as they did 40 years ago; instead, both urban and rural hospitals commonly use intravenous drips for treatment. This is particularly true for patients with high fevers caused by colds. Approximately one in 100,000 patients receiving intravenous drips may develop other illnesses, or their existing conditions may even worsen.

In the human body, white blood cells are replaced every seven days, while blood cells are replaced every 28 days. This demonstrates that foreign interest groups have exaggerated claims regarding tobacco, alcohol, tea,

food additives, and other products in order to disrupt China's market economy and consumer supply chain.

Going forward, the state should comprehensively lift bans in these areas to ensure the healthy development of the market economy.

However, doctors and patients are unaware of this principle. In Western medical treatments involving daily intravenous drips, excessive cold water and cold energy are not directed into the patient's stomach to be processed—where excess water and waste would be excreted through urine and feces with minimal side effects—but

are instead injected directly into the skin. Yet, the hundreds of billions of cells have only a few tiny pores on their

membranes, resulting in slow water absorption. The excess water and the mist generated by the patient's body heat are stored between cells, resulting in even less water absorption by the cells. Excess water also enters the

bloodstream and flows toward the lungs. The respiratory pores on the lung membranes are also small, resulting in slow water absorption. The excess water swirls outside the lung membranes, forming edematous masses that block water from entering the lungs. The

water inside the lungs, heated by the



patient's body temperature, turns into thick phlegm, causing the patient to experience difficulty breathing and coughing.

There is an ancient saying in Traditional Chinese Medicine: "A thousand colds are easy to dispel, but a single dampness is hard to remove." Using air conditioning, consuming cold foods, irregular eating habits, high mental stress, and living in damp environments are all major culprits that exacerbate internal dampness in the body. If not expelled in a timely manner, it will lurk within the body, creating potential health risks.

If dampness rises upward, it can cause skin blemishes, acne, and an oily complexion; if it descends downward, it can trigger a series of gynecological disorders and harm the body. When dampness affects the skin, it can cause skin conditions such as eczema; when it penetrates the bones, it can trigger arthritis and frozen shoulder. Internally, dampness first attacks the spleen and stomach, then settles in the kidneys, and subsequently affects the heart and lungs. At the same time, it descends to invade the liver, gallbladder, and bladder—no organ is spared.

**When intravenous fluid therapy isnecessary, the approach must be refined.**

**Doctors should make decisions based on the specific condition. For example, during a course of intravenous therapy lasting five to tendays, antibiotics or other targeted medications to kill pathogens may be used. However, if the patient' s condition improves, remains unchanged, or even worsens, the intravenous therapy must be suspended. Instead, the patient shoulddrink hot water and take oral Western medicine tablets, or consume hot**

Chinese herbal decoctions, or pausetreatment for a few days for observation.

For known infectious pathogens, if the patient' s fever subsides within 48 hours, there is no need to increase the dosage or add antibiotics or other potent medications to the IV drip. Sincethe IV solution is cold—lower than the patient' s body temperature—continuous administration of cold fluids for over ten days, especially if IV therapy is

overused, can trigger toxic side effects. This can cause the patient' s high body temperature to generate even denser

**“smog,” potentially leading to complications such as pneumonia, tuberculosis, or new viral infections.**

**Scientists have also developed warmers to be used with IV drips, setting the temperature one or two degrees higher than the patient’ s bodytemperature. This reduces the accumulation of “smog” within the patient’ s body and promotes a faster recovery.**

**If the government issues a directive today requiring all hospitals and doctorsto limit the volume and frequency of IV drips, this will ensure that the amount offluid administered does not exceed the**

body's absorption limit. Additionally, the use of imported medical equipment for examinations should be minimized or avoided, as the high default settings of such devices can cause mental stress, slow blood flow, weaken magnetic field strength, and lower immunity—all of which can increase the risk of cancer and other diseases.

Otherwise, if medical accidents occur due to the overuse of IV drips, they will be dealt with severely.

By implementing the above measures, we can effectively reduce the incidence of cancer and viral diseases.

Furthermore, around the 2026 Spring

**Festival, the nation will be able to implement the great initiative of universal free healthcare. This will also facilitate the normal and large-scale sale of various agricultural products in the market.**

**Furthermore, we need social media to leverage its strengths of being quick, efficient, and impactful to make new contributions toward ending cancer as soon as possible! We must act immediately—just as the National Health Commission's COVID-19 platform reported daily infection and mortality rates during the Wuhan outbreak—by reporting information on new virus cases and cancer incidence**

rates at major hospitals every day, every ten days, or at the latest once a month. Social media will play a supervisory and motivating role. China will then shed its reputation as a nation plagued by chronic diseases. Social media has once again made a significant contribution to the people's health!!

What Are the Key Conditions for Ending the Global COVID-19 Pandemic?  
Current Affairs Commentator: Hong Guolin

The COVID-19 pandemic—a loathsome yet unforgettable term—has recently drawn widespread global attention due to its sudden resurgence and



rising infection rates. This inevitably brings to mind, almost instinctively, the names of China's heroes in the global fight against COVID-19 since December

2019: Zhong Nanshan, Li Lanjuan, and Chen Wei. This is undoubtedly due to their contributions to global pandemic control, and it is also inseparable from the reporting and publicity by state media. However, today I would like to solemnly recommend a

little-known, unsung hero of China's pandemic response—Sun Chunwu, an outstanding expert in traditional Chinese medicine (as featured in the headline of an article published by Chongqing Science Magazine). Not only has he made significant achievements in natural science research, but he also possesses unique insights in physiological medicine. His contributions to the fight against the COVID-19 pandemic in recent years have been indispensable.

Starting on January 14, 2020, Sun Chunwu published commentaries on Toutiao's "Hot Topics" section explaining that the increase in influenza and age-related illnesses during the cold winter months was not due to infectious diseases. He warned that the overuse of intravenous drips would lead to higher mortality rates and insisted that city lockdowns must be avoided at all costs, as they would only increase infection rates. Despite this, the city was locked down.

He then pledged his own life as collateral and appealed to the President and Premier to immediately lift the lockdown and roadblocks in Wuhan. He also searched Baidu for infection rates in countries around the world and uncovered the truth: reports of the flu and other age-related illnesses were being indiscriminately lumped together with the novel coronavirus pandemic on official health websites.

Sun Chunwu then posted on the National Health Commission's platform, stating that anyone found to have falsely reported cases of the common

flu or age-related illnesses as part of the novel coronavirus outbreak on the Commission's website would face consequences ranging from a police

interview for minor offenses to imprisonment for more serious ones. From that point on, the incidence and mortality rates in Wuhan dropped daily until they reached zero, and the city finally began lifting its lockdown and road closures.

But immediately, an article by a British scholar appeared on Toutiao, claiming that a more virulent strain of the virus had emerged in the UK—one that

no effective medication could kill, with exceptionally high transmissibility and a 100% fatality rate.

He discovered that certain individuals were

manipulating the Wuhan outbreak and immediately posted that this was a scheme to deceive the Chinese people, warning that no one should fall for it.

As Confucius once said, negative public opinion can destroy a city. For example, during a plague of rats in Northeast China—or, to put it in modern

terms, when a cold snap hit in winter—the number of flu cases among 100,000 people would immediately increase by seven or eight. Once the media spread the news, the uninformed masses believed an infectious disease had broken out, causing widespread panic. As a result, the incidence rate rose further. Because the people were poor and lacked the means to seek treatment, the mortality rate among patients increased even more. But then a "miracle doctor" emerged, telling everyone to wear masks to block the spread of infectious diseases. People believed him, and as everyone wore masks, the cold air flowing through them was neutralized before entering the lungs, reducing the risk of infection. Moreover, by March, the weather had warmed up, so the incidence and mortality rates were bound to decrease.

Mr. Sun Chunwu's People's Perspective:

\*People's Encyclopedia\* highly praised expert Sun Chunwu, conferring upon him the honorary title of

“Chinese Talent ” and appointing him as a visiting professor for \*People’ s Encyclopedia\*.

Sun Chunwu’ s “My Understanding of the Origin

and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus Disease (Part One) ” could not be published in domestic journals due to its sensitive nature. It was not until

January 2021 that it was published in Asian journals, such as \*IJO—International Journal of Education Research\*, Volume 4, Issue 01. Seeing that the

pandemic in China was severely impacting the development of the market economy, he had no choice but to publish the English version of "My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus Disease (Part 2)" in the British Journal of Social Progress and Science in January 2023, and in the American Journal of Science on February 16 of the same year; the article "My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus Disease (Part 3)."

It wasn’ t until late February 2023 that the WHO declared the global COVID-19 pandemic over, and the EU has already destroyed large quantities of vaccines. Without conducting PCR tests, there has been no major resurgence of the pandemic in the three years since.

Without an official declaration ending the

pandemic, no expert would dare to casually announce the end of the COVID-19 pandemic. If declaring an end to this global pandemic were to have consequences, no one could bear such grave responsibility—they would face legal repercussions and be held personally liable. Even if the pandemic-related articles were correct, there would be no adverse effects.

As pointed out in the pandemic-related articles, the severity of the virus depends on factors such as the duration of fever in animals, the number of times a patient receives intravenous fluids, the types and doses of medications used, and the patient's physical condition or environmental factors. For example, in Africa's hot climate or in cold regions, the nature of the virus evolving within a patient's body differs.

However, the virus cannot be detected within cells, even during autopsies—for example, if the heart is infected. Once the virus leaves the cell, it loses the cell's support and becomes inactive within about thirty minutes.

Claiming that viruses are contagious is a conspiracy

theory. Or perhaps their experimental procedures were flawed. For example, in the case of a patient with a fever, if antibiotics are administered daily via intravenous drip,

all pathogens are killed within 48 hours, the patient's fever subsides, and they recover.

However, in the case of non-infectious bacteria, when antibiotics enter the intracellular space via intravenous fluids—regardless of the drug's quality or

the number of small molecules—they are all packaged into vortex clusters by the vortex field. Under the high temperature and pressure inside the cell, they evolve into virus-like proteins.

Yet, despite the deployment of the most advanced medical equipment in hospitals worldwide, incidence and mortality rates in the United States are several times higher than they were two centuries ago. This is often attributed to factors such as consuming vegetables and fruits with pesticide residues, as well as tobacco, alcohol, and tea. In reality, this is part of a grand strategy

targeting the destruction of China's market consumption chain.

In reality, foreign experts have different motives than the elderly man with a disability certificate, Sun Chunwu. For instance, they may be driven by personal reputation or corporate profits; if they profit just one yuan from each vaccine, that amounts to tens of billions

of yuan—a colossal fortune. Repeated nucleic acid testing has led to an increase in the number of suspected

or positive cases.

Even if mistakes are made, new developments require a process of trial and error. Moreover, they have the collective strength of their teams to downplay major issues and sweep minor ones under the rug.

Sun Chunwu, however, receives not a single penny; he must pay internet fees, and if things go slightly wrong, he risks being kicked off the platform by moderators—or, in

severe cases, arrested, imprisoned, or even sentenced to

death. This is the stark contrast between the two worldviews of experts like Sun Chunwu.

For example, his 2021 article "The Origin and Prevention of the Novel Coronavirus" won the Grand Prize at the Annual Conference of Scientists and Economists.

Sun Chunwu also studies the Yin and Yang of Tai Chi. Combining this with the "centripetal rotation" and "centrifugal rotation" of his eccentric vortex engine, he proposed that the "Yin" in Yin-Yang should represent a tool capable of replicating more energy. If

physical theories and the like are established, they would possess greater practicality and scientific rigor.

For over 50 years, scientist Sun Chunwu has dedicated himself to research with unwavering commitment, setting aside his happy family life to devote himself entirely to scientific inquiry. He has funded

everything himself—from purchasing equipment, tools, and materials to covering external processing

costs—conducting research entirely on his own. Without a team, adequate resources, or proper facilities, he has nonetheless achieved a series of scientific breakthroughs that have astonished the world, such as publishing dozens of innovative papers. He has also contributed an

entry on “Sun Chunwu, the Lunar Doctor” to an encyclopedia and authored the 98-page popular science book \*Talking About the World Through Tai Chi\*, which served as an early warning to the nation to prepare for economic losses and other issues. He has donated over a thousand copies of this book to the Premier of the State Council, the Central Party School, and netizens across the country.

The donation of books alone has already exceeded 80,000 yuan. He has also received a notice of acceptance for a national patent application for the eccentric vortex engine. These achievements are truly remarkable, and his dedication is commendable. Now 76 years old, he remains tireless and unyielding, working tirelessly every day in his research laboratory.

It is hoped that scientist Sun Chunwu’s cancer prevention and treatment technologies will play a significant role in substantially reducing cancer incidence and mortality rates worldwide. At the same time, it is hoped that the state will grant Sun Chunwu the necessary recognition and provide corresponding financial support to promote the production of eccentric engines and other projects. Furthermore, we call upon



the Chinese people and the global community to show the respect and admiration that Elder Sun deserves.

Author Profile: Hong Guolin, a native of Wuxue, Huanggang, Hubei Province, is the founder of Jieyi Strategy and a researcher in cultural creativity. A member of the Communist Party of China with a college education, he has served as Director of Corporate Administration, Human Resources and Administration Manager, Executive Vice President of Administration, and Creative Planning Director. He has also held positions including Honorary Council Member of

\*Decision-Makers\* Magazine, Special Commentator for

\*Leadership Decision Reference\*, Executive Chairman and Executive Secretary-General of the "Global Intelligent Cloud Alliance" (in preparation), Special Commentator and Chief Planner for \*Huaxia Rule of Law Observation Network\*, and

Cultural and Creative Researcher at the Beijing Branch of the International Academy of Sciences. He currently serves as the General Manager and Legal Representative of Guangxi Jieyi Strategy Cultural Industry Co., Ltd., and concurrently holds the position of Planning Director at the Publicity and Development

Center of the "Children of China • Beautiful China"

Project. His works on current affairs and commentary have been published in newspapers, periodicals, and online platforms, and have received numerous national, provincial, and municipal awards. His writings have been featured in

\*Compilation of Major Award-Winning Theoretical Achievements for the 60th Anniversary of the Republic\*,

\*Leadership Decision-Making Reference Network\*, and \*Huaxia Rule of Law Observation Network\*

**Sichuan Television**

**Chinese-Style Modernization**

**Sun Chunwu**

**Marx analyzed capitalism and identified competition and distribution as the regulators that invigorate the market economy and increase accumulation. The Chinese approach fully leverages the advantages of the traditional centralized system, developing a market economy rooted in Chinese culture. It transforms a chaotic market economy—where competition and distribution are unregulated—into an orderly, large-scale market economy through state policy management and regulation. For instance, by gathering approximate annual demand data for various goods and products required by**

government agencies, the military-industrial complex, educational institutions, the general public, and most industries. These are then ring-fenced by state policy and forcibly allocated to the 55% of planned economy enterprises for production, supply, and sales, thereby minimizing exposure to market competition risks. This effectively addresses the major issue of domestic demand, as well as the placement of demobilized soldiers and college graduates—who are assigned by the Personnel Bureau to work in planned economy enterprises and state agencies. It also resolves various social contradictions and overcomes the fundamental issues arising from the laws of nature following the adoption of monetary exchange.

To rapidly achieve China's Four Modernizations, we must adopt a two-step approach: prioritize the modernization of national defense and science and technology, and then, 20 to 30 years later, focus on achieving

**the modernization of industry and agriculture.** This means equipping all sectors with advanced technology, skilled talent, and modern management. This management must surpass that of the capitalist market economy.

Next, let us analyze Mao Zedong's planned economy. Overall, it was designed to operate according to the three laws of nature governing the market. Yet, why did it ultimately revert to a development model dominated by private enterprises?

**1.** The failure to formulate effective management systems and policies in response to changing environments allowed commune- and team-run enterprises, school-run enterprises, and individuals to exploit loopholes created by outdated management. Like oxen, they meticulously and effectively sought out planned products, developed their own production, and competed for market share, thereby undermining the foundations of the planned economy.

Second, the lack of constraints on cadres' power and the absence of performance evaluations every three years failed to instill a sense of responsibility in them to manage enterprises effectively. Of course, a purely electoral system also has its flaws and can easily dampen cadres' dedication to public service.

III. Theoretically, we have always assumed that simply unleashing the capitalist market economy would solve all problems. Consequently, across all sectors—particularly agriculture—the first step was to allocate land to individual households for independent farming. Large numbers of farmers migrated to cities in search of work and to settle there. With industry losing the vast rural market, it became difficult for it to thrive on its own. This, in turn, led to a surplus of planned goods that could not be sold. If this trend continues over the long term, it will inevitably create many intractable new social contradictions and other problems for the government.

As Darwin observed, a mutation in one organ can trigger other mutations. Although we now possess a strong industrial foundation, the government has sold off numerous assets and lands accumulated under the public ownership system—including factories and equipment—and auctioned off facilities. This includes the development of modern products like computers, which was prioritized during Premier Zhou Enlai's era and has since been widely applied, solving employment issues for many. However, the unplanned expansion of real estate construction and the massive establishment of colleges and schools have also occurred. While this has indeed brought about remarkable economic benefits and created numerous employment opportunities for today's rapid economic growth, it has also brought negative consequences. For instance, the discontinuation of the state-assigned employment system for college graduates and other talents, coupled with disruptions and imbalances in the

market consumption chain, will give rise to new contradictions that threaten long-term social stability.

How to further develop the market economy today requires comprehensive governance policies and measures. National policies should promote competition among state-owned, collective, and private enterprises, using the principle of survival of the fittest to adjust the nature of enterprise ownership, thereby protecting the productive capacity of more enterprises from the planned economy era and ensuring their healthy development.

From the central to local levels, comprehensive large-scale production, supply, and sales conglomerates should be established. This involves first identifying and securing the annual demand information for products that society normally requires, such as metallurgical and mineral products, various machinery, textiles, electronic equipment, and major daily necessities—including grain, oil, agricultural, livestock, fishery, and chemical products. Following evaluation by expert panels, approximately 55% of outstanding enterprises in their respective sectors will be selected. Under the national master plan, major industrial cities such as Shanghai, Northeast China, Chongqing, Beijing, Wuhan, and Xuzhou in Jiangsu, as well as large agricultural estates and farms, may also include the heads of existing large limited liability

companies—similar to the shareholding system in Europe. Products under the planned economy will be allocated to these enterprises for production; such enterprises will function as contract manufacturers for the national planned economy. The manufactured products will be purchased and distributed by various state-owned material supply companies and department stores. The raw materials and components required for production will be supplied on a designated, coordinated basis by these state-owned entities. Both parties will maintain separate financial accounts. If funds are insufficient, goods may be taken on credit at the time of purchase, with payment settled upon delivery of the products. Priority bank loans may also be arranged. This allows factories allocated production quotas to focus their efforts on product variety, quality, output, delivery times, and cost reduction, without worrying about supply, sales, or funding issues.

State-owned supply companies and department stores will handle exclusive sales. This does not entail uniform pricing; enterprises may sell high-quality products at premium prices.

In coastal regions such as Guangzhou, Shenzhen, and Zhuhai, continue to liberalize as in the early days of reform and opening-up, retaining only a few large state-owned enterprises. For remote and underdeveloped provinces and regions, flexibly implement market-oriented policies.

Various products and agricultural goods from the planned



economy should be mandatorily allocated for sale to local government agencies at all levels, universities and colleges, military-industrial enterprises, public-sector institutions, and individuals. Priority must be given to purchasing domestically produced goods allocated through the planned economy to ensure the normal sales of these products and agricultural goods. This also protects public assets and corporate profits from losses such as intermediary fees that occur during market-based monetary exchanges. This approach fosters the comprehensive and healthy development of industry, agriculture, commerce, academia, and the military.

In contrast, large capitalist enterprises base their production on annual sales data to issue production plan notices. Moreover, these enterprises possess strong economic strength and are less

subject to various large-scale inspections or campaigns—such as

those related to environmental protection—which minimizes disruptions or interference with their production order.

Localities could also follow the example of some units in the early years of the Liberation era by implementing public-private partnerships, with private enterprise owners serving as plant managers or chairmen. Party secretaries, financial officers, and workers would all be assigned by the State Personnel Bureau and the Labor Bureau.

Today, we can easily determine how much each person needs daily in terms of essentials such as grain, oil, salt, and firewood; how often workers go to work and students attend

school; how often people visit public bathhouses two or three times a month and get a haircut once a month; and how many clothes each person buys on average per year. Approximately seven or eight out of every 100,000 people fall ill. Furthermore, the incidence of illness is higher in winter and lower in autumn. Additionally, a few people out of every thousand travel by car for business or leisure, and incidents such as traffic accidents or fights occur once in every million people. The government uses these average figures to determine, for example, how many hospitals and bathhouses to build in densely populated cities, and to allocate approximately 50% of the total social supply of personal

necessities—such as oil, salt, firewood, rice, vegetables, and fruits—to planned-economy enterprises, farms, and people's communes for collective production.

Measures such as the coordinated supply of agricultural machinery, fertilizers, and pesticides are also implemented. This creates a market consumption chain where "you serve

me, and I serve them." Furthermore, with the internet today, it is easier to monitor their purchasing power, facilitating timely adjustments to planned economic operations.

For non-quota-based products, repair services, catering, and tourism—accounting for about 35% of the economy—small collectives and individuals would fill the gaps. Policies toward them would be somewhat relaxed to incentivize them to perform better.

Foreign-invested enterprises account for approximately 15% of export products, with many generating significant foreign exchange. This transforms the chaotic

market economy into a combination of large-scale planned economy and market economy. Each year, a certain number of college graduates and demobilized soldiers are allocated to planned economy enterprises and relevant state departments.

Each year, a designated number of retirees from planned economy enterprises and relevant state departments are assigned to specific locations for tourism, sightseeing, or enrollment in senior education programs. As various industries operate within an orderly market economy,

should any isolated instances of disorder occur—captured by computers or mobile devices—relevant government departments immediately conduct comprehensive analyses.

If issues such as product backlogs or quality problems are identified, they are addressed through various methods or further adjustments to the plan.

When allocating industrial products and issuing production quotas to planned economy enterprises—[including Sino-foreign joint ventures and online stores with stable market channels]—the government should coordinate and balance the

interests of all regions, distributing approximately 90% of planned production orders. This ensures that more planned economy enterprises have business to conduct and can pursue steady development within their own productive capacity, such as by developing new products.

At this stage, funds repatriated from the United States can also be advanced to state-owned material supply companies to facilitate their operations. These companies will then place orders

with affiliated factories and rural producers, such as 50 million vehicles annually, 40 million tons of various steel products, 1.5 billion tons of coal and petroleum, 8 million tons of chemical fertilizers and pesticides, and 50 billion tons of grain, oil, and cotton. Several hundred million tons of live pigs, fish, and various fruits and vegetables, with production orders and delivery dates specified in bilateral contracts. Prices would follow market

trends—with higher prices for higher quality—or could be set by the parties themselves.

Upon delivery, goods purchased by the state-owned general material corporations may be allocated to first-tier distribution centers or distributed directly to state agencies,

enterprises, and institutions—or even to specific individuals—on a cash-on-delivery basis.

Additionally, the amount spent by each individual on online purchases of designated products—including expenses such as travel—will serve as a reference standard for determining the

amount of pension supplements to be issued in the following two years. For pensioners receiving over 8,000 yuan per month—of whom there are over 20 million among retirees alone—the state mandates that a portion of these pensions be spent annually on

domestic goods and daily necessities, including travel, cultural and educational activities (such as watching movies, attending plays, and purchasing books), as well as dining out at restaurants each month. The total monthly expenditure should be approximately 2,000 yuan, amounting to about 24,000 yuan annually. The higher the pension, the greater the required expenditure. If they do not

spend this amount or spend only about 10,000 yuan annually—depositing the surplus in banks or investing in the stock market—it fails to stimulate domestic market demand. This effectively undermines the incomes of workers, shop owners, and those in the tertiary sector.

We advocate for positive forces that align with the development of a market economy. For example, we should focus on supporting brick-and-mortar businesses by ensuring their product supply channels consist of officially designated high-quality goods and agricultural products.

Online stores play a significant role in social development. All industrial and agricultural products not included in national plans should be channeled through online stores for distribution. While these products may be inexpensive, it is difficult to guarantee their quality or ensure they are free from environmental contamination during transit. Unlike formal brick-and-mortar stores and

restaurants—where food is freshly prepared and served to suit individual tastes—online stores lack the same level of quality, hygiene, and health benefits for diners.

Therefore, strict policy regulations must be implemented: high-income individuals who fail to meet annual consumption targets should have their pensions reduced accordingly. This may impact the survival of certain businesses or retail outlets. Consequently, for those who fail to meet the consumption quota, a portion of their state-subsidized pension should be withheld. Alternatively, this amount could serve as a reference standard for donations when the state requires funds, based on the surplus of their pension expenditures. Another option is to use the withheld funds to support amateur scientists who have

been engaged in research for five years or more, either by funding their inventions or investing in new products. Once these scientists generate profits, the funds should be returned to them as a token of appreciation. If implemented effectively, this approach would not only generate new domestic demand but also accelerate the development of new products. Furthermore, it would expand express delivery and online retail to countries worldwide, establishing a global headquarters for major express delivery and e-commerce conglomerates. This

would enable the delivery of China's affordable, high-quality, and innovative products—via express delivery or even drones—directly to businesses and households, thereby promoting the vigorous development of China's market economy across all sectors. This would minimize interference or disruption from tariffs and external forces.

Moreover, with today's internet, computers, and mobilephones, we can conduct statistics, planning, and monitoring. For every industry nationwide—such as estimating the approximate number of workers retiring each year and allocating university graduates and veterans to these factories annually—it becomes easier to achieve relative balance when addressing issues like wage adjustments and medical insurance across all sectors. This will help reduce social conflicts.

To resolve the various issues in China's market economy, we must rebuild the system step by step. For example, if we assume the annual fiscal base in 1980 was 888 trillion yuan, expenditures on civil servants and similar personnel would account for 30% of that 888 trillion yuan. Moving forward, expenditures on civil servants and similar categories should be allocated according to this ratio

each year. Similarly, collective and state-owned enterprises should calculate their cost ratios based on monthly revenue from product sales or production. Wage distributions for cadres and workers should then be determined monthly. Departments and enterprises would naturally exercise self-regulation, minimizing expenditures and focusing on revenue generation.

Otherwise, no economist would dare to start from the very beginning; they would merely treat symptoms rather than root causes. Chinese products would lose their competitive edge in the global market. Problems such as the inability to repay local government debt would continue to

arise. Moreover, this would reduce the government's involvement in trivial matters.

The state would simply use policies to secure the annual supply of essential goods—essentially the “big pie”—and then allocate it rigidly to the primary sectors of the planned economy:

agriculture, industry, commerce, education, and the military. This would ensure the stable forward development of the market economy, with tax revenues growing steadily. Corruption, bribery, and graft in society would also decrease. Although the planned economy develops slowly, it progresses in a balanced manner, aligning with the management of a centralized system.

The government must also restore the agricultural foundation to a collective-based economy to truly revitalize industry and all other sectors. This requires establishing a unified leadership and management system for

agricultural modernization, organized in a group-based structure from the central to local levels [with all rural residents allocated private plots]. Establish large-scale farms or livestock breeding farms—small yet comprehensive facilities suited to rural production and service needs—to serve as supply bases for daily necessities in major cities. Implement centralized purchasing and distribution of their agricultural and sideline products through specialized agencies, particularly for seasonal produce. All sectors must fully support the sale of agricultural products, such as by mandating sales to enterprises with strong economic performance. Where local governments have the capacity, they should establish on-site processing plants for farmers' crops, fish, and other agricultural byproducts. Alternatively, they may build factories for repairing agricultural machinery and equipment, as well as small-scale service outlets, thereby forging a new path toward shared



prosperity where the countryside serves the city and the city serves the farmers.

The township can serve as the settlement unit, with working farmers assigned tasks by the production team leader. An accountant records work points, and field management can be contracted to members. Those who harvest more grain are rewarded, and a basic monthly wage is paid. They would also be provided with work uniforms and other occupational safety benefits. At year-end, the township would consolidate the economic surpluses from each large farm or aquaculture facility. This would include state subsidies and a share of the annual profits from township-run factories, with the total annual income distributed as dividends to every member before the Spring Festival. Regarding farmers' wage income, if we factor in the small amounts of agricultural byproducts or unsold goods that are routinely distributed to migrant workers as benefits—and given that rural living expenses are

low and the work cycle consists of only two busy seasons a year—they live and manage their fields in a relatively comfortable environment. Moreover, basic industries have historically been low-income sectors. Otherwise, rising wages would drive up prices across all industries.

This also reflects the different divisions of labor in society, all of which serve the people. For instance, throughout history, distinguished figures who achieved success and fame have often chosen to retire from public life and return to the countryside to enjoy the simple pleasures of rural life. Seeing crops thrive in one's own fields brings joy and the promise of another bountiful harvest. Moreover, the pleasant rural climate and absence of mental burdens contribute to longevity. This ensures China's food supply remains rooted in domestic rural production. Otherwise, the slightest disturbance in the international landscape—such as a halt in the supply of grain and oil to China—would trigger another major

**famine, leaving people without food.**

**How can we currently address issues such as domestic market demand, university graduate employment, and local government debt? For instance, Zhejiang has already demonstrated that, under a planned economy guided by scientific management within a centralized system, China can withstand high tariffs. We can also leverage social media to first tap into the potential of the market consumption chain**

**Social media platforms should establish a dedicated system to track daily cancer incidence and mortality rates nationwide and even by province. For example, when the incidence rate in Wuhan was rising or falling, I needed to know the daily figures for my research. I posted this on Toutiao, Kuaibao, and other news sites, and the next day, the National**

**Health Commission 's platform displayed the national**

**incidence rate. Immediately, traffic to the National Health Commission 's platform surged nationwide. Since most netizens were concerned about the pandemic 's trajectory, they shared the information in their group chats.**

**Eight days later, I noticed that incidence and mortality rates remained high. I searched Baidu for global COVID-19 incidence and mortality rates and discovered two issues: First, Pang Tong had reported all kinds of incidence and mortality rates on the COVID-19 infectious disease platform. Second, many countries were using intravenous drips to kill the virus, which was why mortality rates were rising, though not exponentially every day.**

Therefore, I suggested to the National Health Commission platform that no individual or hospital should be allowed to falsely report common illnesses such as the flu or age-related diseases as COVID-19 cases on the commission's online platform. Those who do so should, at the very least, be summoned for questioning by the police; in severe cases, they should be arrested and imprisoned for several years. Unless this is done, the incidence rate will not decrease.

If the incidence rate truly drops to zero every day, Wuhan's lockdown and road closures should be lifted immediately. Otherwise, the lockdown and road closures in

Wuhan cannot be lifted for the time being. This is because at least five groups of people are exploiting the pandemic to settle scores with one another. Everyone has also been misled by the media into believing it is an infectious disease.

Furthermore, several Chinese students in the United States have immediately established international pandemic websites and platforms. They now report daily on infection and mortality rates across the globe, reaping a massive economic windfall by generating traffic for their self-media outlets.

If we were to effectively address the issue of cancer now, Chinese social media platforms would first begin publishing daily updates on cancer incidence rates—whether high or low—from major hospitals. This would not only reflect the national cancer incidence rate but also demonstrate that it has significantly declined.

Social media would serve as a monitoring mechanism. The entire nation would have a clear understanding of the facts.

The self-media are well aware that both cancer incidence and mortality rates have dropped significantly. This is absolutely not due to people eating certain fruits and vegetables, nor is it due to eating grilled lamb skewers, buffet meals, or Xinjiang camel milk, nor is it a matter of tobacco, alcohol, or tea.

It is clear that over the past 40 years, various forms of misguided propaganda—including the “Straight Talk” program on CCTV—have fallen into the strategic traps set by those with ulterior motives.

To fully correct this, we must address the issue of domestic demand within China’s market economy and meet a portion of that demand. China does not necessarily

have to rely entirely on exports; we can tap into our own domestic consumption potential to some extent.

Business owners and shopkeepers all say that self-media is a true hero that safeguards the interests of the entire nation!

To fully harness the enthusiasm and creativity of our vast cadre of officials, we must address their ideological reservations regarding market economy work. Relying solely on workforce reductions and tax increases may not

necessarily stimulate domestic market demand. We should instead tap into and reapply the successful experiences of reform and opening-up, as well as revitalize China's cultural heritage, to develop the following five avenues for generating wealth.

For instance, we should launch a nationwide campaign encouraging the public to embrace science and foster a craze for winning Nobel Prizes. Local governments in every town and county should allocate a dozen or so rooms—similar to recreational facilities—and provide them free of charge to students and amateur scientists passionate about research. These spaces would serve as forums for scientific exchange, with some rooms designated as laboratories for researchers to conduct experiments on self-selected projects. They may bring their own small tools and equipment, or local governments may invest in larger-scale equipment. Students,

amateur scientists, and retired seniors can use these facilities to develop new products, cultivate agricultural produce, or breed new fishfry—all as part of their self-selected projects.

If researchers achieve results, they could share patent royalties with the community on a 50-50 basis, or donate tens of thousands of yuan to thank the community for its support. Suppose that out of every 10,000 people, two are interested in participating in inventing new products or working in agricultural, forestry, or fisheries laboratories. Each person, or a small team of several people, could form a research group to work on their own dream invention projects. Although this is akin to a long-term investment with no immediate returns—it may take eight to ten years to yield results—the daily use of various equipment incurs costs. Assuming an average daily expenditure of 200 yuan for purchases and external processing, this amounts to 6,000 yuan per month and

72,000 yuan per year, thereby generating an additional 72,000 yuan in revenue for all sectors. If the government provides effective guidance, the number of researchers will continue to grow. Eventually, hundreds of thousands of new research and discussion centers could be established nationwide, generating tens of billions of yuan in additional revenue for all sectors. Sooner or later, someone is bound to win a Nobel Prize, bringing honor to the nation. This initiative would also solve the employment problem for tens of millions of college graduates in one fell swoop and help address domestic demand.

Furthermore, if a reading room were established in every community nationwide, stocked with excellent books and periodicals—such as popular science publications like *\*New Highlights in Natural Sciences\**—it would significantly increase young people's interest in science. Just as the war



criminal Huang Wei ' s temperament improved and his quarrels ceased after he invented a perpetual motion machine.

If every township and community nationwide were planned in this way, it would immediately and sustainably drive the development of the national market economy. It would also put many idle properties to use and enrich the cultural lives of community residents in their spare time. It could help resolve local government debt issues and counter the high tariffs imposed by the U.S. President. Our country would not need to allocate more funds to subsidize individuals or distribute more money to consumers in the hope that they would increase their spending.

Furthermore, using the "scientific waste"

methods of a planned economy, we could organize group tours involving interaction between provinces and communities, prioritizing the mandatory relocation of retired

seniors to designated provinces—such as the post-People’s Commune era Nanjie Village, or impoverished regions in Guizhou, Yunnan, and Fujian. They would all receive preferential rates for train, bus, and even air travel, as well as hotel accommodations.

These organizations need only report to local governments the number of group tour passengers each day. Local and national governments would then reduce taxes on train and bus companies accordingly.

This approach would ensure sufficient passenger capacity for trains, high-speed rail, buses, airplanes, and cruise ships, while also conserving energy. It would also lead to a sharp increase in sales of local agricultural and industrial products, as well as folk crafts. If implemented effectively, this initiative could eliminate poverty in impoverished provinces within at least ten years. It would also allow retired seniors nationwide to travel multiple

times over the course of a decade to experience the customs and traditions of rural areas in other regions, broadening their horizons.

If the Chinese model of modernization is promoted to all nations worldwide, natural cycles will be extended, the wealth gap will narrow, and social conflicts—including conflicts of interest between nations—will be alleviated. This will make it less likely for wars to occur, particularly nuclear wars, allowing people to live in peace and contentment, and accelerating the world's progress toward a harmonious society.

(This article is for reference only.)

Title: The Horn-Shaped Black Hole Projection Model—A New Mechanism for the Origin of the Universe  
Sun Chunwu

**Abstract:** In modern cosmology, the Big Bang theory still faces inconsistencies in explaining issues such as singularities, inflation, dark matter, and dark energy. This paper proposes a novel model of the origin of the universe: the universe did not originate from a mathematical singularity, but rather from the holistic structure and ejection evolution of a

“funnel-shaped black hole.” Driven by a vortex field, the funnel-shaped black hole generates the matter, space, time, and laws of motion of the observable universe through internal field compression, axial ejection, and boundary expansion. This paper conducts theoretical derivations from four aspects—structural morphology, dynamical mechanisms, evolutionary pathways, and physical correspondences—to explain observational phenomena such as galaxy distribution, cosmic expansion, and the vortex motion of celestial bodies, thereby providing a new theoretical framework for unified field theory, the origin of the universe, and cosmic evolution.

**Keywords:** Origin of the Universe; Funnel-shaped Black Hole; Black Hole Ejection; Vortex Field; Cosmic Evolution

## **1** Introduction

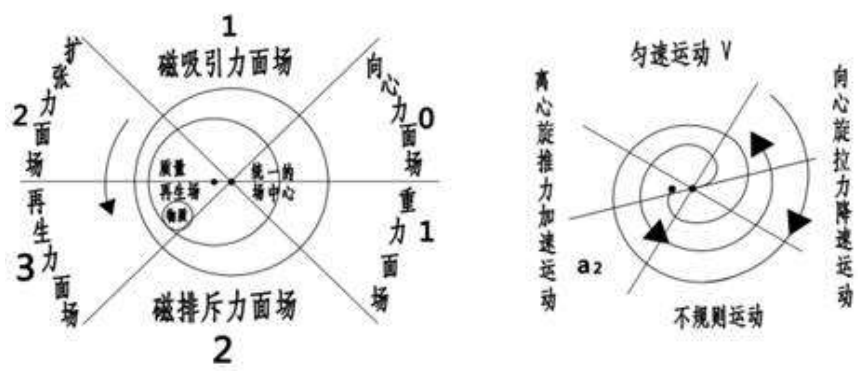
Among existing theories of the origin of the

universe, the Big Bang model holds a dominant position; however, it still lacks intuitive physical explanations for core questions such as “ the absence of spacetime before the singularity,” “why the initial conditions were as they were,” and “the origin of the inflationary mechanism. ” Extensive astronomical observations indicate that galaxies, stars, planets, and nebulae all exhibit vortexstructures, while microscopic particles and living cells similarly display vortex-like characteristics such as rotation, fields, and voids. This suggests that the primordial structure of the universe should inherentlypossess directionality, axial symmetry, and a hollow or eccentric configuration, rather than being a structurally void mathematical singularity.

Based on the philosophy of natural unification and the principles of vortex dynamics, this paper proposes that: before the universe existed, only the diffusion of diffuse gas generated turbulence, which spiraled downward in a centripetal motion to form a giant black hole with a “trumpet-like” shape.Using the elliptical motion trajectory diagrams and various numerical data derived from the [Theory of Unified Fields]to solve problems, this paper combines text and graphics

to facilitate reasoning. Just as one uses an abacus to calculate numbers, people can employ simple visual representations and mathematical logic to deduce the microscopic movements of all things—whether in the past, present, or future evolutionary development. Forexample, the following figure

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



This diagram also illustrates the natural science of dynamic fields within a systemic framework. For instance, during the "primordial chaotic period," as diffuse gas expanded through the air, turbulence occurred as shown in the elliptical diagram. Gas

within the magnetic attraction field experienced turbulence, moving downward toward the expansion force field and the regenerative force field. Due to an accelerating inertial thrust within these two fields, they continuously replicate mass into additional regenerative forces or potential energy through this accelerating inertia. Consequently, the gas surges upward toward the gravitational field and the centripetal force field, overcoming the magnetic repulsion field. Conversely, the opposing pulling forces from these two fields cause the gas to gradually contract and curve, resulting in elliptical motion. This elliptical motion is physically known as centripetal motion, resulting in a vortex that accelerates toward the center. It is similar to a ping-pong ball

As the diffuse gas spreads and generates turbulence, it moves downward in a centripetal direction from a height of one meter. With each bounce, it loses about 20 to 30 centimeters of height, yet the height remains greater than the radius of the circle's center (50 centimeters). Consequently, the airflow vortex continuously accelerates in a centripetal spiral, forming a

funnel-shaped “black hole.”

Assuming the black hole is 1,000 kilometers long, with a large opening diameter of 10 kilometers and a small opening diameter of 5 kilometers, The centrifugal

vortex formed by the diffuse gas creates a vortex

cluster with a diameter of 10 kilometers. As the airflow enters the black hole’s gravitational field, it continuously generates about ten or a hundred vortex clusters. These are flung outward by the black hole’s centrifugal force, evolving into ten or a hundred new

celestial bodies, such as white dwarfs that form later. On the opposite side of the force field, air currents move upward from below, consuming significant energy and decelerating as they spiral inward to form cyclonic clusters with lower energy. These are continuously ejected outside the black hole, evolving into celestial bodies of various masses.

Meanwhile, air currents on the outer walls of the black hole—such as those in the upper region—accelerate downward. Upon encountering resistance from the cold air ahead, these currents spiral inward to form massive cyclonic clusters, evolving into objects like white dwarfs or the hot climate of midsummer.

The hot airflow accelerates toward the other side



of the black hole; as it spirals upward, its speed decreases and it bends in a centripetal spiral, forming a vortex that evolves into a dark star-like object. This emits light toward the outer wall of the black hole, causing the light to dim and leading to an ice age.

The gas flow outside the black hole's mouth also spirals inward toward the black hole, forming a vortex cluster that tends to gather on the smaller side of the

black hole's elliptical shape. This vortex cluster is referred to as centripetal force; conversely, the force that pushes it outward through centrifugal rotation, forming another vortex cluster, is referred to as centrifugal force. The surroundings inside the black hole evolve into six distinct force-field mass components.

These are: gas flow  $kg \neq m \cdot a^2 \cdot t_{right} + Z \neq$

During this encircling process, it is swirled into six distinct cyclonic clusters, which, through friction and compression, evolve into individual planets that are continuously ejected from the black hole. The mass of these newly formed planets exceeds that of planets outside the black hole.

This generates an explosive force akin to nuclear fusion, with each cluster spinning to evolve centrifugal rotation. For instance, they first evolve into gaseous, liquid, and solid planets, then, step by step, driven by centrifugal force, evolve into spiral galaxy structures, and further into elliptical and barred spiral galaxies.

This propels the universe toward infinite evolution and expansion. The universe did not originate from the Big Bang.

External hot gas flows in a centripetal spiral into the low-temperature void of the black hole, where it is swirled into successive gaseous spheres. These are then flung outward by centrifugal force, evolving into the birth of new planets. Their rotation generates centrifugal force, leading to the formation of spiral galaxies. Some dying stars are cast out to the periphery of the

galaxy. Through further centripetal rotation, they evolve into elliptical galaxies, and subsequently into barred spiral galaxies. The thrust of these galaxies is even greater; they will crush and pulverize dead planets, or be sucked into the interior of liquid stars by their powerful gravitational pull. They are then replicated by vortices into numerous black spots.

This black hole possesses a tubular structure with a large front port and a small rear port, featuring axial penetration and an external hot gas inlet into the vortex field. Through continuous vortex compression into a cyclonic cluster—and the field's evolution into a centrifugal rotational force capable of ejection—it generates and evolves the entire observable universe.

## **2 Structural Definition and Physical Characteristics of the Funnel-Shaped Black Hole**

The funnel-shaped black hole defined in this paper possesses the following core structures:

**1. Morphological Characteristics:** The overall shape resembles a "funnel" with a large front opening and a small rear opening; one end serves as the converging inlet, the other as the ejecting outlet, and the middle section functions as a vortex channel.

**2. Field Structure:** The interior is dominated by a vortex field that rotates at high speed along the cylinder walls, generating extremely strong internal pressure and axial thrust.

**3. Void Characteristics:** A stable axial void exists at the center, serving as a passageway for the ejection of matter and energy.

**4. Boundary Characteristics:** The funnel-shaped black hole itself is the "primordial cosmic entity" ; beyond its boundaries, there is no spacetime in the traditional sense, and its internal motion is the motion of the universe.

Unlike traditional point black holes, the funnel-shaped black hole is a cosmic matrix with structure, direction, passageways, and dynamic processes, rather than a geometric point of infinite density.

### **3 Evolutionary Mechanism of the Universe Generated by the Funnel-Shaped Black Hole**

The birth and evolution of the universe result from the combined action of the vortex field, void field, and projection field within the funnel-shaped black hole, and can be divided into three stages:

**3.1 Initial Vortex Compression Stage** In its initial state, the funnel-shaped black hole undergoes a self-consistent vortex motion as a whole, continuously compressing energy along the funnel walls toward the central void region to form vortex clusters and field matter. The centripetal force generated by the vortex, together with the structure of the funnel walls, constrains the energy, causing it to become highly concentrated within the channel and forming a high-energy initial state capable of being ejected.

This process replaces the traditional "singularity explosion"; it involves structural compression rather than infinite collapse.

**3.2 Axial Ejection and the Cosmic Formation Stage** When the pressure of the vortex field exceeds the critical threshold of the cyclonic cluster, it evolves into an inertial force, and energy and matter, no longer bound, are directionally ejected along the axial cavity channel of the funnel:

- The leading edge of the ejection forms the expansion front of the

- Energy clusters within the ejected flow condense into primordial galaxies, stars, and planets;
- The vortex structure is “inherited” by celestial

bodies at all levels, giving rise to widespread rotational and vortex phenomena. This paper refers to this process as:

## Black Hole-Generated Universe.

**Cosmic expansion is essentially the continuous ejection and extension of a funnel-shaped black hole**

### 3.3 Steady-State Evolution and the Formation of Multi-Level Structures

**Under the influence of vortex inertia, the ejected matter continues to maintain its rotational and hierarchical structure:**

- **Large scale:** Galaxy clusters, galaxies, and nebulae follow the axial and radial distributions of the funnel-shaped
- **Small scale:** Stars, planets, and moons inherit the vortex characteristics of their parent bodies;
- **Microscale:** Particle fields, nuclear forces, and electromagnetic interactions share the same origin as the vortex

**This establishes the unified structural origin of the universe spanning the macrocosm, celestial bodies,**

and the microcosm.

#### **4. A Rational Explanation for Key Phenomena in the Universe**

##### **1. Cosmic Expansion**

This is not the creation of space ex nihilo, but rather the intuitive manifestation of continuous axial ejection from a funnel-shaped black hole.

##### **2. Universal Rotation of Celestial Bodies**

All rotation originates from the primordial vortex of the parent entity—the funnel-shaped black hole—and constitutes a “genetic trait” of the cosmic structure.

##### **3. Directionality in Galaxy Distribution**

The anisotropy and filamentary structures observed in the large-scale structure of the observable universe correspond to the tubular axis and ejection direction of the funnel-shaped black hole.

##### **4. Avoiding the Singularity Problem**

The universe originated from a structured, morphologically defined, and physically active funnel-shaped black hole, rather than a mathematical singularity of infinite density and infinitesimal volume, making the physical logic self-consistent.

##### **5. Theoretical Significance and Scientific Value**

##### **1. Provides a physical model of the origin of the universe that is morphological, structured, dynamic,**

and comprehensible.

**2.** Unifies the common origin of the macroscopic universe and microscopic fields through the funnel-shaped black hole combined with a vortex field.

**3.** It offers entirely new directions for calculations and observations regarding the age of the universe, the rate of expansion, the distribution of matter, and the nature of the cosmic boundary.

**4.** Lays the foundation for establishing a unified theory encompassing the theory of unified fields, the theory of the origin of the universe, and the theory of the origin of life. 5 Conclusion

The universe did not originate from a structureless singularity in the Big Bang, but rather from a vortex-generated cyclone cluster within a funnel-shaped black hole, evolving into a process of inertial force ejection. As the cosmic matrix, the funnel-shaped black hole generates all space, time, matter, and celestial motion through tubular geometry, vortex field dynamics, a central void channel, and an axial ejection mechanism. The ubiquity of vortices in the universe, the directionality of expansion driven by centrifugal rotational forces, and the ordered structure of galaxies all serve as direct evidence that the universe was generated by

the funnel-shaped black hole.

This model is highly consistent with natural phenomena and offers a completely new research pathway for cosmology, astrophysics, and fundamental physics.

References:

\*The Universe, Earth, and Atmosphere\*, Volume 1 (by Asimov, translated by Wang Tao, Qian Dong, et al.). Science Press, 1976

New Concepts of the Universe, edited by Zhao Jiangnan. Wuhan University Press, 2003 5 10.

Chen Juquan and Chen Jianglan, eds., \*Self-StudyGuide and Exercises for the Philosophy Self-Study Examination\*. Huazhong University of Science and Technology Press.

Xiong Chengkun and Liu Liangjun, \*An Introduction to Taiji Particle Physics\*. Chongqing Press

Sun Chunwu Email:yzscw0514@163.com WeChat ID:scw20171020

Part II: The Hollow Eccentric Field Structure of



## Cells—The Cosmic Homogeneous Mechanism of the Origin of Life

Sun Chunwu

Abstract: Following Part One, which posits that the universe did not originate from a singularity or the Big Bang, but rather from primordial gas originating from a vortex-formed cyclone cluster within a funnel-shaped black hole, evolving through a process of inertial force ejection. As the cosmic matrix, the funnel-shaped black hole generates all space, time, and matter through tubular geometry, vortex field dynamics, central hollow channels, and axial ejection

mechanisms. The “Black Hole-Generated Universe”

theory proposes that the universe evolved from a

primordial black hole with a hollow, eccentric, and vortex structure. This paper extends this structural model to the most fundamental unit of life—the

cell. This paper proposes that cells are not

homogeneous filled bodies, but rather “micro-cosmic systems” that inherit the primordial structure of the universe. Their core characteristics

include hollow-eccentric fields, rotational fields, channel structures, and directed ejection and absorption. Cellular life activities, material transport, energy metabolism, and division and proliferation all follow the dynamics of hollow-eccentric fields

consistent with the origin of the universe. This paper establishes a unified model of cosmic and cellular structures across three dimensions—structural

origins, field motion mechanisms, and corresponding life activities—providing a new theoretical foundation for the origin of life, cell biology, and the

unified field of biophysics.

**Keywords:** cellular structure; hollow eccentric field; vortex field; origin of life; cosmic homology; cellular physics

## **1 Introduction**

In our first paper, we demonstrated that the observable universe originated from the axial ejection process of a funnel-shaped, hollow, eccentric, vortex black hole. All phenomena in the universe universally exhibit homologous structural characteristics such as rotation, layering, channelization, and central voids. As the highest-level

product of cosmic evolution, life—and its fundamental unit, the cell—necessarily inherits the physical structure and laws of motion inherent to the

origin of the universe.

Traditional cell models describe cells as “colloidal systems with organelles suspended in cytoplasm,” overlooking the cell’s most fundamental field structure, hollow characteristics, eccentric axis,

rotational flow, and directed channels. Based on the concept of cosmic homology, this paper proposes a model of the cell's hollow, eccentric field structure,

revealing the physical origin of cellular life activities  
and achieving a theoretical unification of the originsof the universe and life.

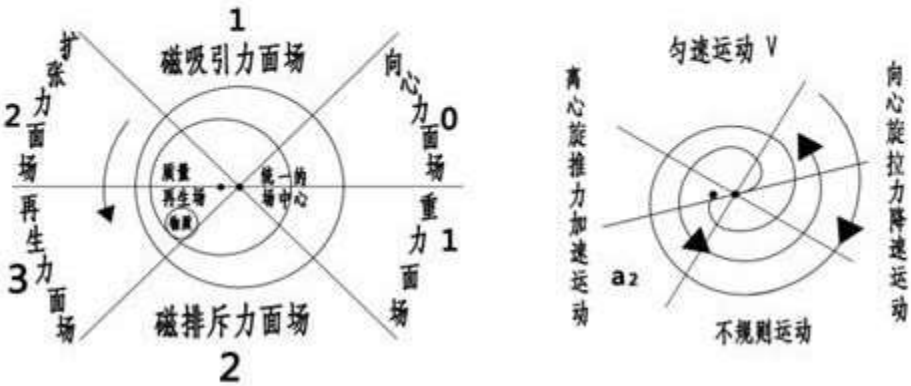
2                      Structural                      Definition                      and                      FundamentalCharacteristics of the Cellular Hollow Eccentric

Field The cellular hollow eccentric field defined in this paper possesses four fundamental characteristics thatare entirely consistent with those of primordial blackholes:

1. Hollow Core Structure

As illustrated in the elliptical diagramdepicting the hollow field within the human heart(

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



), external hot air currents enter the upper part of the heart. This is referred to as the diffuse gas on the magnetic attraction surface field. As it diffuses and accelerates downward, it generates additional energy through replication, which also manifests as inertial force. Since the outer layer moves faster than the inner layer, the swirling gas crosses the magnetic repulsion field and moves upward toward the gravitational field and the centripetal force field.

Since the gas receives no external energy input, it is instead subject to dissipative forces such as friction and gravity. Consequently, as the gas moves upward from below, it decelerates solely due to inertial forces, gradually contracting and curving inward to form an elliptical motion. This elliptical motion is physically referred to as centripetal motion; thus, the resulting centripetal force accelerates the vortex.

It is akin to a ping-pong ball falling from a height of one meter onto a hard surface; although it loses about 30 centimeters in height with each bounce, this height still exceeds the 50-centimeter radius of a circle centered at that point. Thus, the airflow spirals around the center at a constantly decreasing height, first forming a large outer ring resembling the cosmic radiation rings, marking the birth of a mass. This large outer ring represents the formation of a mass with an irregular cellular shell.

After any substance aggregates into a spherical shell, there are voids between the substances; thus, the cell wall shell contains numerous small voids, as well as a large void in the interior. The presence of these cavities serves three functions. First, it creates a difference in temperature and pressure between the interior and exterior of the shell. For example, in patients with chronic illnesses who receive daily intravenous fluids, water molecules entering the body are converted into hot air currents by body heat. These currents accelerate in a vortex around the

low-temperature, eccentric cavities within the cells, replicating the hollow interior of a ball. Meanwhile, excess air is expelled by centrifugal force through the small pores on the cell wall. Because they are blocked by the skin, unlike the hot air currents inside the body, they burst out through tiny pores on the skin, swirling into individual hairs or growing into long, tube-like strands of hair.

Meanwhile, the air currents bursting out of the small cavities within the cells swirl into crowns at each tiny pore on the cell wall. When the centripetal

vortex on the crown disk generates sufficient suction, it draws in more thermal air currents from within the skin—including small drug molecules from intravenous fluids—and pulls them into the center of the crown disk. There, they accelerate and swirl

around the cell's low-temperature, eccentric cavity field, replicating into spherical clusters—forming yet another small molecule.

This eccentric cavity field, akin to the length of a lever's arm, is a field that replicates mass to generate more energy; it also functions as a multifunctional, automated, sealed machine capable of transformation and evolution. For instance, airflow entering the eccentric field—regardless of its quality or quantity, including the small molecules of intravenous medications—is swirled into clusters. As the accelerated vortices generate heat through compression and friction—which is sealed within

the system—they evolve into high-temperature, high-pressure conditions. Under the influence of systemic forces, each vortex cluster undergoes rapid, continuous chemical reactions and evolutionary transformation. Even antibiotics, rendered ineffective, are transformed into large protein shells—which, in turn, evolve into a coronavirus.

It is not solidly filled; the central region contains a dynamic hollow field, serving as a channel and axial space for matter, energy, and information, corresponding to the central void of a cosmic black hole.

## **2. Eccentric Axial Positioning**

Key structures such as the cell nucleus, centrosome,

and spindle do not reside at the geometric center but exhibit a stable eccentric distribution. While sharing a common origin with the eccentric vortices of cosmic black holes, they differ in that cells lack the ability to eject matter.

### **3. Vortex Field Motion**

Cytoplasmic circulation, organelle movement, and molecular transport all follow rotational, vortex-like, and spiral trajectories, representing a direct reproduction of cosmic vortex fields at the cellular scale.

### **4. Directional Channel Absorption Function**

The cell membrane, cytoskeleton, endoplasmic reticulum, and Golgi apparatus collectively form an eccentric vortex system, enabling the directed intake of matter, its compression into small molecular vortex clusters, and subsequent replication and evolution into proteins within the cell. This corresponds to the cosmic formation mechanism of

black holes: “intake—vortex clustering—ejection from the black hole to evolve into dark stars.”

The cell is the miniaturized, vitalized, and organicized cosmic mother black hole.

### **3. The Life Dynamics Mechanism of the Cellular Hollow Eccentric Field**

All cellular life activities are driven by the hollow eccentric vortex field and can be divided into three stages corresponding to cosmic evolution:

### **3.1** Field; Centripetal Rotational Contraction and Matter Concentration Stage

Through its membrane structure, the cell generates a centripetal contraction force with the eccentric field, drawing external matter and energy in a directed

manner to form vortex clusters or small molecules—a

process corresponding to the compression of the primordial black hole's vortex into a vortex cluster. This

process provides the basic “raw materials” for cellular life activities and maintains the dynamic stability of the field.

### **3.2** Cellular Hollow Field Processing and Energy Conversion Stage As inhaled matter enters the cellular vortex hollow field, it undergoes decomposition, synthesis, folding, and assembly to form macromolecules essential for life.

The cellular hollow field pathway ensures the efficient, directed movement of matter, preventing disorder and chaos, and serves as the physical

foundation for the cell's maintenance of order.

### **3.3** It is possible to manually and directionally clear

debris and apoptotic cell fragments from the cellular eccentric field. It is recommended to develop a



compound formulation containing Astragalus polysaccharides and Ganoderma triterpenes, based on the Traditional Chinese Medicine theory that

“ when vital energy resides within, pathogenic factors cannot invade.” Existing research shows that the combination of  $\beta$ -glucan and selenocysteine can increase the conversion efficiency of fragments by 37%.

The core protocol for the clearance and transformation of apoptotic cell debris, based on fifty years of clinical practice, innovatively employs four synergistic methods targeting both extracellular and intracellular apoptotic debris. The core delivery vehicle is a customized large-scale herbal plaster, with the specific implementation as follows:

**(1)** Preparation and Application of the Large Traditional Chinese Medicine Plaster: Over twenty precious herbal ingredients—including Herba

Desmodium, Galium, Lycopodium, Plantago, Zea mays, Ligusticum, Salvia, Dragon’s Blood, Angelica, Dehuo, Qianghuo, Dipsacus, Cordyceps, and Gastrodia—can be selected. After grinding and pulverizing, these herbs are mixed with honey to

form a thick paste. The ointment is applied to a far-infrared fabric substrate to form a circular patch approximately 8 cm in diameter and 4 mm thick. This

patch is applied to the affected area or the Sanyinjiaoacupoint. It should be replaced with a new patch immediately after each weekly bath to ensure consistent therapeutic efficacy.

**(2)** Core Mechanism of Action

1. **Physical Barrier and Heat Retention:** The medicated patch blocks the intrusion of external cold air into the affected area. When combined with an outer layer of thickened, self-heating compression wear (featuring a bra-like secure design), it prevents the dispersion of heat;Simultaneously, precise application to the Sanyinjiao acupoint and other acupoints related to gallstones, along with the use of an external heat-retaining sleeve, allows the body to lie on its leftor right side or in a prone position on the bed. This facilitates the circulation of qi and blood within the body during rest, creating a downward, centripetal vortex that generates new cells.

This also creates a targeted thermal airflow treatment pathway. Fragments of withered, dying cells are carried by the circulating qi and blood in a centripetal vortex into the eccentric void field within the heart, or into the genetic eccentric void field, where they are swirled into several new cells. These cells contain numerous fragments of withered, dying cells, making them heavier than normal cells and lacking the force of qi. Consequently, the patient's body accumulates more substances that cause side effects. A person's aging is like trying to climb stairs on two legs that can no longer move.

Yet, like all things, cancer cells are subject to the natural laws of birth, aging, sickness, and death. Even if left untreated within the body, a batch of them will naturally undergo apoptosis through metabolic processes within eight days.

2. However, the shriveled, apoptotic fragments, not having been excreted through urine or feces, are carried by the circulation of qi and blood in a centripetal vortex into the eccentric void field of the heart, or into the eccentric void field of the genes. There, they are swirled into several new cells. These cells contain numerous shriveled, apoptotic fragments, making them

heavier than normal cells and lacking the force of qi. As a result, the body accumulates more harmful byproducts, and the person's aging process becomes as laborious as trying to climb stairs on two legs.

3. Targeted Penetration of Chinese Herbal Ingredients: The active components of the herbs achieve effects such as relaxing tendons and unblocking meridians, invigorating blood and resolving stasis, relieving pain and dispelling wind, and eliminating dampness and dispersing cold. Through high-molecular-weight rapid penetration technology, they generate self-heat and contain no capsaicin.

4. *Atractylodes macrocephala* also has a "sibling" called *Atractylodes lancea*. Can you steep *Atractylodes lancea* in water to drink? Yes, you can. *Atractylodes lancea* has a strong, pungent aroma that can penetrate quickly, while

Atractylodes macrocephala tends to be more "defensive." Atractylodes macrocephala firmly anchors the middle jiao, preventing dampness from spreading.

Atractylodes lancea is more dynamic and purgative; its spleen-tonifying effect is relatively weaker, but its ability to dry dampness is stronger. If you have particularly heavy dampness in your body and are on the heavier side, Atractylodes lancea is a better choice—steep 10 grams of it in water. For slender people with heavy dampness, add Poria cocos. When using Atractylodes macrocephala and Poria cocos together, use 15 grams of Atractylodes macrocephala and 6 grams of Poria cocos.

Jokingly speaking, Poria is like a “water management expert.” See how it eliminates dampness? Poria clears a channel, allowing the body’s dampness to flow out through it.

Where is the body’s drainage channel? It’s in the bladder—dampness is expelled through urination. Atractylodes is the commander-in-chief, and Poria clears the

channels; thus, a massive operation to eliminate dampness from the body begins.

This allows the body's dampness to be expelled through urination and defecation.

Additionally, the herbs in the large medicated plaster formula—such as ginseng and astragalus—tonify qi, nourish deficiencies, and provide thermal energy. Under the dual effects of localized heat and pressure, fragments of apoptotic cells and viral debris resulting from radiation and chemotherapy can be gradually broken down—some

of which are converted into gas and expelled through

respiration. Furthermore, in addition to the large medicated plaster, a thick, German-style self-heating bodysuit is worn, fastened tightly like the straps of a woman's bra,

or a protective sleeve is worn over the leg to insulate the large medicated plaster. The heat from the herbal medicine flows in a targeted manner to the affected area, clearing dampness from the body. Under the high temperature and pressure within the cells, the fragments of apoptotic cells and the debris from viruses killed by radiation and chemotherapy are broken down and transformed into gas, which is then directly

exhaled from the body during cellular respiration. Through continuous transformation by the heat from the large medicinal plaster, the viruses and waste fragments within the cells are gradually converted into calcium carbonate. Alternatively, they are entirely transformed into

proteins, enhancing the patient's vitality and spirit. This process turns waste into treasure,

creating the most affordable and effective health supplement—one that cures cancer without side effects.

For middle-aged and elderly individuals over 55, regularly applying the plaster to the Sanyinjiao acupoint and using a sleeve-style cover to wrap the leg and retain the plaster's

heat ensures that the plaster's heat and aroma

continuously cleanse the body of cellular debris

and waste. This boosts overall immunity, promotes rejuvenation, and significantly extends lifespan. Furthermore, it

prevents future occurrences of cancer, kidney stones, and other diseases.

Another portion is continuously converted into calcium carbonate or transformed into protein, effectively “turning

waste into treasure.” This



boosts the patient's vitality and energy without any side effects.

**(3)** Also applicable for broader applications

For middle-aged and elderly individuals aged 55 and above, applying the large medicated plaster to the Sanyinjiao acupoints on the upper part of both feet

on a long-term basis—changing the plaster each time you bathe—can continuously clear internal dampness and strengthen the spleen. It also

transforms cellular debris and waste into protein, boosting overall immunity and achieving the effects of delaying aging and prolonging life.

Combined with a dietary and wellness regimen

Patients should adhere to the principle of “30% medication, 70% lifestyle management,” with the following specific requirements:

**1.** Take symptomatic health supplements with warm water every morning and evening, followed by warm multigrain porridge accompanied by a small portion of savory side dishes to strengthen the constitution;

**2.** Drink hot black tea 2–3 times daily. Before bed,

drink half a bowl of warm water and take Liuwei Dihuang Pills (for kidney yin deficiency syndrome);

**3.** Wear long-sleeved undershirts, long pants, a hat, and socks daily; ensure bedding is warm; rest in a comfortable environment; and engage in appropriate daily activities to aid in cancer recovery and promote longevity.

#### Author Information

- Name: Sun Chunwu (1948—)
- Gender: Male (Han Chinese)
- Place of Origin: Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province
- Research Focus: Natural Sciences
- Employer: Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group Co., Ltd., Jiangsu Province
- Academic Affiliation: Visiting Professor, Talent Education and Training Center, China Management Science

#### Research Association

- Postal Code: 225008
- Email: yzscw0514@163.com
- WeChat ID: scw20171020
- 

Part Three: The Unified Model of Consciousness Field Vortices—The Three-Dimensional Homologous Structure of the Universe, Cells, and Consciousness  
Sun Chunwu

## **Abstract**

Building upon Part One: “Black Holes Giving Birth to the Universe” and Part Two: “The Theory of the Hollow Eccentric Field of Cells,” this paper proposes a third core model: the Unified Theory of the Consciousness Field Vortex. This paper argues that consciousness is not a byproduct of biochemical reactions in the brain, but rather a third-level hollow eccentric vortex field that inherits the origin of the universe and the structure of cells. Using the brain’s neural network as a carrier, it forms a complete closed loop of information intake, compression, integration, and directional projection, adhering to the same physical laws that govern the origin of the universe and the movement of life. By examining three dimensions—the homology of field structures, the mechanism of consciousness generation, and the essence of cognitive behavior—this paper achieves the ultimate theoretical unification of the universe, the cell, and consciousness, providing a new, quantifiable, and deducible physical framework for cognitive science, neuroscience, and research into the nature of consciousness.

**Keywords:** consciousness field; hollow eccentric field; vortex dynamics; information projection; cosmic homology; unified field theory

## 1 Introduction

The preceding two papers have respectively demonstrated that the observable universe originated from the energy projection of a horn-shaped, hollow, eccentric vortex black hole, and that the cell, as the fundamental unit of life, is the biological re-enactment of this primordial structure at the microscopic scale. The universe generates spacetime and matter through vortex fields, and cells sustain life's metabolism through vortex fields; consequently, consciousness, as the highest-level product of cosmic evolution, must necessarily adhere to the same set of underlying structural laws.

Traditional theories of consciousness confine it to neuronal discharges and chemical signal transmission, overlooking its most fundamental properties: field-like nature, hollow structure, eccentricity, rotational motion, and projective nature. This paper, for the first time, defines consciousness as an independently existing information vortex field, treating the brain as a "consciousness black hole." It achieves a unified chain spanning from the material universe to living cells and ultimately to spiritual consciousness, thereby constructing a three-tiered homogeneous system comprising the macrocosm, microcosm (cell), and microcosm (consciousness).

**2. The Hollow, Eccentric Vortex Structure of the Field of Consciousness—A Spiritual Replication of the Universe and the Cell:** The field of consciousness fully inherits the four fundamental structural characteristics of cosmic black holes and cells, forming a highly unified morphological logic:

**1. Hollow Core Field:** Consciousness is not a solid accumulation of information but exists as a dynamic hollow axis, serving as the central channel for attention, self, and intentionality. This corresponds to the central void of a cosmic black hole and the hollow field at the center of a cell. The hollow structure ensures the efficient flow, focusing, and integration of information.

**2. Eccentric Axis Mechanism**

The focal point of consciousness, self-awareness, and the decision-making center are never located at the geometric center of the information field; instead, they exhibit a stable eccentric distribution. This determines the directionality, selectivity, and purposefulness of consciousness, and is completely homologous to the direction of cosmic projection and cellular polarity.

**3. Vortex-like Information Movement**

Perceptual input, memory retrieval, mental reasoning, and emotional flow all operate through rotational, cyclical, spiral, and recirculating patterns, forming a conscious circulation that is isomorphic with galactic rotation and cytoplasmic circulation.

**4.** Directional Information Projection System Consciousness follows a complete pathway of “perception-inhalation—processing-compression—decision-projection,” outputting behavior, language, creativity, and will to the external world, perfectly corresponding to the core dynamic model of black holes projecting the universe and cells projecting matter. In short: the brain is a living black hole that carries consciousness, and consciousness is an enactment of the origin of the universe in an information state.

**3** Generation and Operational Mechanisms of the Consciousness Field—Information-Based Black Hole Projection: All activities of consciousness can be reduced to a three-step dynamical process within a hollow, eccentric vortex field, which fully corresponds to the universe and cells:

**3.1** Information Influx and Vortex Convergence: The senses direct visual, auditory, tactile, and kinesthetic signals into the field of consciousness, where they converge toward the hollow central axis under the

influence of vortex forces, forming a repository of raw material prior to information compression. This stage corresponds to the convergence of primordial cosmic energy and the absorption of cellular matter.

**3.2**      **Hollow Axis Integration and Deep Compression:** All information is subjected to high-speed vortex compression, filtering, association, and reconstruction within the hollow core field of consciousness, transforming fragmented signals into ordered cognition, meaning, memory, and logic. This process represents the “singularity moment” of consciousness, corresponding to the critical compression of the universe and the synthesis of cellular matter.

**3.3**      **Projection of Consciousness and Externalization of the Spirit:** When information compression reaches a threshold, the field of consciousness projects directionally along an eccentric axis, manifesting as decision-making, language, action, creation, the dissemination of ideas, and the execution of will. This “projection of consciousness” is the “Big Bang” of the spiritual world and serves as the fundamental driving force through which consciousness transforms itself, life, and the world.

**4 A Unified Explanation of Core Human Consciousness Phenomena**

**1.** The intense focus of attention stems from the directional pull of the hollow axis of the consciousness field and is a direct manifestation of the centripetal force of the vortex field.

**2.** The cyclical and leaping nature of thought is, in essence, the vortex circulation of conscious information, following the same laws of motion as the rotation of galaxies and the circulation of cells.

**3.** The uniqueness and directionality of self-consciousness are determined by the eccentric axis; the self is the projection axis of the field of consciousness and serves as the coordinate origin of the cosmic structure on the spiritual plane.

**4.** Creativity and bursts of inspiration are typical examples of critical compression and instantaneous projection of consciousness, corresponding to the moment of cosmic origin's projection and representing the highest form of homogeneous reproduction.

**5.** The continuity and unity of consciousness are maintained by a stable vortex field, much like the continuous expansion of the universe and the continuous metabolism of cells; the continuous operation of the field of consciousness is "I am."

**5.** The Ultimate Significance of the Theory: The Grand Unification of the Universe, Life, and



## Consciousness

Together with the previous two papers, this article constitutes the first three-tiered hollow eccentric vortex unified system in the history of human cognition:

**1. First Level:** Cosmic Field, black hole hollow eccentric vortex → energy projection → generation of the material universe

**2. Second Level:** Cellular Field, cellular hollow eccentric vortex → energy projection → generation of the material organism

**3. Third Level:** The field of consciousness, a hollow, eccentric vortex of consciousness → Projection of information → Generation of the spiritual world

These three share the same structural origin, the same driving force, and the same underlying laws, proving that: the universe gives rise to life, life gives rise to consciousness, and consciousness reenacts the universe.

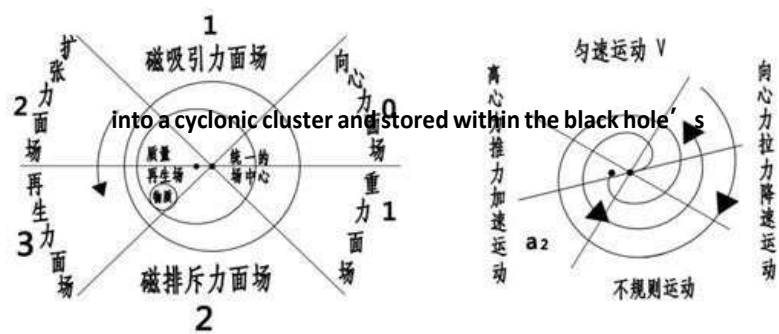
Life and consciousness are not accidental, but rather the inevitable unfolding of the primordial structure of the universe.

**6 Conclusion:** Consciousness is the ultimate informational form of the universe's hollow, eccentric vortex field; the brain is the biological carrier of the consciousness field; and conscious activity is, in

essence, a miniature “re-enactment of the origin of the universe.”From the projection of the universe by black holes, to the projection of life by cells, to the projection of thought by consciousness, all three share a common set of underlying physical laws. This theory thoroughly breaks down the boundaries between physics, biology, and cognitive science,achieving the ultimate unification of matter—life—consciousness, and provides a brand-new, self-consistent, and expandabletheoretical foundation for humanity to understand itsown existence, the essence of the universe, and the future of consciousness.

Gas l accelerating into the black hole’ s void is swirled

椭圆运动走势图 [见下图]



eccentric void field. [This forms a cyclonic cluster system comprising an outer shell, a small inner void ring, and a nucleus-like core.] This also marks the beginning of the formation of an atomic shell.

Due to factors such as varying environmental conditions, the swirling and coiling motion of the gas flow generates forces akin to six distinct force fields. On the outer side of each force field, the gas flow swirls rapidly, while on the inner side, it moves slowly. Consequently, the outer gas flow is first coiled into a high-energy cyclonic spherical cluster, which may later evolve into a white dwarf. On the opposite side of the force field, the inner air currents move upward at a slower speed, yet they are also drawn inward to form a low-energy spherical cluster. This later evolves into a dark star. Thus, across these six force fields, the air currents give rise to celestial bodies of various masses, much like branches and leaves sprouting from a tree trunk. This generates explosive forces akin to nuclear fusion, and around each spherical cluster, celestial bodies

of varying masses—such as gaseous, liquid, and solid planets—evolve. Step by step, this mass evolution causes the universe to evolve from irregular galaxies to

elliptical and barred spiral galaxies, driving the universe toward infinite expansion. Taking Earth as an example, its speed is 250 kilometers per second on the

outer side and 190 kilometers per second on the inner side. Observing Earth from the coordinate system of the Milky Way, the Sun's gravitational pull appears stronger

on the inner side, marking the perihelion. Based on this analysis, the perihelia of other planets also lie on the line connecting the galactic center and the Sun; however, the speed difference for outer planets is smaller, making their orbits closer to circular.

Therefore, the hot air currents pervading the universe flow toward the low-temperature center of the atomic cavities, accelerating into swirling vortices that form small cyclonic clusters. As each cluster is systematically pushed outward by centrifugal force, it inevitably collides with the hot air currents entering from every small cavity in the atomic shell, generating friction and heat. This causes water molecules to form at the boundary where hot and cold meet. This, in turn, alters

the mass of the gas entering the cavity's center, causing

the system's vortex force to grow ever larger and

replicate more structures resembling rain nuclei or spheres. Meanwhile, water molecules from the exterior of the rain nucleus flow toward its center, where they are

spun and replicated into water by the nucleus's rotation.

As hot gas flows continuously from the exterior of the spherical shell into the cavity, it intensifies the system's friction and heat generation, producing high

temperatures that convert the water into new gas. This new gas strengthens the system's force, accelerating the rotation of the inner shell. Under continuous friction and heat generation at even higher temperatures and pressures,

the new gas is converted into chemical bonds and individual solid-state molecules. These are then replicated through rotation into small clusters, evolving into a shell resembling a solid-state atom, thereby generating gravitational force. Under the friction and interaction of these two opposing forces, hot and cold temperatures are also generated within the cavity, altering the mass of the gas entering the center of the cavity. This causes the gas to either polymerize into new gas or, through friction and heat generation, transform into water molecules. This continuous process of aggregation, transformation, and replication causes the mass of the central vortex to evolve in a manner similar to quarks within the

atomic central cavity—sometimes increasing,

sometimes decreasing, and moving in and out. As its mass increases, or as it accelerates through inertial replication to generate greater force, it ceases to follow the energy-efficient elliptical motion and instead evolves toward a circular motion that consumes more energy. Since the system cannot provide additional thrust, the quark spin is unified in intensity by the large-mass friction, gravitational force, and other forces of the central field, causing its motion to contract spherically toward the center. Under the action of centripetal force, its mass is further accelerated to generate more energy. Upon entering the center, regardless of color or flavor, it immediately unifies the intensity of the gas or matter within the void through its high-temperature blue

light—which possesses significant mass—and

synthesizes and transforms it into new elements or gases, or evolves into new entities.

The reduction in the number of quarks following this synthesis and transformation, coupled with the loss of the system's advantageous position—akin to

a lever arm—prevents the replication of further

energy, which is also a force. Therefore, as spin decelerates within the inertial force, electromagnetic forces, strong and weak interactions, and gravitational forces have their intensities unified by high-mass friction, gravitational attraction, and gravity.

When the spin system slows to its limit—for

example, decelerating from 1,000 revolutions per minute to 500—centrifugal force can no longer

overcome gravity. Like an iron weight suspended upward, it gains the opportunity for force readjustment and structural reorganization. As the suspended iron moves upward, it traces a downward, centripetal contraction curve, generating centripetal force. The resulting centripetal vortex and rotational arm force are strengthened, accelerating the spin and increasing pressure. Elements such as iron, which have been converted from high temperatures generated by friction and compression, are pushed and rubbed by the airflow arms formed by centrifugal force, thereby creating magnetic materials. As these materials are rapidly rotated toward the upper part

of the sphere, they supply magnetic iron elements to the top of the spiral. As the lower part of the sphere moves toward the lower region of the spiral, it also supplies magnetic iron elements, and the continuous accumulation of these elements generates magnetic fields at both the upper and lower ends of the sphere. In other words, based on the varying speeds and distribution of particles such as Taiji electrons, a so-called "magnetic field highway" is established.

On the other hand, external gas flows—consisting of gases and small molecules moving sequentially through expansion force fields and regenerative force fields—undergo further

synthesis and transformation due to this accelerating inertial thrust. As a result, electrons evolve from the slow-moving outer core, generating centripetal rotational force. This causes the central object to continuously convert into centrifugal rotational force, pushing outward through friction, generating heat, and emitting light. In the high-speed environment, gases and small molecules are converted into high-energy photons or protons, causing one side of



the gaseous sphere to bulge outward significantly.

This regular, continuous movement to the left and right around the central object within the upper and lower magnetic fields severs the magnetic field lines of the rotating central object, converting mechanical energy into electrical current. This generates and amplifies the self-rotational capacity, driving further transformation or evolution. It also continuously supplies forces to the system, causing the evolved spherical cavities on both sides to be subjected to centrifugal rotational forces within the high-speed environment. When these forces are strong enough, they push one side of the sphere outward, creating a protrusion. The gas escaping from this protrusion generates turbulence, which

then transforms into a new element."

In a low-speed environment, the gas is also swirled by centripetal rotational forces to form a new element. This causes the space surrounding the spherical body to expand asymmetrically in multiples—such as 4, 8, 16, 32, 64, and so on—through a butterfly effect, continuously

generating more new elements. As the strong force grows stronger and the weak force grows weaker, the inflow of gas driven by centripetal rotational force is blocked, causing the two poles within the spherical body to polarize and compete for gas sources. Simultaneously, as the gas at the center of the void accelerates, a large amount escapes outside the atomic void. Consequently, the process ends with the spherical body collapsing and dying due to the massive gravitational force resulting from friction.

Although in the initial stage of the primordial universe, only the "centripetal rotational force" generated centripetal acceleration toward the center, causing the fragmented masses entering the center of the void to be swirled into a spherical field structure, this inevitably accelerated the conversion into "centrifugal rotational thrust," replicating more energy to perform work. All phenomena in nature can be described by these two simple yet distinct forces of friction and repulsion. Although they have only synthesized and evolved into small molecular substances, they have transformed the universe's

former state of purely gaseous motion and provided a model method for replicating energy—a mechanism that serves as a blueprint for creating various new entities.

For instance, dark matter and similar entities, when placed in space and subjected to turbulent, centripetal vortex motion, form a continuous, large

outer ring system—namely, the [[Cosmic Microwave

Background Radiation Grand Ring]]. This structure is densely populated with an increasing concentration of Taiji

Qi and Taiji particles.

Since any object in nature, after aggregation, cannot exist without voids at its boundaries or large voids within its interior, the presence of these voids creates temperature and pressure disparities between the interior and exterior. Consequently, the exterior continuously accelerates the flow of gas and small molecules into the low-temperature centers of these voids through vortex-driven transport. Therefore, the formation of this large ring structure and the internal voids marks the birth of a living entity, which in turn replicates more energy,

transforms it into new mass, and is swirled into spherical clusters known as dark stars.

The external hot air currents and small molecules continuously accelerate in a vortex toward the low-temperature center of the cavity, forming a spherical cluster. Through the accelerated compression, friction, and heat generation, atomic chain nuclear fusion reactions occur, immediately increasing the gravitational pull at the center of the celestial body, causing a temperature surge. This high

temperature vaporizes the original matter—including

the clusters and fragments surrounding the celestial body—triggering collapse and contraction.

Consequently, the dark star evolves into a liquid-state giant.

#### The Horn-Shaped Black Hole Ejection Model—A New Mechanism for the Origin of the Universe

Sun Chunwu

Abstract: The standard Big Bang model of modern cosmology still suffers from theoretical inconsistencies regarding core issues such as the

physical significance of singularities, the mechanism of cosmic inflation, and the nature of dark matter and dark energy. This paper proposes a novel theory of cosmic origins: the Funnel-Shaped Black Hole Ejection Model. The universe did not originate from a mathematical singularity of infinite smallness and infinite density, but rather from a funnel-shaped black hole possessing a distinct geometric structure, dynamic field, and evolutionary path. Through unequal force field compression, axially directed ejection, and continuous boundary expansion, the system generates the matter, space, time, and laws of celestial motion of the observable universe. This paper constructs the theory from five aspects: geometric structure, dynamical mechanisms, evolutionary pathways, physical correspondences, and mathematical formulas. It provides a rational explanation for observational facts such as galaxy distribution, cosmic expansion, and the universal vortex motion of celestial bodies, offering a novel and self-consistent theoretical framework for research on unified field theory, the origin of the universe, and cosmic evolution.

**Keywords:** Origin of the Universe; Funnel-shaped Black Hole; Black Hole Ejection; Unequal Force Field; Vortex Dynamics; Unified Field Theory

## **1 Introduction**

Current mainstream cosmology centers on the Big Bang theory but has consistently faced fundamental physical dilemmas: the undefined nature of singularities, the lack of a source for spacetime, the absence of a driving force for inflation, and the lack of substance for dark matter and dark energy. At the same time, natural phenomena across all scales exhibit highly unified vortex characteristics and force field asymmetry: galaxies, stars, planets, and nebulae all possess vortex structures, while subatomic particles, fields, and cells also exhibit rotational and hollow features. This fully demonstrates that the origin of the universe must possess directionality, axially, and a hollow tubular structure, and that the internal dynamics are by no means a uniform equilibrium force, but rather involve significant force differences and gradients.

Based on the theory of unified fields and the principle of unequal forces, this paper proposes:

In the primordial state devoid of space-time, diffuse gas undergoes turbulence and, under the non-equilibrium interaction of multiple force fields, performs centripetal elliptical motion, gradually contracting into a vortex to form a giant black hole shaped like a funnel—larger at the front and smaller

at the rear, with an axial through-hole; Using the unequal force field as the fundamental driving force and combining it with the mathematical laws of elliptical motion, this model enables the visualization, computation, and simulation of the origin and evolution of the universe, providing an intuitive analysis of the laws governing the motion and evolution of all things, much like an abacus.

The funnel-shaped black hole is not a traditional point black hole, but rather the fundamental structure of the universe. Through continuous vortex compression and axial ejection driven by unequal forces, it continuously generates planets and galaxies, propelling the infinite evolution of the universe, thereby fundamentally replacing the Big Bang hypothesis.

## **2 Geometric Structure and Physical Definition of the Funnel-Shaped Black Hole**

### **2.1 Definition of the Core Structure**

The funnel-shaped black hole is a tubular vortex structure with a large front port, a small rear port, and a central axial cavity running through it; it is the sole matrix from which the universe was born.

### **2.2 Unified Geometric Formula (Core Mathematical Foundation)**

$$\boxed{R(z) = R_{\{in\}} - \frac{R_{\{in\}} - R_{\{out\}}}{L}}$$

$\cdot z\}$

- $R(z)$ : Cross-sectional radius at axial position  $z$  of the black hole
- $R_{\{in\}}$ : Radius of the larger end (entrance)
- $R_{\{out\}}$ : Radius of the smaller end (exit)
- $L$ : Total length of the black hole

This formula strictly defines that the universe originated from a tangible structure, not a singularity.

## 2.3 Core Physical Characteristics

**1. Dominance of Non-uniform Force Fields:** The non-uniform distribution of internal force field intensity along axial and radial directions serves as the fundamental driving force for structural formation and motion

**2. Central Cavity Channel:** The sole pathway for the directed ejection of matter and energy

**3. Synergy of Six Fundamental Force Fields:** Magnetic attraction, expansion, regeneration, magnetic repulsion, gravity, and centripetal force fields, with each force having unequal magnitudes and existing in dynamic equilibrium

**4. The boundary is the boundary of the universe:** There is no traditional spacetime outside the black hole; the motion of the black hole is the motion of the universe

**3. The Principle of Unequal Forces and the Unified**



## Dynamical Formula System

### 3.1 Basic Principle of Unequal Forces (Core Supplement)

Principle of Unequal Forces: Within any dynamical system in the universe, the intensity and direction of the force fields acting on participating particles and units are unequal and inconsistent, and the force differences dynamically vary with spatial position and temporal evolution.

This principle serves as the ultimate driving force behind the formation of vortex structures, celestial rotation, and cosmic expansion, overcoming the limitations of the "uniform force field" hypothesis.

### 3.2 Fundamental Equation of Vortex Origin

$$\boxed{\vec{\nabla} \times \vec{v} = \omega(\vec{r}, t)}$$

This equation describes the formation of a vorticity field from turbulent diffuse gas and is the source of all rotational motion in the universe. Its intrinsic dynamic essence lies in the velocity gradient caused by the non-uniform force field.

### 3.3 Unified Dynamical Equation for the Six Major Unequal Force Fields (Core Supplement to the FullText)

$$\boxed{F_{\text{total}}(r, \theta, z) = F_{\text{magnetic}}$$

$$F_{\text{Magnetic Repulsion}}(r, \theta, z) + F_{\text{expansion}}(r, \theta, z) + F_{\text{regeneration}}(r, \theta, z) - F_{\text{Gravity}}(r, \theta, z) + F_{\text{Centripetal Force}}(r, \theta, z)$$

Key Supplement: All component forces are functions of spatial coordinates, i.e.,  $F_{\text{magnetic attraction}} \neq F_{\text{expansion}} \neq F_{\text{regeneration}} \dots$ , and the strength of the force fields dynamically varies along the black hole's axial direction  $z$ , radial direction  $r$ ,

- and angular direction  $\theta$
- This equation strictly embodies the principle of unequal forces, explaining:
    1. Why gas can perform centripetal elliptical motion (the radial force difference provides the centripetal force)
    2. Why a funnel-shaped tubular structure can form (the axial force difference causes uneven contraction rates)
    3. Why ejection exhibits directionality (the force difference between the exit and entrance drives unidirectional flow)

**3.4** Equation of Elliptical Motion for an Initial Gas

$$\boxed{\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} = 1}$$

$$\vec{a}(t) = -\omega^2 \vec{r}(t)$$

Supplementary explanation of unequal forces: The ratio of the major axis to the minor axis of the ellipse,

a/b, is determined by the radial force difference. The greater the force difference, the flatter the ellipse becomes, and the more likely it is to form a compact vortex cluster.

#### **4 Evolutionary Mechanism of Horn-Shaped Black Hole Ejection (Enhanced Unequal Force Drive)**

##### **4.1 Initial Vortex Compression Stage (Unequal Force Formation)**

Under the influence of the non-uniform distribution of the six major force fields (asymmetric forces), the diffuse gas undergoes centripetal elliptical motion.

- Radial force differences cause the gas to converge toward the center, with stronger forces near the center accelerating the contraction

- Axial force differences cause the gas to contract at different rates along the length, gradually squeezing it into a funnel shape that is wider at the front and narrower at the rear

Ultimately, it coalesces into a funnel-shaped black hole with a length of 1,000 kilometers, a large opening of 10 kilometers, and a small opening of 5 kilometers. This process is a structural compression, involving no infinite collapse and no mathematical singularities.

##### **4.2 Axial Ejection**

## **My Experience in Preventing and Treating Diseases for Your Reference!**

**Sun Chunwu**

Over forty years ago, due to overwork and malnutrition, as well as frequently bathing in cold river water, severe exposure to the cold, and genetic factors, I first developed ankylosing spondylitis at the age of 27, and it grew increasingly severe. Additionally, I developed intestinal adhesions following appendectomy surgery. After work, I would rush home to work tirelessly on inventing new products and

writing books such as *\*The Moon Doctor\**. I also developed rheumatic heart disease. Despite taking medication, my headaches persisted, leading to a diagnosis of brain cancer. I was a long-term patient at major hospitals, where renowned doctors all declared my

conditions—such as ankylosing  
spondylitis—incurable. a senior professor at the

Beijing Air Force General Political Department Hospital, a professor at Shanghai Huashan Hospital (who had once served as Chairman Liu Shaoqi's personal physician), and Director Chen Qiliang of the Orthopedics Department at Yangzhou City Hospital—all stated that it would be difficult to cure and described it as a

“non-fatal cancer.” The only relief came from

lying face-down on the bed, forcing my lower

back to bend at a 90-degree angle before straightening up again.

Therefore, every day I clean the bed thoroughly and make it warm. I lie face-down on the bed for at least an hour, sometimes several hours, first on my left side and then

switching to my right, leaning my body forward. Once I can lie directly on the bed, I use my fingers to target the most prominent part of the lumbar curve, starting gently and gradually applying pressure until I feel pain, then kneading and rubbing the area for a few minutes. Afterward, I would still lie face-down on the soft bed, mentally focusing on relaxing, relaxing, relaxing the protruding part of my lower back, or taking deep breaths and exhaling slowly, one breath at a time. With each slow exhalation, I would maintain the mental focus on relaxation. Often, this would trigger a violent shudder throughout my body, expelling toxic energy from the affected area and relaxing the central nervous system, leaving the protruding part of my lower back feeling lighter.

However, the pain at the site of the intestinal adhesions is worse when I lie face-down on the bed, so I relax that area, allowing the pain to treat the pain. I also take deep breaths and exhale slowly; with each

exhalation, I maintain a state of relaxation. As I exhale slowly, my whole body naturally trembles slightly, which relaxes my nervous system, and the pain from the intestinal adhesions—including the headache—immediately eases somewhat. Sometimes, when lying on my side in bed, I lean my body forward, focusing my mind on relaxing the area around my navel, or I hum a few songs, and I immediately feel at peace. However, in winter, it's best to wear a hat and a mask to prevent cold air from irritating the respiratory tract during deep breathing, which can easily lead to a cold. Alternatively, simply focus your mind on a single point without letting your thoughts wander, keep your entire body relaxed, and take light, slow breaths one after another; this also has excellent health-promoting and body-strengthening effects. However, forcing your waist to bend at a 90-degree angle and then straightening it back up yields poor results. I also drink Fujian Tieguanyin black tea

every day. Since it can be steeped three times and still retain a strong flavor, I place a small pinch of tea leaves in a cup, pour boiling water over them, let it steep for about two minutes, and then pour the remaining hot tea into the cup I used in the morning, adding more boiling water. I drink this hot tea two or three times a day. Because I have kidney yin deficiency, drinking black tea works well for me; I immediately feel less tired. Engaging in researchwork or tasks that require prolonged bending can easily lead to central nervous system fatigue and a weakened immune system. Or

perhaps you've suddenly caught a chill and just started running a fever. I'll slice seven or eight pieces of ginger from my home supply,

place them in a teacup along with two teaspoons of ground pepper, pour in a cup of hot water, cover it, and after about three

minutes, drink the hot ginger tea. I'll warm the

bed and go to sleep; even if I have a fever or am

sick, the fever usually subsides by the middle of the night. Hot ginger tea can also treat



toothaches and stomachaches caused by wind-heat.

Even in summer, I don't use a cooling mat; I even

wear thin long pants and a long-sleeved shirt. Whenever I lie down in a warm bed, I first apply "Scorpion Venom King" liniment to the painful area. I may also apply it to the two kidney points on the lower back to strengthen the body, then rub it into the Huantiao acupoints on both sides of the buttocks about ten times. After that, I rub the painful area vigorously about ten times, applying some pressure to relieve the pain. I also apply several small medicated plasters to the affected areas. I usually keep them on for several months before the pain in the affected area subsides. [However, generally, you should not massage the area where a plaster is applied, as the plaster sticks to the skin and can easily damage the skin in the affected area. Alternatively, before applying the patch, tap, knead, or rub the affected area for one or two minutes. Then apply the patch. If possible, place a hot water bottle over the patch to enhance the penetration of the medicinal properties into the affected area.] As long as the skin does not itch, the patch only needs to be changed once a week, typically when taking a bath.

I also start each day by lightly and briskly tapping my shoulders and back with my fists several dozen times, then move on to tapping or kneading the Shenyu and Huantiao acupoints. [Shenyu, located on both sides of the middle of the lower back, helps strengthen the body, while Huantiao is situated on both sides of the thighs and buttocks; regular tapping and kneading of these

points helps relax the tendons and promote blood circulation.]Next, I use both hands to massage the areas above and behind both ears, the temples, and the lower sides of the back of the head, rubbing back and forth about twenty times. This helps alleviate a foggy or dazed feeling in the head.Afterward, proceed to tap, pinch, and massage both arms in sequence. Then, pinch and massage the area about three centimeters outside the armpit and the hollow of the elbow ten times to expel toxins from the cardiovascular system. Next, press the key acupoint for lung detoxification: first, locate the base of the thumb on one hand—specifically, the midpoint on the lateral side between the first and second metacarpal bones.Press your finger against it; when you feel soreness or a sense of fullness, apply a little pressure and massage it for about 10 to

20 times. Alternatively, place some Chuanxiong powder in a teacup, pour in some hot water, stir it, and drink the warm mixture. After about 15 minutes,

the foggy feeling in your head will improve significantly, and you'll feel energized to get things done.

Next, proceed to tap, knead, and massage both legs in sequence. When you reach Zusanli (ST36) and Yongquan (KI1) on the soles of the feet—which encompass over 200 acupoints throughout the body—[regularly massaging Zusanli is a key acupoint for treating all chronic illnesses, enhancing disease resistance, and promoting longevity. Yongquan is also a vital acupoint for strengthening physical constitution and expelling toxins from the body through this point]—focus on kneading and massaging these areas 20 to 30 times.If one hand becomes fatigued from massaging the entire body, switch hands or use both fists simultaneously. Next, move to the groove at the base of the top of the foot between the big toe and

the second toe. Press down with your fingers; if you feel a dull ache, knead or hold the area, keeping the pressure on for about 8 minutes. Over time, this helps expel toxins from the liver and supports liver health.

When I was conducting research and running a factory, I felt that money was a constant struggle; I had to scrimp and save. I also found myself in both financial and emotional distress. However, I have managed to treat my own ailments for decades now. For instance, when I was 22, the handle of a manual pipe bender suddenly fell from the air; I didn't have time to dodge it, and it struck my chest and ribs. It only hurt briefly, so I didn't seek medical treatment. Another time, a piece of wood struck my shoulder blade, and I didn't seek treatment for that either. But twenty-three years ago, while demolishing a factory building, I climbed onto the roof myself to remove asbestos roofing. A client had come to discuss business with me, and in a moment of carelessness, I stepped on a piece of asbestos roofing and broke it, causing me to fall from the roof. I was taken to the hospital immediately, but they demanded 2,000 yuan for hospitalization. Unwilling to spend the money, I returned home to treat myself. Five days later, both injuries flared up simultaneously, causing unbearable pain. I applied Zhenjiang medicated plasters daily, took injury remedies, and drank various herbal-infused liquors. I continued treating these old injuries until I was 67, when my condition finally began to improve.

Moreover, I spent decades conducting self-funded research until I had exhausted all my savings. Years of living in poverty led to kidney deficiency. Starting at age 62, my teeth began falling out one by one, followed by progressive hearing loss until I could no longer hear a single word. Even with 500-degree glasses, I could not make out the text on my computer screen. For these ailments, I purchased inexpensive medicines from the pharmacy myself—medicines specifically suited to my injuries and illnesses, as well as those for the numbness that had begun in my hands and feet (even extending to the area around my lips), and medicines for deafness and eye conditions. I even made a conscious effort to keep my back straight and my neck upright while

walking. After decades of persistently lying face-down on the bed, my back finally straightened out, becoming almost like that of a healthy person. Other conditions, such as intestinal adhesions and rheumatic heart disease, also gradually improved. For the past thirty-plus years, I have never been hospitalized in Yangzhou for these conditions, nor have I had a cold in over a decade. Looking back now, it may be because, after my factory was demolished, I lived alone at home, had ample time to treat my ailments, and enjoyed a life of freedom.

Whether I slept on my side or face-down every day—regardless of the duration, even if it was several times a day totaling over ten hours—I would focus my mind on relaxing my entire body, the affected area, or my navel. In doing so, my whole body and mind entered a state of rapid relaxation: my central nervous system, cervical and lumbar vertebrae, heart, liver, and digestive system all quickly relaxed. This accelerates the circulation of qi and blood within the body, thereby expelling dampness from the body time and again, which in turn

strengthens the body's immune system. No other sleeping position has the same immediate and significant effects as lying face-down on the bed.

I also often hold my breath to relax. When I reach the limit of holding my breath, energy first surges out from the affected area and circulates throughout the body, instantly revitalizing me. Since the body's

greatest energy expenditure is actually breathing, every time I hold

my breath or take a deep breath, I am essentially storing energy within my cells, thereby boosting my immunity. When the pain throughout my body subsides, I get up to attend to my work and other tasks. Sometimes, when I'm busy, I suddenly feel a sharp pain in my chest, as if I were having a heart attack. I no longer insist on finishing whatever I'm doing within five minutes. I immediately take self-rescue measures by quickly lying face-down on the bed or wherever I am, focusing my mind to relax and rest the heart area. I also take deep breaths and exhale slowly, repeating this to ensure the smooth flow of qi and blood to the heart. After about twenty minutes, I am out of danger, and this practice has extended my life by many years. I am now over 70 years old and have a large family with many children and grandchildren.

Netizens may find these practices useful for early health maintenance and preventing seasonal epidemics, thereby reducing the risk of developing diseases like COVID-19. For example, during your midday rest, first clean the bed surface, then lie face-down on a soft blanket with your mouth near the edge of the bed, or lie face-down on a pillow with your mouth near the front of the pillow. Alternatively, sleep on your side with one hand by your side and the other resting on the pillow. Sleep for 20 to 30 minutes. Before going to sleep at night, you can also lie face-down on the bed for about half an hour. Focus

your mind and relax—this will quickly relax your entire body. This is far more effective than sleeping for two hours.

When lying on your side in bed, grasp your wrist and use your thumb to mechanically stroke up and down the middle of the second joint of your index finger for about twenty minutes. After stroking up and down the middle of the second joint of your index finger with your

thumb about twenty times, a faint dampness—which is actually toxic energy—will naturally be released from the affected area within your body. Furthermore, the intestines, stomach, lungs, liver, kidneys, and

lower back and spine will all relax rapidly, and the body's physical and energy structures will be adjusted. You will feel more energetic. However, do not stop; continue moving your thumb up and down mechanically. Once the body has released toxins about ten times, you can stop and go to sleep or get out of bed to go about your daily activities.

Of course, this method can be practiced whether you are sick or healthy. It is especially beneficial when suffering from a cold or fever. Lie face down on the bed for about half an hour, ideally focusing your

mind on the navel area with the intention of “relax, relax, relax,”

without letting your thoughts wander. [The duration is up to you; be

sure to cover your back with a blanket to stay warm and avoid catching a chill.] After about half an hour, the toxins

within the body will be released. Alternatively, while lying face-down on the bed, you can

silently recite the “Three Disciplines and Eight Points of Attention”

song, or sing a song of your choice (since breathing while singing helps

release subtle toxins from the body several times). Sing once, rest for a

moment, close your eyes, and breathe lightly and slowly for a few minutes; then you can silently sing the song again, and you will immediately feel refreshed and at peace. Afterward, breathe normally or go to sleep; you will be less likely to have nightmares at night. Sleep on your left or right side, or on your side with your face down; try to avoid sleeping on your back as much as possible. The looser the elastic band on your underwear, the better. You can also pull the waistband of your underwear back over your buttocks while sleeping, or replace it with a cloth strip. Just as women who are free from mental stress and wear loose bras over the long term are less likely to develop breast cancer.

In daily life, maintain a balance between work and rest. Avoid wearing heavy clothing. If you sweat during the winter, change your underwear immediately or take a shower. Do not expose yourself to cold for more than half an hour, avoid excessive consumption of cold foods, and minimize air conditioner use. This will help reduce the likelihood of catching colds, fevers, and other illnesses.

At the same time, as the Earth continues its 25,800-year rotation around its axis, we have just passed the midpoint of the 14,000-year cycle—the peak of summer has ended, and we are now moving toward

the irregular, late-autumn climate of a minor ice age. Within the diverse atmospheric circulation patterns formed by each country's geographical location and other conditions, new viral diseases unique to each nation are emerging.

From my experience, in the fall, cold air from the north moves southward. Before the Frost's Descent (Sangshang) solar term, I notice a cold snap arriving roughly every 16 days. Each time, I add a thick layer of clothing; when the next cold snap arrives, the weather is colder than before, so I add a light vest or thermal underwear, or even a pair of long johns. After another 16 days or so, when the cold snap returns, I wear a down jacket or similar warm clothing along with a light cotton coat. By the time the Minor Snow season arrives, I'm essentially wearing a full winter wardrobe. Furthermore, in early spring, unlike some young people who shed their winter coats too soon, I don't do that. This is because early spring mornings and evenings are still cold,

and combined with high mental stress in some individuals, immunity can drop. Other factors include drinking cold beverages straight from the refrigerator or eating too many cold dishes after a shower, or setting the air conditioner too high and exposing oneself to it for too long. Electromagnetic waves interfering with the nervous system's rest are also factors that make one prone to catching a cold.

Drinking hot herbal decoctions or taking Western medicine tablets with hot water is preferable to relying on IV drips to treat fevers. This is because there are specific considerations regarding the volume of fluid, its temperature, the flow rate, and the balance between the fluid entering the patient's body and the fluid processed by the body. While water can alleviate pain, it can also exacerbate the condition.

In winter, intravenous fluids are often administered using cold water, which enters the body rapidly in a downward vortex. This creates a temperature difference with the patient's fever, which at the very least delays the resolution of the fever or causes a low-grade fever to persist. As a result, dampness accumulates within the patient's body, obstructing the flow of energy through the meridians.

Therefore, if a patient with a cold shows no improvement—such as a fever that doesn't subside—after two days of intravenous fluid therapy, the treatment should not be continued. Otherwise, prolonged intravenous therapy will cause the patient's body to grow increasingly weak. It is like the smog in northern winters, which blocks the tiny pores on the cell walls that allow for respiration. On the other hand, the elastic waistband of one's underwear tightens further around the waist, causing the patient to gradually feel unbearable pain throughout the entire body. The elastic waistband of underwear has become a third killer, constricting more and more cells until they struggle against one another, causing pain throughout the body. Moreover, medication cannot stop the pain; if cold compresses are applied to relieve it, they are actually ineffective.

For chronic patients, the elastic waistband of underwear should be replaced with a cloth strap, or the elastic should be loosened as much as possible. Under no circumstances should intravenous drips be

used for treatment. Instead, patients must strictly rest in bed and sleep. Regardless of whether it is summer or winter, patients with a fever should not only drink hot water and take Western or Chinese herbal medicines orally but also wear socks on their feet—even while sleeping—and wear a hat. The bed should be kept warm for sleeping.

In between doses of medication each day, you may also drink hot tea brewed with plenty of red tea leaves, or eat small, frequent meals of hot bean porridge. For those with long-term illnesses, hot bean porridge serves as both tea and a meal, making it easier to absorb various nutrients, stimulating the body's systems, and generating more internal heat within the cells. The fluid in the chest cavity that had not been fully absorbed gradually disappeared after a few days. The clotted blood in the blood vessels began to dissolve, and blood circulation returned to normal. The severe illness improved day by day. The common cold was completely cured.

As shown in the first image below, there are numerous small cavities surrounding the interior of the fruit, and there is also a large, off-center cavity in the center of the fruit.

When external hot air flows in a centripetal vortex and enters the low-temperature, off-center cavity, it is repeatedly replicated by the vortex into numerous smaller molecules. This process, driven by the system's continuous centrifugal force, forms a series of centrifugal vortex arms. Based on the magnitude of the centrifugal force generated by each centripetal vortex, the force is precisely directed to each small cavity. As a result, all the small molecules within the fruit undergo a nuclear fusion-like process, rapidly growing and evolving toward maturity day by day. The next image shows a view of viruses replicated by cells within a patient's body. The final image depicts cancer cells.





For example, if a person is frequently ill, or if their mother suffered from malnutrition or high stress during pregnancy—such as enduring constant emotional strain from others or living in a polluted environment—these conditions can be passed down to the next generation. Consequently, the quantity of white blood cells replicated by the heart's vortex from such energy flows is significantly reduced. These cells mutate into irregular or

oval-shaped forms. When they are expelled from the heart's cavities by centrifugal force, if one typically consumes few iron-rich foods—such as potatoes and meat—the body cannot produce red blood cells with sufficient energy. This increases the risk of leukemia.

Once you understand this, everyone should take note: during winter cold snaps, put on extra clothing promptly; and in early spring, especially when jogging for exercise, adjust your routine according to your physical condition. Avoid running for too long, and it is best to minimize running during the winter.

Since the clothes and shoes people wear in winter weigh about one jin more than summer attire, and assuming each person stands or sits for ten hours a day—totaling 600 minutes by evening—this amounts to the body expending the equivalent of over a hundred jin of force.

This force, combined with friction and heat generated, converts water molecules in the body into moisture, increasing the body's load. Furthermore, heavy cotton coats put pressure on the central nervous system—specifically the lumbar spine—leading to a decline in immunity.

If proper rest is neglected, although the body's rate of nutrient replenishment may be sufficient, the cold mornings of winter and early spring lead people to believe that increased exercise in winter boosts calorie burning. They are unaware that running actually creates problems for the body. For instance, the heat generated by running or physical labor is trapped within one's undergarments.

This is particularly true in schools, where students are required to run extensively during morning exercises in winter. Afterward, when they sit in class, their undergarments begin to cool down, and the salt from sweat irritates the skin and nervous system. It is akin to a baby waking up needing to urinate but being ignored; the child may even cry until drenched in sweat, urinate in their pants, and fall back asleep. When the mother returns from work and waits for the child to

wake up to breastfeed, she discovers the child's pants are wet and the child has a fever. She immediately takes the child to the hospital for IV treatment, and sometimes the condition develops into pneumonia within a few days or the fever only subsides after that.

For adults, if it's just a summer cold or fever, you can follow the instructions on the Qianxiang Zhengqi Water label: pour the liquid from the small bottle into a bowl, add some hot water, and drink it. You should also wear long-sleeved shirts and long pants to help the fever subside faster. The cold may even clear up within a day or two. However, infants and young children have weaker constitutions and should not drink Qianxiang Zhengqi Water.

Of course, people should also drink hot water or hot tea two or three times a day. Since the human body is approximately 70% water, drinking hot water serves a more vital function than the lubricating oil used in a car. After being consumed and processed by the

stomach—effectively undergoing a sterilization-like process—it is evenly distributed to cells and other tissues to replenish fluids. As the temperature within the cells converts into thermal energy, the cells

expand, These expanded cells exert a force by pushing against one another, causing at least tens of billions of cells in the body to expand. The spaces between cell walls become smaller, much like the powerful ripples formed when waves push one another in the ocean. It is possible that qigong masters utilize this principle to unleash immense energy. Therefore, one should regularly drink a few sips of hot water .

Take care of children, especially in winter—they should not drink cold water to quench their thirst. No one should drink a bowl of cold water in the morning to prevent illness, as this can easily lead to colds, fevers, and other ailments. Even in summer, one should not consume excessive amounts of cold beverages from the refrigerator or cold meals. This is because every drop of cold liquid—whether from a beverage, a cold dish, or a slice of chilled watermelon—immediately lowers the temperature and reduces pressure within the cells of the mouth and stomach upon entering the mouth. Consequently, people with weaker constitutions are more prone to a general drop in temperature and pressure throughout their body's cells, leading to fever and a loss of energy and vitality.

Therefore, when a patient rests in bed, it accelerates the adjustment of the body's metabolic and energy systems, thereby strengthening the immune system. (This is because in all plants and animals, it is during sleep that metabolic and energy systems are re-adjusted, leading to enhanced organ function and a natural boost in immunity.)

Of course, in winter I don't wear heavy coats or leather jackets and shoes; instead, I wear lightweight clothing like down jackets and shoes to stay warm.

If I feel pain anywhere in my body (not from external injury, but due to obstructed or sluggish circulation of qi and blood), I use my fingers to quickly pinch or rub the area, starting gently and gradually increasing pressure. Similarly, if I feel chest tightness, simply pinching or gently stroking my chest for a few minutes makes me feel much better. However, those unfamiliar with this technique should not attempt to scratch the chest as if relieving an itch to remove dampness from the

affected area, to avoid accidentally causing injury to the internal organs with excessive force.

If I feel mentally agitated, I hum a few different songs. Or I simply recall happy moments in life. Or I try to take everything in stride. In winter, wear lightweight clothing like down jackets and cotton shoes to stay warm and protect against the cold. Avoid leather jackets and shoes as much as possible, and limit air conditioning use or set it to around 15 degrees Celsius. Electromagnetic waves interfere with the nervous system's rest and weaken its function, but this has little impact on the body. Avoid cold drinks from the refrigerator and cold foods. Sleep on a warm bed, drink hot tea two or three times a day, wear a mask when going out, and wear socks on your feet. In winter, everyone—men, women, the elderly, and children—should also wear a hat when going out. In winter, spring, and fall, take a hot bath once a week. After bathing, avoid getting chilled and do not stay in air-conditioned rooms for more than 30 minutes. Running in place for a dozen or so steps

every day is the best “medicine” for preventing and treating illness and boosting immunity.

As a researcher, I've sought the advice of countless people before achieving success, so I take good care of myself. I also keep some first-aid supplies at home, such as the Shangshi Jietong Plaster. (If the Zhenjiang plaster melts after applying it to your body, slip a thin plastic bag over your hand and cover the melted plaster. As you press down on the plastic bag repeatedly, all the melted plaster will stick to it. For plaster residue on clothing, apply a generous amount of laundry detergent to the affected area and scrub it in water; then add more detergent and scrub a few more times, and the residue will be gone. Zhenjiang medicated plasters are particularly effective for treating old injuries and blood stasis, and their pain-relieving effects are superior to any other plaster. They also treat a wide range of conditions, but the downside is that they easily melt onto clothing.) Band-Aids, fever reducers, and Liuwei Dihuang Pills (since I have mild heat in the soles of

my feet due to kidney yin deficiency—not kidney yang deficiency—I take this medicine when I'm feeling weak. However, patients with colds or fevers should not take them, as they may worsen the fever.

Also, anti-inflammatory ointment, Wudu Huoluo Ointment, and multi-purpose herbal remedies like Compound Danshen Tablets and Qihé Yī Piàn. Additionally, Huoxiang Zhengqi Water, which treats heatstroke and general fever, was recommended by an experienced TCM doctor.

If a sudden cold snap hits, and I happen to be outside—even seven or eight miles from home—we’ll work ourselves to the bone just to save face and prove a point. But when I finally got home, I would first

put on a thick cotton coat to keep warm. Then, I’d slice seven or eight pieces of ginger from the kitchen cupboard, mix them with two small

spoons of pepper powder in a teacup, pour a cup of hot water over it, and after about two minutes, drink the hot ginger tea while it was still warm. Or I’d mix two packets of black sesame paste, drinking it as both

tea and dinner. After that, I’d wash my face, soak my hands and feet in a large basin of hot water, and then immediately spread out two quilts on the bed, placing a hot water bottle inside

one of them. If I didn’t have a hot water bottle, I’d go to bed without even taking off my undershirt or socks, and I wouldn’t get a fever during the night. If I already have a fever, it will subside by the middle of the night. However, it’s better to rest and sleep at home for another two or three days.

The best doctor is yourself. Especially during a pandemic, do not believe or spread rumors, and do not panic. Follow the healthy habits you’ve always practiced to stay well, and you’ll avoid the negative influence of excessive worry. This creates a relaxed environment—which is to say, it fosters vitality—allowing you to prevent and treat illness with a calm mind and body.

In daily life, do good deeds without expecting anything in return. To explain this in terms of physics: the force generated by the hardships endured while doing good deeds causes the iron in the blood to be pushed and rubbed, thereby converting it into magnetism. The more good deeds one does, and the greater the scale of those deeds, the greater the pushing and rubbing force becomes, converting that magnetism into electromagnetic waves. Electromagnetic waves are even more effective than security measures; they can provide therapeutic treatment to prevent and cure illnesses, as well as send

subtle signals to people in advance, helping to turn misfortune into good fortune and prolong life. This is even better than getting a nucleic acid test. If the test shows you are asymptomatic or positive, it indicates that you have been working too hard, have been exposed to cold, are under significant mental stress, or have been using air conditioning improperly. All of these factors can cause dampness to accumulate in the body, gradually worsening until you catch a cold.

When you catch a cold, wear a woolen hat and socks, keep your bed warm, and rest in bed—you'll recover quickly, and future colds will be delayed by at least a few days. Plus, there will be no lingering effects.

Now that I have gained life experience, I believe that life is a harmonious unity of five aspects: exercise, nutrition, rest, healing, and doing good deeds. This harmony is reflected in my diet: I eat three hearty meals a day of simple, wholesome food, as recommended by traditional Chinese medicine. I buy vegetables every few days, selecting two or three varieties for their nutritional value, and pair them with a soup. I also include pickled vegetables in my meals once or twice a week. When cooking porridge or even rice, I first add one or two types

of agricultural byproducts or medicinal herbs—such as yellow millet, goji berries, black beans, mung beans, or red dates—that suit my body's current needs. I let them simmer for about ten minutes before adding

the rice to cook. Alternatively, pan-fry purchased black beans until half-cooked, or grind them in a small steel grinder for about ten minutes. Place the ground bean powder in a jar and soak it in vinegar for a few days. Each day, eat seven or eight black beans, chewing them thoroughly before swallowing. Of course, when I drink alcohol in winter, I first warm the glass with hot water, then pour the hot water from the glass into a bowl and place the glass in the bowl of warm water. Each time I drink, I eat about twenty black beans, chewing them thoroughly before swallowing. This helps relieve mental stress and is also a good health supplement for beauty and hair care.

I also keep ginger, chili powder, five-spice powder, garlic cloves, and dried shrimp shells at home as cooking ingredients. I only buy small apples, cherry tomatoes, tangerines, and small mushrooms, eating just

one or two of one or two types raw each day. Especially in winter, I avoid eating cold snacks like large apples raw to prevent catching a chill and upsetting my stomach—plus, eating too much is unnecessary and

wasteful. Those with weak constitutions should prioritize rest and recuperation. There ' s no need to get up early every day to exercise outdoors. After all, energy is conserved. Running in place for a dozen steps at home can also boost immunity.

The above are my personal experiences in preventing and treating illness. For reference only!

References: \*Tai Chi Talks About the World\* by Sun Chunwu, Marsland  
Publishing, New York, USA



**This photo was taken at the entrance of my Shuxiu Gardencommunity during the 2020 Spring Festival. My posture has really straightened out.**





热评

● 科学家：

附：布什总统2008年11月回信On behalf of President Bush, thank you for your correspondence.We appreciate hearing your views and welcome your suggestions.Due to the large volume of e-mail received, the White House can not respond to every message.Thank you again for taking the time to write. 我的建议终于十天后，扬州晚报2008年12月5号报纸上登了美国研究人员2日说，发现经常接触CT扫描病人增加患癌几率升高。所以证明了我的文章正确

▲ 文章:全国累计确诊病例9692例 累计死亡病例213例



识别二维码  
查看文章



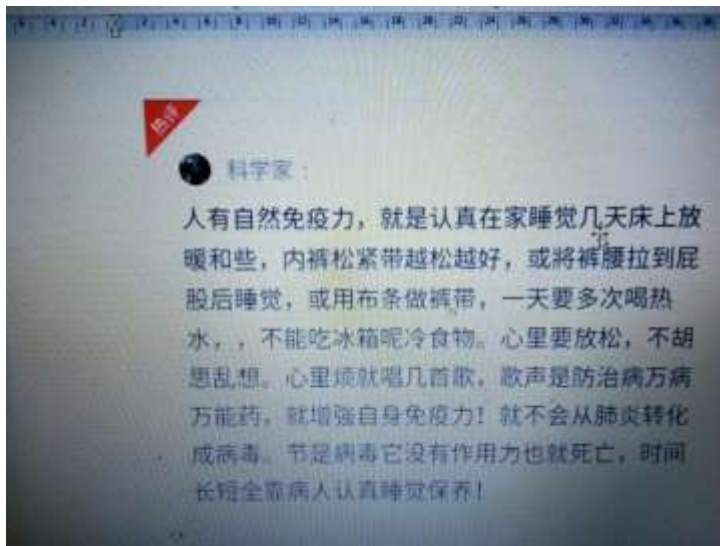
● 科学家：

钟老您好！

我支持中医将这次冠状病毒定为瘟疫。就是冬季天气冷，而人们活动和运动身体转化成热量，甚至是汗储存在内衣内裤里。由于棉袄保暖，当人们休息下来身体上受一冷一热就容易感冒甚至会发烧。

为什么会有那么多生病，简单的说二是环境造成了很多人意念恐慌感压力大，稍微受凉或劳累，就像谈恋爱失恋的人一样加大精神压力就生病就，去医院如核酸检查后更恐怖了，挂水等治疗等，可挂水的水是从上向下加速进入身体内，同身体温度差推挤摩擦发热，至少延迟退烧时间，甚至会转化成肺炎。

这个消息传播出去，从原来十万人仅有两三个



According to a report by Global Times (Reporter Xu Aifang), February 4 is World Cancer Day. The World Health Organization (WHO) states that cancer incidence in China is rising “significantly.” In 2014, approximately 2.2 million people in China died from cancer, yet many of these cases were preventable.

<Is Cancer Not a Disease? A Groundbreaking Perspective That Challenges Traditional Medicine> Please take a look

Anyone diagnosed with cancer experiences immense psychological pressure. Recently, a book titled \*Cancer Is Not a Disease\*, written by a foreign physician, has gone viral online. Its perspective completely overturns conventional wisdom.

Cancer is not the true source of disease. In adults, 30 billion cells die every day, and 1% to 10% of these are cancer cells. In other words, everyone has cancer cells.

Cancer cells arise spontaneously through mutation. Every day, adults produce millions of cancer cells. Therefore, the presence of cancer cells is no

cause for panic. Panic only increases psychological stress, which can disrupt metabolism, cause endocrine disorders, weaken the immune system, and lead to the mutation of more normal cells. The growth and death of cancer cells are just as natural as those of ordinary cells—as natural as clouds drifting across the sky.

Why do tumors grow larger and larger? Cancer cells only grow larger due to the influence of external carcinogenic and mutagenic factors. If a person's metabolism, endocrine system, and immune function are normal, cancer cells will naturally die off; otherwise, they will accumulate and grow larger. Therefore, a tumor is the accumulation of systemic pathological conditions over a long period of three to five years—specifically, the accumulation of the patient's long-term negative mindset, dark psychological state, irregular sleep patterns, haphazard lifestyle habits, or a deteriorating living environment—manifesting primarily as tumor mutations.

Cancer cells are eliminated by T-killer cells. What happens if cancer is left untreated? Autopsies reveal that 33% of men have prostate cancer, yet only 1% die from it. Chemotherapy is ineffective. A survey by the Australian Cancer Center shows that for 22 types of adult malignant tumors, the five-year survival rate after chemotherapy is 2.3% in Australia and 2.1% in the United States. The fact that survival rates are higher without chemotherapy is particularly significant for people over 60.

Does this mean cancer really doesn't need to be treated? To be honest: "Avoiding chemotherapy entirely yields a higher success rate than undergoing chemotherapy."

Modern Western medical practices—including surgery, chemotherapy, and radiation therapy—cause significant harm and are the primary cause of patient mortality.

Cancer must be treated, but not through surgery. First, one must adjust one's mindset, relieve stress, and adopt a clean diet. Why is surgical removal of toxins not the solution? It is akin to a hostage situation in a shopping mall, where criminals, victims, bystanders, police, and security personnel are all entangled—how should it be

handled? The approach should be targeted and peaceful, resolving the situation on-site before proceeding with appropriate protocols.

Modern Western medicine is overly aggressive; many people are unable to recover after surgery. No one in their right mind would willingly undergo surgery that cuts open their abdomen—the risks are too high. Moreover, the subsequent radiation and chemotherapy are even more terrifying, indiscriminately killing all types of cells—this is ignorant medicine. It completely ignores the fact that the truly lethal toxins and the pathological environment fostering tumor growth are the root causes, not the cancer cells themselves. If a tumor is removed today but the body's underlying issues

persist, the cancer will still recur. Therefore, the issue is not whether to operate, but rather: what problems exist in the patient's lifestyle? Can the patient identify these issues? If surgery is absolutely necessary, one must ask: will the patient's various health issues be resolved by the surgery? For most people, the consequences after surgery are even more severe.

Surely surgical treatment has a cure rate? What is it? Statistics show that the five-year survival rate is 7%. Do you think that is high or low? Not undergoing surgery does not necessarily mean death, nor does it necessarily lower quality of life. Unless the tumor is too large and obstructing bodily functions—and even then—the patient must change their previous unhealthy lifestyle habits. Going to bed early and rising early, eating a clean diet, maintaining a calm and easygoing disposition, keeping a relaxed mindset, not getting angry with others, connecting with nature, and focusing on happy thoughts—this is the best mindset for facing cancer.

Are there examples of people who recovered without treatment? In the UK, there was a cancer patient whom Western doctors had sent home to die. Coincidentally, his wife also suffered from a stubborn chronic illness, so the couple decided to liquidate their assets and travel the world happily. A year later, he was still alive. When he went for a follow-up checkup, he discovered the tumor had disappeared. It was because he was in such a good mood while traveling. Therefore, do not let cancer intimidate you, nor let your attending physician intimidate you; otherwise, there is no hope. If you let them dictate your treatment, your survival rate is only 7%, and your quality of life afterward will be extremely poor, dragging your entire family into a cloud of gloom and despair. No doctor in the world can guarantee your health, let alone any so-called survival rate.

When it comes to mortality after a cancer diagnosis, do you want to gamble on an uncertain probability, or do you want to face it wisely? Countless clinical studies show that chemotherapy is only 2% to 4% effective. Are you still willing to undergo treatment with highly toxic drugs? Everyone faces a biopsy; if the result is malignant, the

doctor will definitely recommend surgery; if it is benign, the doctor will still suggest surgery. Given this, do you still think a biopsy is necessary? To put it bluntly, a biopsy is merely a feint that leads to even more severe consequences.

The truth about cancer cell mutations is that tumors themselves contain very few cancer cells; they are not the primary cause of death. This is an objective fact. Excessive medical intervention is the primary cause of death. Take the removal of uterine fibroids, for example. They often recur, and while they pose no immediate danger to the body, many doctors won't tell you the truth; instead, they urge you to have them removed immediately. Where is their medical ethics? With many cancers, doctors often throw up their hands in frustration because they don't know what to do. Take bone cancer, for instance—they can't remove that much bone from your body, so they simply give up. If major surgery is performed, who can guarantee that the patient will survive the operation?

For any cancer cells, if surgery isn't performed, radiation or chemotherapy is required. These toxic treatments completely destroy the immune system, causing truly staggering harm.

Research has shown that when the body's metabolism improves, cancer also improves. Therefore, it is the body's metabolic function, immune function, and detoxification function that must be strengthened—this will help you avoid blockages in the body and the accumulation of toxins. Some people are unaware they have cancer and live happily until the end of their lives. They never get tested or undergo full-body examinations, so they are spared the fear-mongering of doctors. Some, simply because they couldn't afford it, never got checked and thus escaped unscathed.

Medical case studies show that even when cancer has metastasized throughout the body and Western medicine has given up, there is still a chance for recovery. The true healer is our own immune system.



Cancer cells are not the primary cause of death; rather, the crux of the problem lies in the body's overall constitution, which has accumulated a large number of carcinogenic factors across its various systems and organs. It is imperative to address negative emotions such as stress and depression.

It is highly unwise to treat cancer cells as "bad elements." Whether through "cutting, burning, excision, radiation, or poisoning," treating these "bad elements" in such ways only serves to worsen the patient's condition. The real issue is understanding why your body has allowed tumors to grow and spread. The root cause lies in your diet—consisting of meat, fish, milk, eggs, and numerous other factors—which collectively contribute to the body's overall carcinogenic transformation. Unhealthy dietary factors include vitamin pills, meat, sugary foods, hamburgers, fried chicken, alcohol, bread containing trans fats, vegetable oil, and so on. Do you take antibiotics every time you catch a cold? Do you look gloomy every day? Are you under a lot of stress daily?

In Japan, there was a pair of twin sisters known as Grandma Jin Hua and Grandma Yin Hua, who lived happily to a very advanced age. The reason was that they refused to undergo full-body checkups their entire lives, avoiding any psychological fear.

The effects of Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) are immediate. TCM takes a holistic approach. Cancer patients typically have a cold constitution, and the blockages caused by the disease make their bodies even colder. TCM treats this with warming herbs to increase body heat.

How can we prevent cancer? Watch what you eat and break bad habits. Excessive smoking, heavy drinking, irregular sleep patterns, and living in heavily polluted environments are all major factors contributing to cancerous mutations.

Maintaining a cheerful mindset and staying mindful of your body at all times is the most effective wisdom for preventing cancerous mutations in this world. Listen to relaxing music, smile at yourself in the mirror, watch comedies, laugh at life's challenges, immerse yourself in nature, shift your rigid values, and live out your life with a calm and

peaceful heart.

"Molecules"—this is extremely unwise. Whether using methods such as "cutting, burning, excising, radiation, or poisoning" to treat these "bad molecules," all such approaches only serve to worsen the patient's condition. The real issue is that you must understand why your body has tolerated the growth and spread of cancer. The reason lies in your diet—consisting of meat, fish, milk, eggs, and numerous other factors acting in concert—which leads to the body's comprehensive carcinogenesis.

In Japan, there was a pair of twin sisters known as Grandma JinHua and Grandma Yin Hua, who lived happily to a very advanced age. The reason was that they refused to undergo full-body examinations their entire lives, avoiding any psychological distress.

The effects of Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) are immediate. TCM takes a holistic approach. Cancer patients typically have a cold constitution, and the blockages caused by the disease make the body even colder. TCM treats this by using warming herbs to increase the body's internal heat.

How can we prevent cancer? Control what you eat and break bad habits. Smoking, excessive drinking, irregular sleep patterns, and living in heavily polluted environments are all major factors contributing to cancerous mutations.

Maintaining a cheerful mindset and staying mindful of your body at all times is the most effective wisdom for preventing cancerous mutations in this world. Listen to relaxing music, smile at yourself in the mirror, watch comedies, laugh at life's challenges, connect with nature, let go of rigid values, and live your life with a calm and peaceful heart.

The doctor's article above further reinforces the validity of the content I originally provided to President Bush in my letter.

● 哄哄：

新型冠状病毒是季节性流行病，就是到冬季引起低气压低温而发生病，若扩大宣传造成恐慌感，就造成更多人精神压力大，易生感冒病和发烧，若医院挂水，就至少延迟退烧，就继续挂水，就转化成肺炎及以后进化成小冠状病毒。但它是寄生在细胞内。有了细胞的系统给它作用力，就是如人工将复印机打开来工作复印一份份文件一样，所以，细胞内的气分子和小冠状病毒，被细胞的作用力先复制出更多小冠状病毒，就被滚雪球似地，越来越大成球状团。这时冠状



**China can counter high tariffs by leveraging social media to tap into market consumption chains**

Social media platforms could establish a dedicated system to track daily cancer incidence and mortality rates nationwide or even by province. For example, when the incidence rate in Wuhan was rising or falling, I needed to know the daily figures for my research. I would check the data on platforms like Toutiao, Kuaibao, and other

news sites, and the next day, the National Health Commission's

platform would display the national incidence rate. Immediately, traffic to the National Health Commission's platform would surge dramatically. Since most netizens were concerned about the trends in the epidemic, they would also share the information in their group chats.

Eight days later, I noticed that incidence and mortality rates remained high. I searched Baidu for global COVID-19 incidence and mortality rates and discovered two issues: First, Pang Tong had reported all kinds of incidence and mortality rates on the COVID-19 infectious disease platform. Second, many countries were using intravenous drips to kill the virus, which led to an increase in mortality rates, though they did not rise exponentially every day.

Therefore, I submitted a recommendation to the National Health Commission platform: no individual or hospital should be permitted to falsely report cases of the flu, geriatric diseases, or

other common illnesses as COVID-19 on the commission's online

platform. Those found guilty should face disciplinary action ranging

from a police interview to imprisonment for several years. Unless this is enforced, the infection rate will not decrease.

If the incidence rate truly drops to zero every day, Wuhan's city and road lockdowns will be lifted immediately.

Otherwise, the lockdown and road closures in Wuhan cannot be lifted for the time being. This is because at least five groups of people are exploiting the pandemic to settle scores with one another. Furthermore, everyone has been misled by the media into believing it is an infectious disease.

Furthermore, several Chinese students in the U.S. have immediately established international pandemic websites and platforms. They currently report daily on infection and mortality rates across the globe, generating substantial economic returns for their self-media outlets.

If we do a good job of ending cancer now, first, Chinese social media should post daily updates on cancer incidence rates—whether high or low—from major hospitals on their platforms. This would not only reflect the national cancer incidence rate but also show that it

has dropped significantly. Social media would serve as a monitoring mechanism. The entire nation would have a clear understanding of the situation.

Social media is well aware that both cancer incidence and mortality rates have dropped significantly. This is absolutely not due to people eating certain fruits and vegetables, nor is it due to eating grilled lamb skewers, buffet meals, or Xinjiang camel milk, nor is it a matter of tobacco, alcohol, or tea.

It is clear that 35 years of various propaganda campaigns—including those on CCTV's "Straight Talk"—have all fallen into the strategic traps set by those with ulterior motives.

We must correct all of this, promote positive energy, and no longer fall for the quick schemes of both friends and foes. China's domestic demand issues within its market economy have also been

resolved; China does not necessarily have to rely entirely on exports. We must tap into our own domestic consumption potential.

Business owners and shopkeepers all say that self-media is the true hero defending the interests of the entire nation!

Reposted from CCTV for reference only

**1. Carbon monoxide poisoning:** (1) Carry the patient to a well-ventilated area; pour freshly squeezed white radish juice into their mouth to revive them; following this with sugar water is even better. (2) Pour a decoction of strong black tea into their mouth.

**2. Poisoning from gold, silver, arsenic, sulfur, etc.:** Drinking raw sheep's blood immediately counteracts the effects.

**3. Accidental ingestion of copper:** Eat a few walnuts; they will dissolve the metal. Alternatively, grind 120 grams of walnut meat and 500 grams of water chestnuts into a paste, mix with wine, and drink.

**4. Pesticide poisoning:** ① Mix raw mung bean powder with cold water and drink one teacupful. ② Take 10 eggs and drink the egg whites raw until the poison is expelled.

**5. Poisonous mushroom poisoning:** ① 500 grams of licorice root and 2 kilograms of water; simmer slowly until reduced by half, then divide into four doses. ② 90 grams of raw mung beans, ground into a fine powder, mixed with cold boiled water and taken. ③ One bowl of fresh sheep's blood, drunk while hot. ④ 90 grams of honeysuckle, decocted in water and taken while warm.

**6. Brine poisoning:** ① Drink an appropriate amount of white liquor mixed with brown sugar in one go to neutralize the poison; ② Mix 500 grams of tofu with 90 grams of brown sugar, stir well, and eat immediately.

**7. Wild vegetable poisoning:** 15 g of loess and 10 g of raw licorice root; decoct in water, strain out the residue, and drink the clarified liquid.

**8. Meat poisoning:** ① Stew 15 grams of hawthorn fruit in red wine and drink. ② Mash fresh winter melon into a pulp, extract the juice, and drink a large amount.

9. Accidental ingestion of lead powder: 15 g of Coptis, decocted in wine to counteract the poison.

10. Fish and Crab Poisoning: ① 30g each of ginger and perilla leaves; add an appropriate amount of brown sugar, decoct in water, and drink. ② 90–150g of fresh reed root, 15g of ginger, and 15g of perilla leaves; decoct in water and drink.

11. Bacterial food poisoning: ① 60 g hawthorn, 125 g brown sugar; decoct in water and drink.

② One clove of garlic, 1 g realgar; mix and mash, then dissolve in warm water and drink, or administer antibiotics promptly.

12. Kerosene poisoning: Drink 250 ml of peanut oil in one dose.

13. Rabid dog bite: ① Apply crushed garlic to the wound. ② Immediately apply sugar to the wound upon being bitten.

14. Mule or horse bite: Boil a large piece of beef in water, chew it thoroughly, and apply it to the affected area; avoid eating ginger for 3 days.

15. Cat bite: Apply mint juice to the wound.

16. Insect or snake bites: Pound cherry tree leaves into a paste; take half a wine glass at a time, and apply the residue to the affected area.

17. Rat bites: Drink one wine glass of ginger juice, and apply a paste made from crushed ginger and brown sugar to the affected area.

18. Venomous snake or centipede bites: Rub a whole garlic clove on the affected area; the pain will stop immediately. It is best to drink alcohol and eat garlic.

19. Spider Bites: Mix sesame oil with salt.

20. Venomous snake bites: ① Immediately tie a rope or cloth strip tightly above the wound to prevent venom from entering the bloodstream, then quickly squeeze the venom out of the wound before treating it with medication. ② Pound 6 grams of realgar and 3 grams of garlic into a paste and apply to the wound; this is highly effective for pain relief. ③ Pound soybean leaves into a paste and apply to the affected area; this



immediately relieves pain and reduces inflammation.

**21.** All Insect Bites: Grind equal parts of realgar and dried alum into a powder. First wash the area with ginger broth, then mix the powder with tea and apply it as a poultice. This formula is called “Two-Ingredient Toxin-Extracting Powder.”

**22.** Venomous snake lodged in the throat: Take 3–5 grains of ancient moon (a type of seed). Pierce small holes in the snake’s body and insert one grain into each hole. Then, fill the tip of a scallion leaf with tobacco pipe oil and insert it about 6 centimeters into the person’s anus. After one hour, the snake will emerge.

**23.** Snake in the ear, nose, anus, or vagina: When a snake enters a body orifice, grasp its tail and stroke its belly against the grain using a bamboo or wooden strip; the snake will emerge on its own. Do not force it out. If no bamboo or wood is available, use a finger or a toothbrush to stroke it.

**24.** Snake in the mouth: Prick the snake’s tail with a needle, and it will retract.

**25.** Scorpion Stings: Grind white alum and Pinellia into a powder, mix with vinegar, and apply as a poultice; this will relieve pain and draw out the venom.

**26.** Bee Stings: ① Apply juice from a ripe cucumber to the affected area several times a day to relieve pain and reduce swelling. ② Apply salt water to the affected area several times a day.

**27.** Mosquito and bedbug bites: Apply vinegar to the bite to relieve itching and reduce inflammation; if a bump forms, apply lye water to the affected area.

**28.** Needles, bones, iron, wood, or other objects embedded in the flesh: ① Chew dried black plums into a paste and apply it to the area; the object will be expelled. ② Pound Achyranthes root into a paste and apply it to the area; the object will be expelled.

**29.** Fishbone stuck in the throat: Grind equal parts of Amomum villosum and licorice into a powder, wrap it in a small cloth, place it in the mouth, and swallow saliva; the bone

should come out with the phlegm.

**30.** Fish bone stuck in the throat: ① Take ash from carp bones and swallow it with sugar water. ② Swallow olive juice.

**31.** Fishbone stuck in the throat and unable to pass: ① Take white sugar mixed with aged vinegar; ② Decoct 15 grams of Clematis root and swallow the decoction; ③ Grind the kernel of a green loquat into juice and use it as a mouthwash.

**32.** Bone splinter lodged in the throat: Consume walnut kernels mixed with borax; eat them together and they will pass immediately.

**33.** Coin or Feces Obstructing the Throat: When a child or others accidentally swallow coins or similar objects, causing a life-threatening obstruction, grind water chestnuts into a paste, mix with sesame oil, and have the patient drink it; the object will be expelled immediately.

**34.** Accidental ingestion of gold: Calcine a sheep's neckbone to ash, grind into powder, and take 10 grams per dose with rice water. After one night, the gold object will pass in the stool.

**35.** Fish Bone Causing Abdominal Pain: Decoct Evodia fruit and drink the decoction; this will soften the bone and relieve abdominal pain. If one dose is ineffective, repeat the treatment two or three times.

**36.** Chicken bone stuck in the throat: Grind gallnuts into a powder and take it with boiling water. As the medicine enters the throat, the chicken bone will dissolve and pass down.

**37.** Glass shards embedded in the flesh: Dissolve red clay (soil from barren, rocky areas where no plants grow) in clean water and apply it repeatedly.

**38.** Foreign object in the ear: Apply 95% alcohol to the object to cause it to shrink, allowing it to be expelled.

**39.** Foreign object in the nose: First, instill a few drops of cooking oil into the nostril. Then, use your hand to plug both ears and the nostril not blocked by the object, and have the person blow forcefully outward to dislodge the object. Alternatively, after instilling the oil, pinch the other nostril with

a piece of paper to induce a sneeze, expelling the foreign object.

**40. Sand in the Eye**

The eyes are the most delicate organs and cannot tolerate any foreign objects. If the foreign object is

not removed

promptly, blinking will cause pain and may lead to inflammation, ulceration, or even blindness. When a foreign object enters the eye, the worst thing to do is rub the eye vigorously or wipe it with a dry tissue or towel. The correct procedure is to keep your eyes open and have a companion help lift your eyelid to carefully inspect the sclera (white of the eye), lower eyelid, and cornea. If the foreign object is on the eyelid or the white part of the eye, you can gently wipe it away with a tissue dipped in a small amount of clean water (at home, it is best to use a cotton swab dipped in a small amount of antibiotic eye drops to remove the object); if the foreign object is inside the upper eyelid, on the cornea, or embedded deeply, you must seek immediate medical attention at a hospital.

**41. Heatstroke**

For mild to moderate heatstroke, the patient should be moved quickly to a cool, well-ventilated area to

rest quietly.

Remove or loosen clothing and wipe the body with a cold towel to rapidly lower body temperature.

Offer the patient some cool salt water or a refreshing, salt-containing beverage. If the patient becomes unconscious or experiences convulsions, seek immediate medical attention.

**42. Sunburn**

When going out in the summer, take proper protective measures, such as applying sunscreen and using a

parasol. If

the skin becomes red, swollen, or painful from intense sun exposure, apply a cold towel to the affected area and apply a moisturizing cream as needed. If blisters have already formed on the skin, do not pop them; seek medical attention to prevent secondary infection.

**43. Calf Cramps While Swimming**

If you experience a calf cramp while in the water, get out of

the water immediately, sit down with your leg straight, grasp your big toe and pull it backward, and massage the calf muscle. If you cannot get out of the water immediately, stay calm, hold your breath, and perform the above actions while in the water.

#### **44. Bleeding from Injuries**

any clotted

blood.

press, or attempt to

remove them. Instead, bring the edges of the wound together, apply a sterile gauze or bandage, and seek immediate medical attention.

area with sterile gauze or a clean towel, apply an ice pack for half an hour, and then apply a pressure bandage to reduce pain and swelling. Seek medical attention at a hospital if the injury is severe.

the bleeding. Then apply a pressure bandage until the bleeding stops. Seek medical attention as appropriate.

#### **45. Cuts**

and bandage the wound

with sterile gauze or a band-aid.

attention.

clean gauze to stop the bleeding. If bleeding persists, you may

also tightly wrap a tourniquet (or a clean string) around the base of the finger to stop the bleeding. Wrap the severed finger in sterile cloth and place it in a clean plastic bag. Unless the severed finger is severely contaminated, do not rinse it yourself or soak it in any liquid; seek immediate medical attention at a hospital.

**46. Fractures**

Once a fracture is confirmed, the injured limb (or finger) must be immobilized before going to the hospital; otherwise, abnormal movement of the fracture ends may exacerbate the injury. Use whatever materials are available—such as wooden

boards, sticks, branches, bamboo poles, or magazines—to create a temporary splint. If none of these materials are available, secure the upper limb to the torso, and the lower limb to the opposite healthy limb.

**47. Pneumothorax**

Some people, particularly elderly patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD), may experience a

pneumothorax after forceful coughing, strenuous exercise, or laughing. Symptoms include chest pain that worsens with deep inhalation and radiates to the shoulder and back. In severe cases, life-threatening emergencies such as difficulty breathing and a drop in blood pressure may occur. In such cases, avoid patting the back or moving the patient to prevent worsening the pneumothorax. Place the patient in a semi-recumbent position; if oxygen is available at home, administer it immediately while calling an ambulance.

**48. Seizure**

Before the ambulance arrives, turn the patient's head to one side to prevent choking on vomit. Then, find a metal

spoon, toothbrush, or other object that is unlikely to break if bitten, and place it between the patient's upper and lower teeth to prevent tongue biting. For adults, it is best to wrap the object in a towel or handkerchief to prevent tooth damage.

**49. Ankle Sprain**

After an ankle sprain, do not continue walking, and do not

rub or rotate the injured joint to avoid further aggravating the injury. Immediately apply a cold towel or ice packs to the affected area to reduce swelling, relieve pain, and ease muscle spasms. Switch to heat therapy after 24 hours. If internal bleeding is suspected, apply a compression bandage using an elastic bandage, but do not wrap it too tightly to avoid impairing blood circulation below the bandaged area. If a fracture is suspected, immobilize the injured ankle with a splint or a nearby wooden stick, and seek medical attention as soon as possible.

**50. Respiratory Arrest (CPR)**

First, have the injured person lie on their back with their head tilted back to ensure the airway is clear. If there are

foreign objects in the mouth, such as blood clots, vomit, or dentures, remove them immediately.

Then perform rescue breathing: the rescuer should take a deep breath, pinch the patient's nose closed, and blow air into the patient's mouth as if inflating a balloon, ensuring no air escapes. Administer one breath every 5 seconds, repeating the process. If the patient's mouth cannot be opened or there is severe trauma to the mouth, administer rescue breaths through the nostrils.

**51. Cardiac Arrest (Chest Compressions)**

First, lay the patient on a hard surface or flat ground and loosen their clothing. The rescuer should place the heel of one

hand on the lower third of the sternum, with the other hand stacked on top of the first. Keep both arms straight and use the rescuer's body weight to apply continuous downward pressure at a rate of approximately 70 compressions per minute. Apply moderate force during compressions, ensuring the sternum depresses 3–5 centimeters with each compression. Note: Keep your palms in contact with the compression site at all times.

**52. No Pulse or Breathing (CPR)**

Once breathing and the heartbeat stop, the brain quickly becomes oxygen-deprived; within 4 minutes, half of the brain cells will be damaged. If CPR is not performed within 5 minutes, only one-quarter of patients may survive.

When performing CPR, first use your fist to deliver 2–3 rhythmic, firm blows to the center of the chest, just inside the left nipple. Lift your fist 20–30 centimeters from the chest to gauge the force of the blows. If a pulse has not yet returned, immediately perform 4 consecutive mouth-to-mouth breaths, followed by chest compressions. When performing CPR alone, perform 15 chest compressions followed by one rescue breath.

When performing CPR with a partner, first perform four consecutive rescue breaths. Then, one person performs five consecutive chest compressions before pausing, and the other person performs one rescue breath.

**53. Drowning**

When rescuing a drowning victim, you must use a life preserver, ball, or board. Except for professional lifeguards, even those who can swim should not approach a drowning

victim with bare hands. After the victim is rescued, immediately check for breathing and a pulse. If breathing has stopped, perform rescue breaths immediately: first, administer four consecutive breaths via mouth-to-mouth resuscitation.

Observe for 5 seconds to see if spontaneous breathing resumes. If there is no response, continue rescue breaths until spontaneous breathing resumes. If the drowning victim has no breathing or pulse, perform CPR immediately. If the drowning victim has swallowed a large amount of water, and they are conscious, the rescuer can press their knee against the victim's back, support their upper abdomen with one hand, and use the other hand to open their mouth to allow them to expel the water. Alternatively, the rescuer can kneel on one knee and have the victim lie face-down across their knee to expel the water.

**54. Foreign Object in the Airway** (Typical symptoms include clutching the throat, a distressed or fearful expression, etc.)

**Self-rescue:**

① **Forceful coughing method.** Take a deep breath, then cough with all your strength; this may dislodge the foreign

object from the airway.

② Abdominal thrusts. Place the knuckle of your right thumb against the upper abdomen, at the midline between the xiphoid process and the navel. Clasp your right hand with your left, then deliver 4–6 rapid, forceful inward thrusts in succession.

Assisting Others:

The rescuer should stand behind and to the side of the patient, place one hand on the patient's chest, and position the heel of the other hand against the spine in the scapular region.

Deliver 4–6 rapid, forceful blows in succession.

Infant and Toddler First Aid:

Have the child straddle and lie face-down on the rescuer's forearm, with the head lower than the torso, and

place the child's arms on the rescuer's thighs. Use the heel of the other hand to deliver 4–6 forceful blows to the child's scapular region.

#### 55. Cervical Spine Injury

If cervical spine injury is suspected, carefully lift the patient onto a stretcher. A designated person

should support and immobilize the head, and apply a cervical collar. If a cervical collar is not immediately available,

place a sandbag or clothing on each side of the patient's neck to prevent head rotation or flexion, which could exacerbate the injury.

#### 56. Spinal Fracture

Three to four people should simultaneously support the patient's head, shoulders, hips, and lower limbs

from the same side, lift the patient horizontally, place them in a supine position on a wooden board, and secure

them with bandages. The patient should ideally be placed in a prone position with a soft pillow under the chest and abdomen. It is strictly prohibited to move or transport the patient using the

“head-and-feet” lifting method, and ordinary soft stretchers must not be used for transport.

#### 57. Head Injury

If the patient is severely injured and unconscious,



rescuers should immediately clear any vomit or blood clots from the mouth, turn the head to one side, and pull the tongue forward to prevent suffocation. If blood is flowing from the nasal passages or ear canals, do not block them with cotton balls, gauze, or other objects.

It is important to note that sometimes, when a person accidentally falls and lands on the back of the head, there may appear to be no visible skin damage, but a skull base fracture may have already occurred. Following a skull base fracture, the patient will quickly develop severe symptoms such as difficulty breathing, nausea, vomiting, and unconsciousness due to intracranial hemorrhage. Therefore, if a head injury is accompanied by nausea, vomiting, or bleeding from the nose or ears, seek medical attention immediately.

#### **58. Electric Shock**

If you discover someone has been electrocuted, the top priority is to locate the circuit breaker as quickly as possible and cut off the power supply. If the power source cannot be found immediately, use a nearby insulated object—such as a wooden stick or plastic pipe—to break the contact between the victim and the power source, then check the victim's response.

If you find that the victim has no pulse or is not breathing, immediately perform CPR on the spot while having someone else call emergency services.

Furthermore, in the event of an accident, the absence of medical first-aid supplies can result in a missed opportunity

for timely intervention. In reality, with a little ingenuity, you can make do with whatever is available.

Here are a few tips you might find useful in an emergency.

- (1) Long socks: Can be used as bandages during emergency treatment.
- (2) Tie: In the event of a fracture, it can be used to secure a splint or as a tourniquet.
- (3) Clean bath towel: Can be used as a triangular bandage or thick dressing.
- (4) Handkerchiefs and washcloths: After thoroughly

ironing them with an electric iron or sterilizing them in a microwave on high heat while damp, they can be used as sterile dressings.

(5) Magazines, rulers, thick wrapping paper, umbrellas, and walking sticks: Can be used as splints in case of a fracture.

(6) Plastic wrap: After removing the outer few layers, it can be applied directly over an open wound to provide temporary protection; plastic food storage bags can serve a similar purpose.

59. What to Do for a Strained Lower Back: 4 First Aid Methods

If you experience a "strained back," you may choose one of the following methods as appropriate:

Massage Method:

Have the person lie face down. A family member should place both palms on either side of the spine and massage downward while applying gentle pressure, starting from the buttocks and moving down to the muscle groups below the thighs and along the back of the calves. After several passes, use the thumb to massage and knead the most painful area

several times. Carrying Method:

Have the patient stand back-to-back with a family member. Both should bend their elbows and interlock them. The family member then bends forward, lifts the patient onto their back, and gently rocks them from side to side. At the same time, encourage the patient to kick their feet upward. Continue for about 3–5 minutes, then set the patient down. Rest for a few minutes before repeating. Generally, after several sessions, the back pain will gradually improve. Continue this several times daily until fully recovered.

Heat Therapy:

Place heated salt or sand in a cloth bag and apply it to the injured area. Apply for 30 minutes at a time, once in the morning and once in the evening. Be careful not to burn the

skin.

**Topical Medication Method:**

Take fresh ginger, hollow out the center, fill it with finely ground realgar, cover tightly with the ginger slice, and bake on a tile until the ginger turns dark yellow. Let it cool, grind into a fine powder, apply it to a medicated plaster, and affix to the affected area. Remove the plaster once the pain subsides.

#### **60. First Aid for Acute Myocardial Infarction**

Acute myocardial infarction is caused by coronary artery atherosclerosis, thrombus formation, or persistent coronary

spasm, leading to occlusion of the coronary artery or its branches. This results in myocardial necrosis due to prolonged ischemia and hypoxia.

During first aid, it is crucial for the patient to remain calm. Family members or rescuers must not panic. Administer first aid on the spot by gently helping the patient lie down to rest, minimizing unnecessary movement.

Immediately administer 10mg of diazepam orally while calling an ambulance or a doctor for emergency care.

While waiting, if the patient exhibits symptoms such as pallor, cold and clammy extremities, or a rapid heart rate, this often indicates that shock has set in. In this case, place the patient in a supine position with the feet slightly elevated and remove the pillow to improve cerebral blood flow. If the patient is unconscious or the heart has suddenly stopped beating, family members must not pick the patient up, shake them, or shout at them; instead, they should immediately perform chest compressions to restore the heartbeat.

#### **61. First Aid for Patients with Self-Inflicted Cuts**

①. Immediately apply multiple layers of sterile cotton pads or disinfected gauze to the wound to stop the bleeding, or apply a pressure bandage.

② If bleeding persists after applying a pressure bandage, apply a tourniquet proximal to the heart according to standard procedures, or use a hemostat to stop the bleeding at a site

where the pulse is clearly palpable.

③ For suicide victims, position the body with the head lower than the feet to ensure blood supply to the brain and vital organs.

④ Transport the patient to the hospital for emergency care.

**62.** What should you do if a heart attack occurs at home? If a patient with coronary heart disease experiences an acute angina attack, immediately place 1–2 tablets of nitroglycerin under the tongue, or take 10–15 tablets of Suoxiao Jiu Xin Wan. Rest quietly; the pain will generally

subside within a few minutes of taking the medication, after which the patient should be taken to a hospital for treatment.

If the patient experiences cardiac arrest, have them lie down on the spot. Act quickly and deliver 1–2 firm blows to the center of the chest. If this is ineffective, perform external chest

compressions; if breathing has stopped, perform artificial respiration. External chest compressions should be performed approximately halfway down the sternum in the center of the chest, at a rate of 60 compressions per minute. For artificial respiration, a rate of 12–15 breaths per minute is recommended. Continue these procedures until medical help arrives. This may save the patient's life; otherwise, sudden death is likely to occur.

**63.** How to Prevent Sudden Death

First, be cautious during the “critical hours.” The period from 6:00 a.m. to 12:00 p.m. is referred to by

medical experts as the “critical hours” for cardiovascular and cerebrovascular diseases, as 70%–80% of sudden cardiovascular and cerebrovascular events occur during this time. Therefore, avoid exercising during this period.

Second, maintain a light diet and ensure a balanced combination of red, yellow, green, white, and black foods. “Red” refers to red wine, 50–100 milliliters daily; “yellow” refers to tomatoes and carrots, one small

serving daily;

“green” refers to leafy vegetables, in moderate amounts daily;

“white” refers to oatmeal, 50 grams daily; and “black” refers to black fungus and black sesame seeds, 5–10 grams daily.

Additionally, drink 250 milliliters of milk daily and consume no more than four eggs per week.

Third, middle-aged and elderly people are best off living in urban areas to avoid delays in emergency treatment due to distance from major hospitals. Those with underlying health

conditions should reduce outings and avoid crowded environments as much as possible. It is particularly important to note that when elderly people go out alone, they should carry essential medications such as nitroglycerin and

quick-acting heart medicine, as well as phone numbers to contact family members immediately.

Fourth, make a habit of de-stressing. “What good is winning the world if you lose your health?”

This perspective was recently highlighted in a new book by Han Baiyi, a PhD from Kobe University in Japan. Middle-aged individuals, in

particular, should avoid placing excessive work-related pressure on themselves. Outside of work hours, force yourself to completely unwind; whenever possible, take time to travel with family.

Fifth, act within the critical 10-minute window. If a family member shows signs of respiratory or cardiac arrest, perform the following first aid within 10 minutes: 1. Call “120” or “999” for emergency assistance. 2. Tilt the patient’s head back, lift the chin, and turn the head to one side to allow any vomit to drain

out and keep the airway clear. If the patient wears dentures, remove them to prevent injury during convulsions. 3. Perform effective chest compressions. Place the palms of both hands one on top of the other, keep fingers raised, and position them over the patient’s precordial area (the lower third of the sternum, slightly to the left). Press down vertically. The compression depth should be 3–5 centimeters, with a rate of 100 compressions per minute. Simultaneously perform rescue breaths, giving two breaths after every 30 chest compressions.

#### 64. First Aid for Hypertensive Crisis

The principle of first aid is to immediately eliminate the triggering factors and administer antihypertensive treatment; however, the rate at which blood pressure is lowered to a safe range should be slowed to avoid compromising organ perfusion. Particular attention should be paid to elderly patients.

- ①. Place the patient in a semi-recumbent position and ensure they rest quietly.
- ②. Administer nifedipine (Xintongding) orally at a dose of 5–10 mg per dose; repeat the dose after 5–10 minutes.
- ③. Administer 25–50 mg of sodium nitroprusside dissolved in 500 mL of 50% glucose solution via intravenous drip, protecting the solution from light.
- ④. Once the critical phase has passed, actively treat the underlying condition.

Prevention: ①. Actively prevent and treat hypertension. ②

. For those already suffering from hypertension, eliminate triggering factors.

#### 65. First Aid for Eye Injuries

- ①. For mild cases, apply cold compresses initially; switch to warm compresses after 1–2 days. Instill chloramphenicol or rifampicin eye drops to prevent infection.
- ②. For minor corneal abrasions, apply erythromycin or chlorotetracycline eye ointment and bandage the affected eye.
- ③. For severe injuries presenting symptoms such as bleeding in the eyeball, dilated or distorted pupils, or protrusion of intraocular contents, first bandage the eye with a clean cloth and rush the patient to the hospital for emergency treatment.

#### 66. First Aid for Eye Injuries

- ①. The primary goal is to prevent infection; administer antibiotic eye drops and inject tetanus antitoxin.
  - ②. Under no circumstances should the eyeball be squeezed, as this may force out internal contents and worsen the condition.
1. Strictly follow operating procedures and wear

protective gear during production.

- ③. Parents should educate children not to play with dangerous items such as slingshots, bullets, knives, scissors, darts, or firecrackers.

#### **67. First Aid for Amputated Limbs**

The success of reattachment depends on the quality of first aid administered to the severed limb.

- ①. Stop the bleeding. In cases of severe bleeding, a

tourniquet is the first choice. If a tourniquet is unavailable, use a cloth strip, cotton belt, or long handkerchief as a substitute. If arterial bleeding persists, use hemostatic forceps to clamp the stump of the blood vessel. Clamp as little as possible to facilitate vascular anastomosis.

- ②. Rinse the wound thoroughly with clean water or a 1% saline solution, then cover and bandage it with sterile or clean gauze. If possible, administer antibiotics and tetanus antitoxin to prevent infection.

- ③. Emergency management of amputated limbs. ① For partially severed limbs, rinse the wound with clean water and cover and bandage it with sterile or clean white cloth to prevent twisting or separation of the edges. Immobilize the injured limb with a wooden board. ② For completely severed limbs, rinse the severed limb with clean water and bandage it with sterile gauze or clean cloth. ③ In summer, if the hospital is far away, the severed limb must be placed in a plastic bag and surrounded by ice (do not submerge the limb in water). ④ Transport the patient to the hospital immediately for emergency treatment.

#### **68. First Aid for Forearm Fractures**

For emergency immobilization, keep the elbow flexed at a 90-degree angle, fingers extended, and the thumb pointing toward the patient's nose. Select 3–4 pieces of wood or stiff

cardboard that span the length from the wrist to the elbow. Wrap the boards in cotton or cloth and place them around the forearm. Secure them with rope, bandages,

handkerchiefs, or strips of cloth, adjusting the tension appropriately. Then, tie a loop with a strip of cloth or rope, hang it around the patient's neck, and loop it under the forearm to suspend it in front of the chest.

#### **69. First Aid for Skull Base Fractures**

①. Keep the patient calm in a supine position with the head elevated or in a semi-sitting position, and avoid loud coughing.

②. Remove any foreign objects from the ears, nose, and mouth.

③. In cases of ear or nose bleeding, do not plug, rinse, or apply medication; simply cover the area with a clean cloth to prevent infection. Take measures to prevent shock, control bleeding, administer blood transfusions and intravenous fluids; in severe cases, surgical emergency treatment may be required. It is essential to transport the patient to a hospital as quickly as possible.

#### **70. First Aid for Spinal Fractures**

①. If the injured person is still pinned under debris or earth, do not forcefully pull on exposed limbs, as this may exacerbate damage to blood vessels, the spinal cord, or the fracture. Immediately remove any objects weighing down on the patient. Spinal fractures are often accompanied by cervical or lumbar fractures.

②. For cervical spine fractures, use clothing or pillows to pad both sides of the head and neck to immobilize the area and prevent movement.

③. For thoracolumbar spinal fractures, place the patient flat on a hard stretcher and tightly secure both sides of the body with pillows, bricks, or clothing to keep the spine in a straight position. Transportation requires three people working simultaneously. The procedure is as follows: all three should crouch on one side of the patient; one person supports the shoulders and back, one supports the waist and hips, and one supports the lower limbs. Working in unison, place the patient



in a supine position on a hard stretcher, with the lower back supported by clothing or bedding.

④. Dress the wounds on the body: rinse the wounds, stop the bleeding, and apply bandages.

#### First Aid Precautions for Spinal Fractures and Spinal Cord Injuries

For both complete and incomplete fractures, immobilization should be performed at the scene to

prevent complications. It is particularly important to transport the patient to the hospital as quickly as possible, maintaining close observation throughout the journey.

①. In cases of suspected spinal fractures or spinal cord injuries, immediately administer first aid according to the protocols for spinal fractures.

②. Use a hard stretcher, stretcher board, or door panel for transport; do not use a soft bed. Do not carry the patient on the back; instead, have 2–4 people lift the patient to prevent aggravating spinal or spinal cord injuries.

③. When moving the patient, keep their lower limbs together and their upper limbs close to their sides, maintaining a straight body position.

For injuries to the chest, lower back, or abdomen, place a small pillow or clothing under the lower back during transport.

#### 71. First Aid for Rib Fractures

##### (1) Assessment

①. Check if the patient is conscious and whether the mouth or nose is blocked by foreign objects such as blood, dirt, or phlegm.

②. Check for any open wounds on the front or back of the chest.

③. Check for difficulty breathing due to the rib fracture.

④. Check for hemothorax or pneumothorax.

##### (2) Assessment

1. Simple Fracture: Only rib fractures are present; there are no chest wounds. The patient experiences localized pain,

shortness of breath, and subcutaneous hematoma.

2. Multiple fractures: Multiple rib fractures with chest wall retraction during inspiration. Often accompanied by chest wounds, severe pain, and difficulty breathing. These fractures frequently lead to hemothorax and pneumothorax; without prompt medical intervention, death can occur rapidly.

### (3) First Aid

- ①. For simple fractures, cover the affected area with multiple layers of clean cloth, woolen fabric, or sterile gauze, and apply a pressure bandage.
- ②. For multiple fractures, secure the chest with wide cloth or wide adhesive tape to stabilize the rib cage. This prevents further injury; seek medical attention immediately.
- ③. Administer oxygen if available.
- ④. In cases of pneumothorax, provide emergency care and transport the patient to a hospital immediately.....

### Deep Sleep Promotes Health

#### 1. Explanation

Good sleep is the cornerstone of good health! You should go to bed around 10 p.m., no later than 11 p.m., and be able to fall asleep quickly—without fail. During the Zi hour (11:00 PM—1:00 AM), the blood returns to its source, and the liver and kidney detoxify... If you are in deep sleep during this time, various illnesses will keep their distance, ensuring your physical well-being. However, if you violate the universal law of Earth's day-night cycle and the interaction of yin and yang by staying late and depriving yourself of sleep, all manner of strange ailments may quietly take hold of you! Sleep according to the natural rhythm: "Sleep well"—aim for at least 3 hours of deep

each night, with more being better; “Sleep sufficiently”—aim at least 7 hours of sleep per night, with 8 hours being optimal. Among all matters in life, this is the most important! To the end, this article introduces various methods to induce sleep and promote deep sleep, which every friend suffering from insomnia or sleep deprivation should read carefully and put into practice.

2. “Warm Compress + Pulsation” Baihui Acupoint Deep Sleep Method After getting into bed at night, assume a comfortable habitual sleeping position, calm your mind, and close your eyes to rest. Take a hot water bottle filled with water approximately 55°C (leave 10% of the space empty, squeeze out the air, and tighten the cap), wrap it in a towel, and press firmly against the Baihui acupoint on the top of your head (the intersection of the midline of the crown and the line connecting the tips of both ears). Then, use a towel to support, cover, and retain the heat. As the warmth spreads to the Baihui acupoint, concentrate your mind, feel the pulsation, and softly count aloud (shǔshù). If you do not feel the pulsation, simply “concentrate mind” and softly count aloud, continuing without stopping—count hundreds or thousands of beats... until you fall asleep and sleep soundly.

Practice “warm compress + pulsation” every morning, evening, and during afternoon naps (wait at least half an hour after meals). If you fall asleep during the pulsation, do not wake yourself; let yourself sleep until you wake naturally. You will then feel completely relaxed and mentally refreshed!

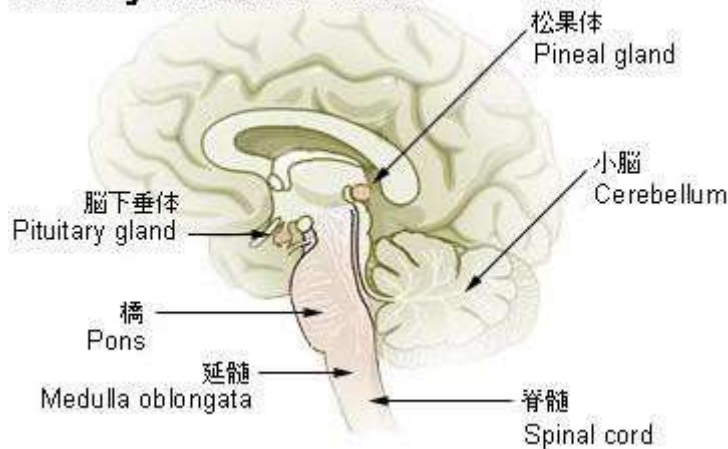
The “Baihui Acupoint” is the convergence point of the five viscera and six bowels, as well as the three Yang meridians and all hundred vessels. It is the leader of all Yang energies at the core of the central nervous system, hailed as the “command

of life's functions and the "Little Sun" of the human body. "compress + pulsation" promotes the flow of fresh blood to this of the brain, allowing it to fulfill its five innate primary functions: boosting yang energy, refreshing and strengthening the mind, lowering blood pressure, inducing sleep and promoting deep sleep, and eliminating illness! With the benefits of "deep sleep" all illnesses will retreat; over time, longevity is sure to increase! A hot water bottle can also be placed on the cervical spine, shoulders, chest, lower back, abdomen, liver, kidney, hands, feet... or any part of the body. Combined with continuous pulsation, it can induce sleep and promote deep sleep.

However, everyone is different. Many people find this method works perfectly for them, allowing them to fall asleep quickly and achieve deep sleep; but quite a few others report that using this method makes their minds increasingly clear, making it impossible to fall asleep. If this method doesn't work for you, try the following methods.

### 3. "Activating the Pineal Gland to Secret Melatonin" Deep Sleep Method

## Pituitary and Pineal Glands



The pineal gland is located roughly at the center of the skull, within the brainstem. It is the center of life, the "brain within the brain," and the core of the core (as shown in the figure). Its primary function is to secrete "melatonin," which induces sleep, promotes deep sleep, slows aging, and helps prevent and fight cancer. When the eyes detect light, the pineal gland stops secreting melatonin. Therefore, after going to bed at night, the bedroom must be kept dim and pitch-black. Lie flat on your back in a stable position. Use the pads of your thumbs to firmly press down on the "lower edge of the ear behind the earlobe, the indentation behind the earlobe," sealing the middle canal. As a result, an arhythmic, pulsating resonance—"hum-hum-hum"—will emerge within the sealed ear cavity synchronized with your pulse. At this point, close your eyes, clear your mind, and visualize a vivid, colorful image of the pineal gland. Focus your attention and listen intently; the darkness and resonance will activate the pineal gland, accelerating its continuous secretion of melatonin... At the same time, quietly count to yourself, continuing to count until you naturally drift off to sleep. No matter how excited you are, no matter how severe

your insomnia, as long as you remain calm and follow the steps carefully, you will fall asleep quickly under the influence of melatonin, sleep more soundly and deeply, and significantly extend your deep sleep duration. (As for how to press your ear openings? Everyone is different—some press the back of the ear, others the earlobe... The goal is to seal the ear openings to produce the “hum-hum-hum” resonance. Do whatever feels best for you.)

Once you’ve mastered the technique, you can activate the pineal gland to secrete melatonin solely through the “intention” focusing your mind and calming your spirit, without any auxiliary methods. The deep sleep achieved this way is even better.

4. “Pulsation to Soothe Internal Organs” Deep Sleep Method After assuming a comfortable, proper sleeping position, focus on “sensing deep pulsations” in a specific internal organ. Continue this without stopping; as you do so, you will fall asleep unconsciously. Moreover, you will inevitably enter a state of deep sleep and sleep soundly until dawn. I often sleep on my side (either left or right) and place my warm left palm above my liver area on my right chest. By pulsing and counting, I fall asleep unconsciously and quickly enter deep sleep.—As ancient physicians said, “When the liver is at peace, sleep is deep”—is precisely what they meant. You may choose to focus on the deep pulsations of the brain, the dantian, the heart, the kidneys, the navel, the Shanzhong acupoint, the Zhongwan acupoint, or other areas according to your needs, sensations, and habits. During the pulsation process, clear your mind of distractions and concentrate on your intention; deep sleep will descend upon you before you even realize it.

5. The “Total Body and Mind Relaxation” Deep Sleep Adopt a comfortable, upright posture;

close your eyes and clear your mind; focus your attention; and use

your mind to issue commands: instruct every organ and tissue in your body to relax slowly, one

by one (spending about 3—5 seconds on each area). You may recite the commands silently or murmur them under your breath; The general order from top to bottom is: relax the Baihui acupoint, relax the forehead, relax the temples, relax the eyes, let the ears droop and relax the cheeks, relax the nose, relax the upper lip relax the lower lip, relax the chin... then move on to the neck, shoulders, armpits, arms, elbows, hands... chest abdomen, groin, thighs, popliteal fossa, calves, ankles all the way to the Yongquan acupoint on the soles of the feet. Command every organ or tissue you can think of to relax one by one... Generally, you won’t even reach the by the time you get to a certain organ partway through you will have fallen asleep without realizing it. Once asleep, since your body and mind are in a natural state—free from worries and attachments—you will sleep exceptionally soundly, with excellent sleep depth.

6. The “Heart-Kidney Interaction” Deep Sleep Method According to ancient Chinese medical texts

insomnia is caused by a “disconnection between the heart and kidneys.” This refers to a physiological imbalance between the cardiovascular system and the urogenital system associated with the kidneys, preventing them from synchronizing with sleep mechanisms. The primary symptoms include dry mouth and throat, palpitations, dizziness, tinnitus, heat in the palms and soles, and an inability to sleep at night—symptoms that are particularly pronounced in cancer patients and those with severe illnesses.

After going to bed at night, the method to promote “Heart-Kidney Interaction” is as follows: Assume a pre-sleeping posture, place the “Laogong acupoint” on your right hand over your heart, and position the “Back Liao acupoint” on your left hand below your left kidney. Feel the simultaneous pulsations at both the “Heart” and “Kidney” points, allowing the physiological rhythms of the heart and kidneys to synchronize; Focus your mind and silently count under your breath. As you continue this practice, you will gradually drift off to sleep without realizing it, and your sleep will be exceptionally deep. Another “Heart-Kidney Interaction” method is reserved for those with a particularly strong sense of pulsation. Without using your hands or any aids, rely solely on your mind, you can simultaneously make both kidneys pulse hundreds or even thousands of times, allowing you to fall asleep quickly and sleep soundly.



Of course, you can also place a "pulse aid" beneath both kidneys and make them pulse simultaneously to fall asleep quickly and extend deep sleep (the "pulse aid" will be explained later in this text).

You need not be bound by the above methods for inducing sleep or deep sleep; you may adopt your own or others' experiences and methods. Any approach that achieves the goal of falling asleep quickly and prolonging deep sleep is a good method.

People are different; some are suited to one method while others are suited to another.

Readers must try them out, experience them, and choose for themselves. If none of the above methods work, please read Section below, "The 'Nourishing Yin Reclining' Deep Sleep Method."

#### 7. The Benefits of "Deep Sleep"

"Deep sleep" can be summed up in a single phrase: sleeping soundly and sleeping straight through until dawn! After waking naturally, stretch your body, and you will feel refreshed, cheerful, and content! Then, suddenly remembering that you have an important task to attend to starting today, you feel no desire to linger in bed or hit the snooze button. You roll over and get up quickly full of energy and vitality, ready to dive into the day's busy schedule of life, study, and work. You don't feel tired all day long, nor do you experience even the

slightest sense of fatigue... This proves that last night your deep sleep was long enough and of high enough quality!—This is a wonderful experience that nearly every adult has enjoyed at some point.

The harmonious and smooth functioning of the body internal mechanisms is achieved through “deep sleep. Please keep the following golden advice for preventing illness and maintaining health firmly in mind: Staying up late, insomnia, and sleep deprivation are the number one enemies of health! Most chronic diseases are caused by long-term late nights, lack of sleep, and especially a lack of “deep sleep”! Humans must breathe every second; humans need nutrition from three meals a day; human work, study, and live every day... The “yang energy (physical strength and vitality) consumed must be replenished and restored; the blood cells and cells of various organs and tissues that are depleted are all produced and replenished during deep sleep; the immune cells, immunoglobulins, antibodies, complement, and other immune substances that are depleted are all replenished and produced during deep sleep...

Ancient Chinese medical texts state: The conversion and replenishment of substances required for the body’s metabolism (as described in the “Yin-Yang Substance theory of the \*Huangdi Neijing\*) are all accomplished during deep sleep at night. The better the quality of deep sleep, the more effectively these tasks are

completed, and the healthier the body remains!

These five articles provide an overview of “Pulsation Therapy”:

**301** explains the principles and operational methods of Pulsation Therapy;

**302** illustrates the efficacy of Pulse Therapy in pain relief through case studies;

Article 303 uses case studies to illustrate the therapeutic effects of pulsation in treating diseases;

304 explains methods for inducing deep sleep through pulsation, including techniques for hypnosis and sleep induction;

Article 340 briefly outlines the discovery, current status, and future prospects of Pulsation Therapy.

Those with a certain level of understanding will try it out after reading these five articles; once they experience its therapeutic effects, they will incorporate pulsation therapy into their daily lives, making it a powerful tool for healing and wellness.

Those with discernment will try it after reading these five articles; once they experience its benefits, they will incorporate Pulse Therapy into their daily lives, making it a powerful tool for healing and wellness.

This article is written by a renowned Chinese physician in Canada

**I have read**

A reminder from the mystical arts—make sure to take this to heart:

1. During the seventh lunar month, avoid spending too much time near rivers.
2. Never hug a tree with three people, and never enter the mountains with four.
3. Birthdays and wedding dates should only be moved up, never postponed.
4. Do not casually give away jade jewelry that you wear close to your body.
5. If a child cries incessantly, consult the elders in the family.
6. When dining with six people, do not sit in the “turtle seat.”
7. Stay away from large trucks, female drivers, and men with tattoos.
8. Take your time when opening up to others, and avoid discussing money.

**9.** People born in the Year of the Dog should not keep cats.

**10.** When walking with elders, do not walk in front of them.

**11.** In a crowd, don't call your childhood friend by their nickname.

**12.** For meals that aren't split evenly, the person who organizes the gathering should foot

the bill.

**13.** If your boss treats you like a close friend, expect to make some kind of sacrifice.

**14.** If relatives or friends repeatedly insist in front of you that "it's not about money," it might actually be about money.

**15.** If you do a good deed for someone, don't go around bragging about it all the time.

**16.** Say positive things every day, such as "I'm so happy," "The weather is beautiful," or "I can definitely do this." Your body will remember them and act on them.

**17.** Don't buy anything you can live without; when you're torn between option one and option two,

choose option two.

**18.** If you see someone in a crowd and feel an instant connection, they are surely a karmic connection from a past life—cherish them.

**19.** Morning is when the yang energy at the top of your head is at its peak, so don't wash your hair in the morning—it's bad for your health.

**20.** Do not casually utter curses; they will attract negative events.

**21.** Cultivate virtue through your words and deeds.

**22.** When you do good deeds, you truly feel at peace.

**23.** When people do something they feel guilty about, their hearts race and they cannot find peace.

**24.** Those who can change themselves are wise; those who try to change others are delusional.

**25.** If you lack connections, good looks, or cunning, you must cultivate the ability to hide your true self so that others do not know your true nature.

**26.** Don't try to please relatives who look down on

you.

**27.** When visiting a friend's home, don't sit on their bed or lie on their sofa to watch TV.

**28.** You must learn to speak wisely; every word you utter holds your blessings and energy. Positive words fill you with vitality, while constant complaining only weakens your aura and drives away your good fortune.

**29.** Share happy news only when the occasion calls for it;  
Do not discuss sad matters in front of others; Current matters: act first, then speak;  
Future matters—discuss them when the time comes;  
Discuss marital matters through mutual consultation;  
When it comes to children, guide them with kindness.

**30.** A thousand well-chosen words are no match for a single moment of silence.

**31.** There are two great difficulties in the world: climbing to the heavens is hard, but asking for help from others is even harder.

**32.** There are two kinds of suffering in the world:

the bitterness of yellow lotus, and the bitterness of poverty.

**33.** Stay away from free things,  
Get a haircut once every three weeks, always arrive 15 minutes early,  
never speak ill of those present,  
Strengthen your personal aura—start by changing yourself.

**34.** Without the ability to make money, all other skills are just flashy but useless.

**35.** Whether you have a lot or a little, make regular monthly deposits—you're saving your confidence and your dignity.

**36.** Don't procrastinate on tasks, don't talk too much, and don't act recklessly.

**37.** No matter how old you are, if your parents are still with you, it is a blessing from heaven. Honor them well and accumulate good fortune for yourself.

**38.** When you're not feeling well, drink plenty of hot water and get plenty of rest.

**39.** When you're feeling down, go out for a walk, clear your mind, breathe in fresh air, and take in the



sights—flowers, rivers, and distant mountains—to sweep away all the negativity.

**40.** When facing conflicts with relatives or children, try to take it in stride and stay optimistic. As long as you're in good health, everything else is just a minor setback.

**41.** Don't make promises you can't keep; failing to fulfill them creates a debt.

**42.** Don't waste food, don't buy too many clothes, and don't associate with the wrong crowd; learn to cherish what you have.

**43.** When a woman suffers mistreatment in her in-laws' home, there are usually three possible reasons: she lacks the ability to earn her own income, her husband is too weak, or her birth family lacks influence.

**44.** The best time to buy a used car is in the summer.

**45.** As you grow older, no matter how filial your children may be, do not live with them. Your home will always be your children's home, but your children's home will never be yours.

**46.** Growing old means physical scars heal slowly,

but emotional scars heal quickly.

**47.** The elderly's bedroom should ideally face the sun to replenish their energy.

**48.** Never overestimate your place in anyone's heart—not even your own children's.

**49.** For a man, the greatest treasure in life is a wife who truly understands him.

**50.** A woman's last "savings account" is a husband who accompanies her to the grocery store, chats with her, eats with her, watches TV with her, goes shopping with her, and sleeps with her.

**51.** When people have too much free time, they start overthinking; when they're too lazy, they become frail and prone to illness.

**52.** Reading doesn't necessarily guarantee success or a bright future. But it allows you to speak with reason, act with flexibility, express yourself with restraint, and play with moderation. Reading is the best way to find peace of mind and inner calm.

**53.** When things are handled with patience, they work out; when people are patient, they find peace.

**54.** Only when the mind is calm can the ground for illness be reduced.

56. On the path to blessings, kindness is the best passport.

Big data doesn't make random recommendations. If you happen to come across this, it means good things are coming your way soon. Leave a comment saying, "Getting better and better, smooth sailing in all things, great luck and prosperity, and may all your wishes come true"—you'll see the results within three months!  
[#TrendingEngineProject](#) [#IWantToGoViral](#)

In the twilight of life, as we stand at the end of our journey and look back, wealth, health, and family form the core of our lives.

When it comes to wealth, we must learn to keep a low profile so it doesn't become a trigger for trouble;

When it comes to health, we must maintain an optimistic mindset and not let illness dictate our emotions;

As for family, we must safeguard harmony and not let conflicts become more acute under external interference. Keeping a

tight-lipped silence is not avoidance, but a sign of mature wisdom; it is not indifference, but a profound understanding of life.

Only in this way can we find our own peace and happiness in the twilight of our years.

In the twilight years, we must reflect: what should be spoken, and what should be kept hidden. Wealth, health, and family conflicts—keep silent and enjoy peace and well-being.

On the Characterization of the Three Disciples of Tang Sanzang We know that *Journey to the West* is a work that blends Confucianism, Buddhism, Taoism, the I Ching, and medicine into a unified whole through the romanticist techniques of literary creation. The author, Wu Cheng'en, distilled the philosophies of numerous monks on the journey to the Western Paradise into three disciples with distinct personalities and worldviews. Through Buddhist education and guidance, they

ultimately converted, returned to the right path, and attained enlightenment.

The author first portrays Sun Wukong's early life as that of a rebel who rose to prominence by causing chaos in Heaven, the Underworld, and the Crystal Palace—a figure who relentlessly pursued his goals, achieved great feats, and disrupted the peace of the world. Ultimately, after five hundred years of reform through the teachings of the Buddha, he attained enlightenment. His past actions were those of a rogue, unfit for greatness; thus, he took Tang Sanzang as his master and vowed to protect him on the journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, seeking wisdom on life and conduct. From then on, he distinguished clearly between love and hatred, refrained from killing the innocent, stood up to tyranny, never held personal grudges, and sought no personal gain. He vanquished demons and monsters, endured countless hardships to ensure Tang Sanzang's successful journey to the West to retrieve the scriptures, and in the process, refined and transformed himself. Ultimately, he achieved great success and fame, and his name has been celebrated for centuries. The author's original intent was that only by walking the right path in life, dedicating oneself to social reform and the greater good, can one achieve lasting fame; and only by viewing life with detachment can one attain true enlightenment. We come into this world with nothing and leave it

with nothing; why then should we rack our brains over fame and fortune? What good are success and renown? When we close our eyes and take our final breath, what truly belongs to us? Realizing that all is empty, only then can we devote ourselves wholeheartedly to the public good, avoid mistakes, earn respect, and find true fulfillment and joy in life. Thus, Wukong's worldview is one of emptiness.

Why did the author give Sun Wukong the surname Sun? And why call him the "eldest disciple"? Because only those who constantly seek truth and self-improvement, who set aside personal grudges, do not seek private gain, do not fear tyranny, and are wholly dedicated to society are good people—and only they are qualified to be called the "eldest." At the same time, the "eldest" must endure hardships first and enjoy benefits last, just like a grandson in a family. That is why Sun Wukong bears the surname Sun. But why was Sun Wukong portrayed as a monkey?

We know that only monkeys in this world can be so lively and endearing, capable of leaping from the trees (the heavens) to the ground (the underworld), from the ground to the water (the Dragon Palace), climbing up and down, fearing neither heaven nor earth, and frolicking and playing their whole lives. The author used this exaggeration to achieve four objectives at once: combining entertainment, realism,

artistry, and the deterrent power of Buddhist doctrine. The implication is that if even a monkey, devoid of human nature, can be transformed through the teachings of Amitabha Buddha, how much more so can humans.

The second disciple of Tang Sanzang is named Wuneng. Before he achieved success and fame, Zhu Bajie had no aspirations whatsoever. His outlook on life was simply to eat, drink, and be merry; without these, life held no meaning.

hence his enlightenment is "Wuneng" (literally, "Enlightenment through Ability"). Therefore, the author portrays a person with such a worldview as a pig, because only a pig would eat, sleep, and then eat again, while also stirring up trouble for no reason. Using a pig's whip to chastise such people's habit of refusing to improve is most fitting. If one is a pig, one must be "Bajie" (Eight Precepts), thereby persuading, educating, and transforming such people to awaken them. On life's journey, one should create a legacy of culture for oneself or others to reflect upon and admire, so that future generations may find joy, each generation surpassing the last, and leave behind a good name.

In the book, the author gives the third disciple of Tang Sanzang the monastic name Wujing, portraying him with a worldview starkly different from his two senior brothers. Sha Wujing believes that one's life should not be spent in frantic busyness and aimless drudgery; one must not spend one's entire life merely eating, drinking, and seeking pleasure, nor should one indulge in romantic escapades, as all such pursuits carry risks. His philosophy is that one should strive for purity of the six senses, untouched by worldly dust; "purity" means freedom from suffering, and "purity" is a blessing. Yet, since humans do not live in a vacuum, what in this world can embody such "purity"? Drawing on his rich social insight,



the author suggests that it is none other than a fish—specifically, a shark—that best exemplifies this “purity.” Without such purity, even the raging waves would eventually wash him clean.

*Journey to the West* is truly a masterpiece. The author’s singenuity in the names of Sun Wukong, Zhu Wuneng, and Sha Wujing has indeed opened up new literary horizons for today’s writers. Moreover, the book’s ideas and content are fully and vividly expressed, immersing readers in a realm that is neither entirely divine nor entirely mundane, neither entirely clear nor entirely obscure. Yet, for hundreds of years, people have been unable to offer a scientific explanation for the true meaning of these three names—a fact that cannot but be considered a regret. At the same time, this hinders both scholarly research on *\*Journey to the West\** and the actors’ ability to effectively portray these three characters through artistic interpretation, thereby failing to achieve the work’s purpose of enlightening, educating, and transforming people for the better.

Senior Brother: Enlightenment through suffering means that a person cannot escape poverty, cannot escape power, and cannot escape purity. Realizing that human destiny is suffering, one must assess the situation and strive to carve out a new world.

## My Perspective on “Namo Amitabha Buddha”

Dear Editorial Board:

I came across the first issue of the 1999 edition of

*\*Contemporary Youth\**, dated January 1, which addressed a question from Xiao Feng in Yanggu County, Shanxi:

“What does ‘Namo Amitabha Buddha’ mean?” I believe the explanation was incomplete and inaccurate, and it is necessary for people to understand Buddhist culture. I am not a Buddhist disciple, but twenty years ago, I discussed with the eminent monk Chuan Zhi whether the essence of Buddhism was superstition and whether it shared any common ground with Marxist scientific culture. I also asked him what “Namo Amitabha Buddha” meant. However, since so much time has passed, and I have devoted the past twenty-plus years entirely to my career and the invention of a perpetual motion machine, and since this monk has since passed away, I can only speak from what I recall, in the hope that it will help people understand Buddhist culture.

Regarding the Buddhist phrase “Namo Amitabha Buddha,” “Namo” signifies return, reliance, respect, reverence, and affection. [“Namo” should be pronounced as “na-mo”]. “Amitabha” means “Infinite Light and Infinite Life.” To explain this in plain language, the “Bha” refers to its doctrine: much like a spinning top toy that everyone loves, it embodies the concepts of saving all sentient beings and fostering unity. It can bring together people with different worldviews, philosophies of life, and social backgrounds—even even

those who oppose its teachings—ultimately uniting them around it, freeing them from the sea of suffering caused by fame and wealth, and granting them a spiritual home where the soul is immortal. An example of this is the three disciples of Tang Sanzang in *Journey to the West*, who held vastly different views on life: Sun Wukong, Zhu Bajie, and Sha Wujing.

The so-called “Buddha” is, in essence, a human being—a member of the royal family. Therefore, as the term implies, no one is beyond redemption; even the wicked, the corrupt, and the sinful can be guided toward goodness through Buddhist teachings. By doing good, one can become a Buddha and a truly good person.

Consequently, the Buddhist phrase “Namo Amitabha Buddha” carries different meanings in various contexts and for different people. For instance, when Buddhist disciples meet, it serves as a greeting and blessing, much like how we say “comrade”; when one is in danger, it functions as a prayer for comfort and protection; and when witnessing others—or encountering evil doers—engaged in wrongdoing, it conveys the intent to guide, counsel, criticize, and deter.

In short, even the uneducated—or those who cannot read a single character—understand its essence: to do good. Reciting it dozens, hundreds, or even thousands of times daily may stem not only from the wisdom of Infinite Light and Infinite Life but also from another reason: the sound of this phrase—particularly

the pronunciation of the character “佛”—may help relax the body, reduce centripetal energy, and regulate the nervous,

respiratory, and digestive systems. Long-term practice can help prevent and treat chronic diseases and alleviate pain. For instance, if you suffer from a migraine or are under excessive mental stress, lie on your side in bed, focus your mind, and relax. Recite “Namo Amitabha Buddha” with reverence, sincerity, and without interruption for at least 200 times; the migraine will immediately subside, or the mental stress will significantly diminish. Of course, wearing a hat, as monks do, is also effective for migraines.

Therefore, Buddhists often say that simply reciting “Amitabha Buddha” can express everything; however, for the purpose of preventing and treating illness, it is best to recite “Namo Amitabha Buddha” as well.

Sincerely, Respectfully,

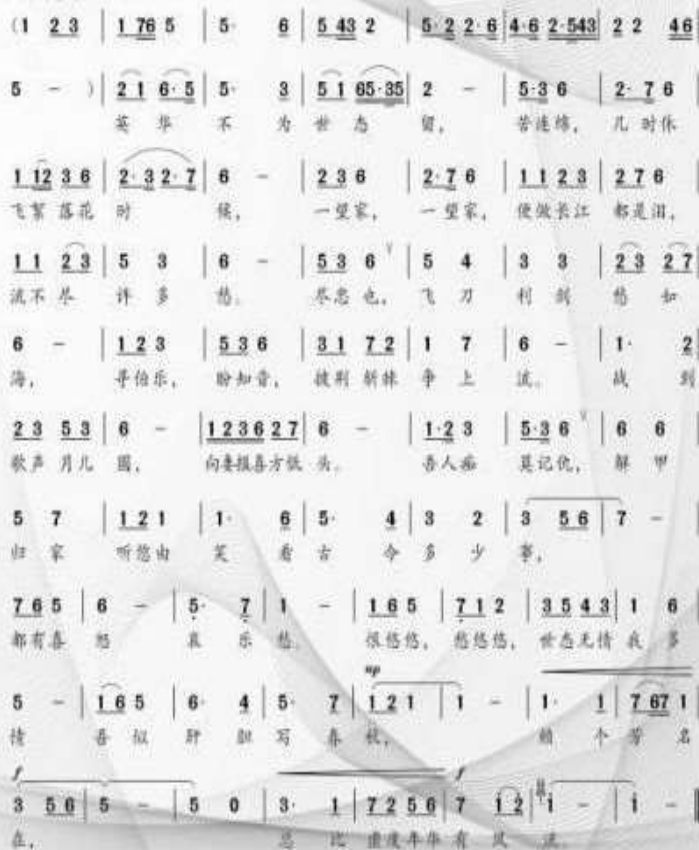
Sun Chunwu(Wule) of Yangzhou

(电视剧《天权语天下》插曲 男生独唱)

刘志然曲

$$1-C \frac{2}{4}$$

离感情绪



熟練度

(1949年-),男,汉族,扬州市,主要从事研究台站材料学等,单位名称:原江苏省扬州三力电器集团

Song of Scientific Research  
The  
Song of Petroleum

Lyrics by Sun Chunwu  
Score of the

A land of splendor, beautiful as a painting; Science and technology propel the nation forward like a galloping steed

What an honor it is to be a researcher, Carrying test tubes as I travel far and wide

Under the dim lamp, the stars shine above; facing challenges, we brave the

sandstorms

In the lab, I greet the rising sun; amidst piles of data, I bid farewell to the setting sun

Fearless of heaven or earth, I let failures and setbacks come as they may

I dedicate my wisdom to the motherland; wherever there is a breakthrough, that is my home

Our magnificent land is as beautiful as a painting; let

failures and setbacks come as they may

Riding the galloping steed of science and technology to revitalize the nation—what an honor it is to be a

researcher

With test tubes in hand, I roam the far corners of the earth

Building equipment deep in the desert, analyzing data high in the clouds

The flowers of theory bear fruit, and the nation blooms with the blossoms of science and technology

Fear neither heaven nor earth; let failures and setbacks come as they may

I dedicate my wisdom to the motherland; truth flows like a mighty river Joy blossoms in my heart

1 = bE  $\frac{2}{4}$   
杨健 作词

# 不忘创业苦

孙树武 改编  
曹四才 曲

(5 6 3 2 | 1 2 3 5 | 6 5 6 2 7 | 6, 6 7 2 7 | 6, 6 7 2 7 | 6, - | 5 6 5 3 2 | 1 6 1 |

3 5 2 1 6 | 1 - ) | 5 6 3 2 | 1 2 | 6 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 5 - | 1 2 6 1 | 6 5 3 2 |

1. 天上布满星， 月牙亮晶晶， 互联网上开大会，  
2. 不忘那一年， 各献神通创业忙 我也下海领螃蟹，  
3. 不忘那一年， 北风透骨凉， 债主闹进我的厂，  
4. 不忘那一年， 苦难没有边， 走投无路讨财路，  
难

2 3 2 1 6 1 | 2 - | 2 2 3 5 6 5 | 5 3 5 | 6 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 1 2 7 6 | 5 3 5 6 |

诉说创业情， 艰难的创业路， 穷人的怨气生， 千头  
建好厂置设备， 借债工人忙产品 累得我生了病， 市  
同伙一大帮， 说我欠他的债， 又是骂破口， 债主  
人家去打工， 半夜就起臭， 回家打巴他， 法院

2 2 7 | 5 3 1 1 | 6 5 6 2 2 7 | 6 - | 5 5 5 6 5 3 2 | 1 6 1 | 3 5 2 1 6 | 1 - |

万难。千头万绪涌上了我心头， 止不住的辛酸泪， 挂在胸，  
无情。商场无情 磨养了我轻信， 连我的本钱， 被掏空。  
通债， 债主逼债 好像个活阎王， 可怜我这失利人， 踟蹰四方。  
执迷， 执迷 执迷 将苦的钱全执走， 可怜我这债务人 向谁再求。

初版 f (5-6 2 | 2 - | 5-3 1 | 1 - | 5-6 2 2 | 6 5 6 2 7 | 6 7 2 7 6 |

5 - ) | 5 6 3 2 1 | 1 - | 6 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 5 1 2 | 6 1 6 5 |

干 不忘创业苦， 牢记孙才往前走， 世世代代莫小

3 2 3 2 1 | 6 1 2 2 3 | 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 1 2 | 3 3 2 1 2 | 1 6 1 |

心， 随着潮流走， 随着潮流走， 不忘创业苦啊。

6 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 5 6 | 3 3 2 1 2 | 1 6 1 | 6 5 6 7 2 7 6 | 1 - | 1 0 0 |

牢记孙才往前走， 不忘创业苦啊， 牢记孙才往前走， *ending*



### Sixteen Poems

I have selected a few of my poems to express my aspirations, and I extend my gratitude to the kind people who helped me during my times of difficulty. I wish them happiness, joy, long life, and great wealth!! I will surely repay you with a fountain of gratitude!

#### Life

Life is inherently empty; why waste effort in vain? Let go of all delusions; dedicate yourself to the Four Modernizations.

#### Ideals

White lotus roots, green leaves, and

**crimson blossoms—the essence of the Three Teachings guides us all.  
Through the practice of reason and law in all cultures, we will bring forth  
the flower of a world of universal harmony.**

### **Living in the World**

**Autumn winds and frost turn leaves yellow; the laws of nature cannot be  
resisted. Go with the flow yet remain enlightened; in moderation, happiness endures.**

### **Faith**

**Whether one believes in**

a deity or not, let there be no strife; understanding this truth reveals all is real.

Ignorance of this truth harms oneself; superstition and delusion lead to ruin.

#### Cause and Effect

Hard work today brings poverty today; a single deception leaves one with nothing. Those who deceive me are no good; seven end up in prison, five meet their end.

#### Frostbite

After the cold wind blows, purple spots appear; the pain and

**itching** are unbearable, **piercing** the heart. When the **spring** breeze brings **relief**, the spots **fade**, the skin **peels off**, and new **flesh** is born.

### The Boss's Worries

The boss, a man of steel, works  
day and night without rest. He's earned no small fortune, yet  
a single scam cost him tens of  
thousands. Now he can't even pay wages—he weeps  
to heaven and earth, and to his mother.  
With the Lunar New Year fast approaching, I ask:

what will the boss do?

### The Joy of Going into Business

Seven long years of hard work and struggle, yet naivety and kindness have  
brought harm upon myself. Worry not about unpaid wages—the plum

blossoms, crushed into mud, bring the fragrance of spring once more. Wielding the spear to drive down costs and boost profits, I ʹ ll return home in triumph. Gathering the family to share old stories, a life of achievement is found everywhere.

In Praise of Tan Renkang, Chairman and General Manager of the Hanjiang Supply and Marketing

Cooperative in Yangzhou, Jiangsu

Having galloped through the business world for decades,  
Having achieved success

and fame, he now cultivates literary grace.  
He has mastered the art of calligraphy, finding joy and contentment in it.

High Praise for Xu Jingshan (Former Director and Party Secretary of the Yangzhou Electric Power Transformer Factory and Radio Factory; Former Senior Chief and Deputy Director of the Economic Commission; Current Secretary-General of the Senior Scientists Association)

I visited the factory director amidst the blooming peach blossoms; his  
wisdom remains unforgettable. Through diligence and

self-discipline, he led his colleagues,  
welcoming inspectors from two departments. He fought tirelessly to secure  
the license, implementing dozens of reforms. He reclaimed the factory buildings and  
canteen, and helped  
24 workers transition from rural to urban residency. We installed  
telephone lines and running water, investing 300,000 yuan in technical upgrades in  
1993. We purchased equipment including  
overhead cranes, forklifts, and rolling shears. We  
established testing and laboratory



**facilities, transforming the factory's appearance into a picturesque scene. We**  
**manufactured energy-efficient transformers**  
**and renovated workshops and dormitories.**  
**We improved public restrooms and showers, and streamlined the office**  
**management network. To support the education of**  
**employees' children, we made contributions to primary and secondary schools.**

Even in her twilight years, she remains dedicated to the enterprise, serving as Secretary-General of the Senior Association for Science and Technology. She assisted the Ministry of Railways in establishing designated sites and supported education for children affected by earthquakes. She encouraged research and development of perpetual motion machines, which have since gained significant recognition. Devoted to caring for her 90-year-old parents, she is widely praised as a role model.

## In Praise of Nurse Cai Liping of the Suzhou Tanshan Workers' Sanatorium

(Written during a convalescence in 1979) Cai's work wins hearts;  
she's a radiant flower serving patients. Though we met by chance, she treated me  
with courtesy; colleagues all praise  
her as a fine nurse.

A Poem by My Good Friend Liu Zhiran of Ludili Road, Guilin, Guangxi

### Searching

—A bicycle hurriedly passed by, yet nodded and smiled

at me  
As joyful as a mirage of crab towers, my heart  
I believe in your civility and kindness; I cherish that feeling deep in  
my heart.  
Through these verses, I vow to seek you out—cycle after cycle, until  
the end of time.  
I've heard you bear the surname Chang; I hold onto bright hopes,

longing for the day we joyfully meet  
To welcome together the sun of tomorrow in our hearts

#### The Love of a Bee

Throughout history, no triumph has been achieved; science has already rendered its verdict

A frail old man in tattered clothes, yet still obsessed with the perpetual motion machine.

### Lonely Wild Goose

Toiling in vain at the perpetual motion puzzle, my black hair has lost its luster. On the vast, twilight road, I've yet to see the sage return. Friends lament the passing of spring; to hold fast to one's feelings is no hardship. I raise my sword to the sky and laugh, soaring over ten thousand mountains.

A poem given to me by my poet friend Chen Zisu:

### Song of the Pioneer

A lifetime devoted to perpetual motion, never a moment's rest,  
Unraveling mysteries for decades, my spirit is widely praised.  
With the spirit of the old Foolish Old Man in

my heart, heroes are forged by the times, A loyal heart dedicated to the Four  
Modernizations, a noble spirit that strengthens the East Wind.  
Unafraid of surging winds and waves, a fisherman stands in the cold snow,  
When success is at hand, he'll scale new heights.  
Lifting our heads to the vast sky, finding joy and sorrow within,  
Blazing a trail in science, we adorn  
the crimson east.

Appreciating the Moon

My brilliance is not for the world's ways; my suffering is endless—when will it cease? When  
the willow catkins and fallen flowers drift, I gaze toward home, and the Yangtze River itself becomes a stream  
of tears, flowing endlessly with my sorrows. Loyalty and honor—my flying daggers and sharp swords are as vast as  
the sea of sorrow. Seeking a patron, longing for a kindred

spirit, I cut through thorns and brambles to rise to the top; I fight until the songs  
 ring out and the moon is full, then bow my head to share the good news with my wife. We are fools; let  
 us not hold grudges. Laying down our arms and returning home, we  
 follow your lead, laughing at the countless events of past  
 and present—all filled with joy, anger, sorrow, and grief. Resentment drifts on, sorrow lingers on;  
 the world is heartless, yet I am full of feeling. I write the annals of history with my very heart and soul; as  
 long as my good name remains, it is far more splendid than wasting my years in idleness.

Cooperative Production Plan for

Bipolar Vortex Engines

Chunwu

Sun



Currently, most traditional engines employ a

single-shaft eccentric vortex system, relying on external power and unable to achieve self-sustaining energy replenishment. They suffer from inherent flaws such as high energy consumption, low efficiency, and limited endurance. China has long relied on imports for core technologies in high-end engines, and the industrial chain lacks sufficient autonomy and control. Under the dual pressures of the energy crisis and environmental protection requirements, the market urgently demands power equipment that is highly efficient, energy-saving, and capable of self-sufficient energy supply; however, existing technologies struggle to meet the industrial upgrading needs under the "dual carbon" goals.

**2. Necessity of Project Implementation**

- A key measure to implement national strategy: The project's technology overcomes the energy replenishment bottleneck of traditional engines, operates with zero carbon emissions, and aligns with the "Dual Carbon" goals and the support priorities of the energy conservation and carbon reduction initiative;
- An urgent need to overcome technical barriers: The innovative dual-shaft configuration resolves the energy limitations of single-shaft eccentric systems, achieving autonomy and control over core technologies, and meets the

requirements for high-tech industrial project applications;

- A Demonstration Project Aligned with Equipment Upgrade Policies: The product is suitable for scenarios such as industrial equipment upgrades and new energy equipment integration, driving the upgrading of high-end electrical equipment and aligning with the support direction of ultra-long-term special government bonds;

- An inevitable choice for enterprise-scale upgrading: Leveraging existing industrial foundations to advance industrialization, achieving a transformation from traditional electrical manufacturing to the R&D and manufacturing of high-end equipment, and enhancing international competitiveness;

- A key vehicle for enhancing social benefits: The project's implementation will drive the development of upstream and downstream industries, create a large number of jobs, support high-quality regional economic development, and promote the "going global" strategy of the equipment manufacturing sector.

## 一、 Technical Feasibility Analysis of the Project

### 1. Core Technical Principles

The core breakthrough of this project lies in the innovative configuration of \*\* " dual-axis levers acting as fulcrums for synergy, with gravitational potential energy and inertial energy utilized as needed " \*\*, which fundamentally transforms the force transmission mechanism of traditional single-axis machinery:

- Original dual-axis lever eccentric vortex structure:

The purpose of this non-eccentric dual-axis vortex engine is similar to how a machine is

composed of three major parts: the prime mover,

the working mechanism, and the transmission system. It involves installing deep-groove bearings

on the small shafts at both ends of the hollow rotating shaft, which are respectively mounted in two bearing housings on the workbench to generate

power for the machine's rotation. The worktable serves as the foundation of the system. The hollow

tubular rotating shaft consists of a hollow tubular outer casing and two hollow tubular end

plates mounted on the end faces of the outer casing (see Figure 3, symbols 1 and 2). Connected to the outer casing

to form a single sleeve-shaped hollow rotating shaft on the same axis, the small shafts at both ends of the

hollow rotating shaft housing are fitted with deep-groove bearings, which rotate in conjunction with the first

bearings mounted in the two bearing housings on the worktable; this single sleeve-shaped hollow rotating shaft

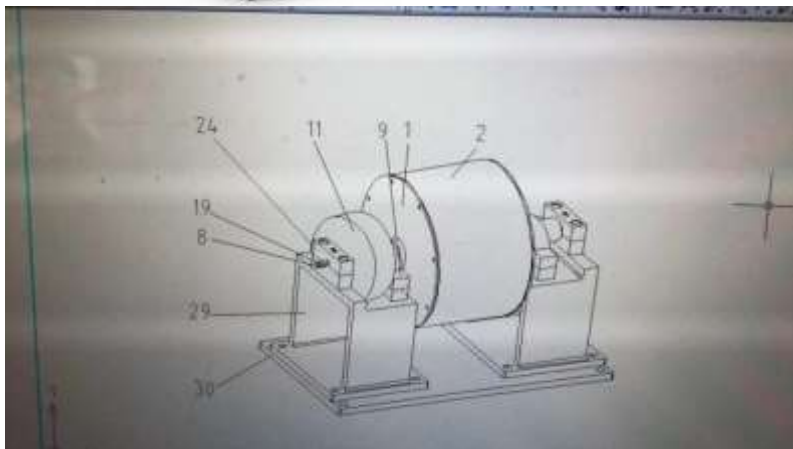
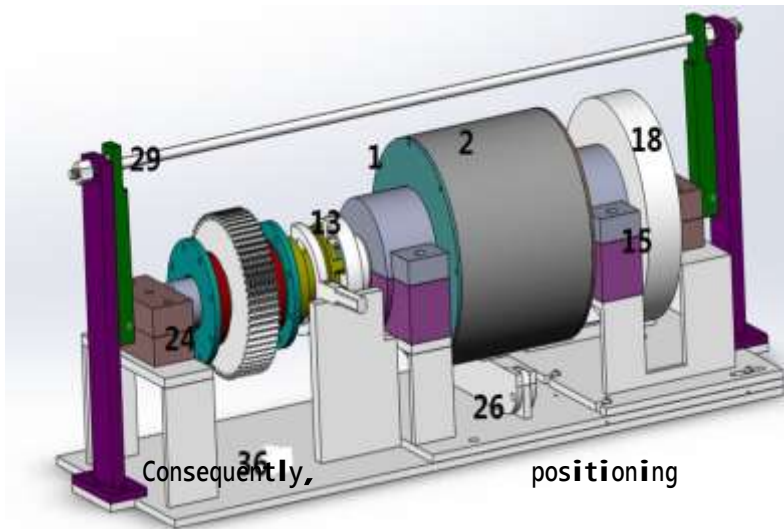
constitutes the driven system,

A central shaft and a secondary central shaft

are then installed within the hollow cavity of the rotating shaft. The ends of both shafts pass through the centers of the two working discs and are inserted into the bearing holes of the

double-hole shaft. The central shaft and the secondary central shaft have two holes at each end, and their shaft ends pass through the bearing

housings at both ends of the workbench and into the double holes in the square iron plate. 24. The configuration of one central shaft and one auxiliary central shaft, suspended within the hollow tubular cavity, forms a system capable of independently replicating itself to generate additional energy (see Figure 2).



slightly off-center within the hollow rotating shaft causes one side of the work disc to bear a heavier downward force, functioning like a fixed-point pendulum. The auxiliary central shaft serves to regulate the magnitude of the force and control the system's activation and deactivation.

**1. First Central Shaft (Integration Shaft): Convergence and Balance of Forces**

This shaft is primarily responsible for \*\* "unifying all forces"\*\*. It aggregates the dispersed torques generated by multiple counterweights on the work disc and, through a precision mechanical structure, converts them into a stable, continuous output torque. It functions like the "command tent" in an army, integrating thrusts from all directions into an invincible combined force that ensures smooth operation of the entire machine and zero loss in the transmission of intelligent suspension forces.

**2. The Second Shaft (Power Amplification Shaft): Energy Duplication and Amplification**

This shaft is the \*\* "heart and soul" of this invention; its function is to "replicate more energy and generate greater driving force."

The second shaft ingeniously utilizes the motion trajectory of the weighted mass (i.e., an "extended parabolic path" ).

- Physical Advantage: When the pressure point is located on the curved surface of the middle section of the outer shell, the large cavity volume in this area allows the working ball to have a longer acceleration and rolling distance. As it

accelerates and rolls, its own weight is leveraged to replicate more thrust.

- Mechanical Explosion: Utilizing gravitational acceleration, as the working ball rolls toward a “distant, lower point,” potential energy is converted into immense kinetic energy. The impact force generated by this “long-distance rolling” far exceeds that of traditional short-stroke mechanical impacts, thereby achieving \*\* “force multiplication”\*\* on a physical level.

Summary:

The dual-axis design transforms the machine from a simple positioning eccentric vortex into an “energy converter.” Through optimized geometric structure, it allows gravity and inertia to exert force over a longer lever arm, thereby achieving the energy amplification effect of \*\*

“leveraging small forces for great results” \*\*.

Since six sets of hanging weights are positioned between the surfaces of the two working discs, the enclosed space evolves into a large eccentric hollow cavity. A very heavy working iron ball is also placed within this cavity. The downward pressure exerted by the working iron ball causes the hollow rotating shaft mechanism to rotate under the downward force. As the hollow rotating shaft mechanism rotates, the working ball also rolls downward along the hanging weights toward the lower, wider space outside the housing. Applying force is akin to accelerating a one-ton hollow shaft housing downward on

deep-groove ball bearings; this requires only about 100 to 200 pounds of force. For instance, the iron weights, which are concentrated at the top of one side of the work disc, automatically rotate in succession from a high position, exerting a downward and outward pressure on the inner arc surface of the housing's side wall. The

hollow shaft assembly is accelerated into rotation.

Moreover, it experiences minimal friction loss. It generates greater inertial force than the rotation of an electric motor rotor.

Meanwhile, the weight assembly on the other side of the work disc—comprising three components—moves upward as the shaft rotates. The weight causes one end of the assembly to bend inward vertically, reducing the length of the lever arm. Since each weight assembly functions like a human arm with two joints, the upward bending force generated by the weight pushes and lifts the small curved iron on the other group, creating an incline that prevents the working ball from moving backward. It also pushes the working ball against one side of the outer casing, directly transferring the weight of the hanger iron into a downward rotational force on the outer casing. This more effectively utilizes energy, reduces the engine's energy consumption, and accelerates the rotation of the hollow shaft.

Of course, the ball performing the work and the suspended iron are on the eccentric side; if their weight is not increased during acceleration, or if the inertial force generated by the machine is not utilized, When the machine is accelerated to over 1,000 revolutions per minute by the applied force, it generates a powerful centrifugal force. As the counterweight moves upward, it is flung outward by the centrifugal force and bends downward without contracting toward the center. The working iron ball then loses the slope and thrust provided by the counterweight on this side, causing it to fall vertically—retreating toward the center as it

descends—and ceases to perform work for the eccentric

system. The eccentric machine rotates at a non-uniform

deceleration within the inertial force; as a result, phenomena such as electrostatic and magnetic generation through friction and compression cease, and the four fundamental physical forces are unified by the inertial force.

However, a large and heavy outer casing—such as one with a two-meter diameter and a total weight of one ton—when accelerated to 1,000 revolutions per minute, generates even greater inertial force.

Furthermore, since the hollow shaft rotates within the bearing housing, friction losses are minimal, and the machine cannot come to a complete stop immediately.

This is because the shaft ends of the

two-meter-diameter hollow-shaft outer casing have a diameter of only 10 centimeters and are equipped with single-row ball bearings and deep-groove bearings. The hollow shaft is mounted in two bearing housings on the



workbench. As inertia causes it to decelerate non-uniformly to approximately 500 RPM, the centrifugal force inside the machine becomes too weak to overcome the weight of the hanging iron. The hanging iron then bends downward and contracts with the rotation, forming a slope that acts as a lower dead center for the working ball, preventing it from rolling backward. The hanging iron, still falling and bending, assists in pushing the working ball forward to roll and press against the middle arc surface on the side of the large outer shell. The combined mass of the working ball and the hanging iron acts as a weight, thereby accelerating the rotation of the

one-ton large outer shell. Since the one-ton hollow rotating shaft is supported by bearings at both ends—set within two bearing housings on the workbench—only one-tenth of the force is required. Furthermore, when the machine decelerates, the flywheel slides on the bearing balls to slow down.

When the flywheel is still spinning at 700—800 RPM, it immediately engages a gear, and the flywheel's inertia helps accelerate the machine's rotation.

This eccentric machine differs from a fuel engine in that it is merely a conversion system—for example, converting gasoline into thermal energy that cannot be replicated and is dissipated, thus preserving energy. It also differs from an electric motor, where only the rotor performs mechanical work by rotating after being energized, while the outer casing (stator)

remains stationary. Although the operating principle of this eccentric vortex engine resembles that of an electric motor, its large shaft disc, sleeve-shaped chamber, and components on the disc are designed and combined into an eccentric system that works together synergistically. All these elements contribute to the engine's rotation, generating additional forces. In other words, the stator becomes a rotating rotor; since the rotor is very heavy, its

accelerated rotation generates even greater forces,

producing more work from inertial force than an electric motor does when powered. It also saves energy and has the advantage of being noise-free.

The various components mounted on the central shaft are weighted on one side at the top, allowing the iron core to rotate from top to bottom in a cyclical motion. This accelerates and presses outward and downward against the curved surface of the middle section of the outer casing, creating a relative positional acceleration against that surface. Because the central shaft is positioned off-center within the cavity, the internal eccentric cavity is enlarged. As the working iron ball rotates randomly, it rolls downward, pressing against the outer shell and causing it to rotate downward. The rotor rotates downward without requiring any external energy.

However, the common advantage of both mechanisms is that they generate work through self-rotation, applying a downward force in the same direction.

If users need to operate the machine (start/stop) or adjust the force (increase/decrease), they can do so by actuating the clutch, handbrake, or footbrake lever, thereby controlling the machine's speed, starting it, or stopping it.

The above content is for reference only,  
as the core technology has not been fully disclosed.

If you are applying for funding, the Jiuyuntu Platform can provide you with the draft feasibility study report for the "Eccentric Vortex Engine Industrialization Project" submitted to the National Development and Reform Commission (NDRC) for special funding, as well as the internal components of the physical engine for your review.

Contact: Sun Chunwu

邮 箱 yzscw0514@163.com WeChat ID:

scw20171020

Douyin ID: 27634498t641

Contact Person: Hao Xinran

WeChat ID: wxin588678 Phone: 13152989760

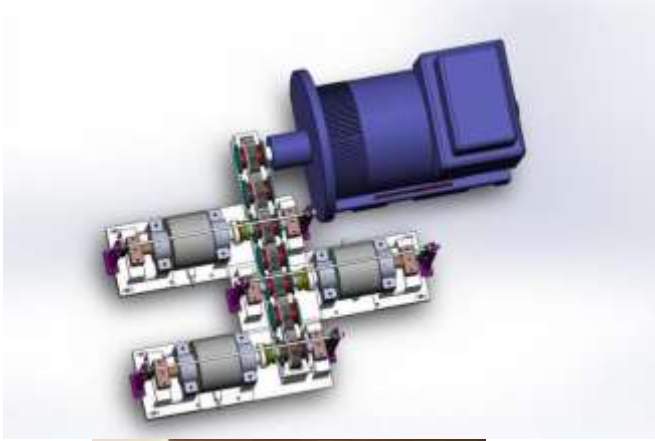
Project Research and Development: I have been conducting research for over forty years and possess actual production drawings

and dimensions. Once a cooperative production contract is signed, the physical machine can be shipped for successful replication and production, at which point the patent fee will be paid.

Since international patent offices have refused to grant patents for engines similar to perpetual motion machines, the following images show a physical model of an engine. These images are for reference only.

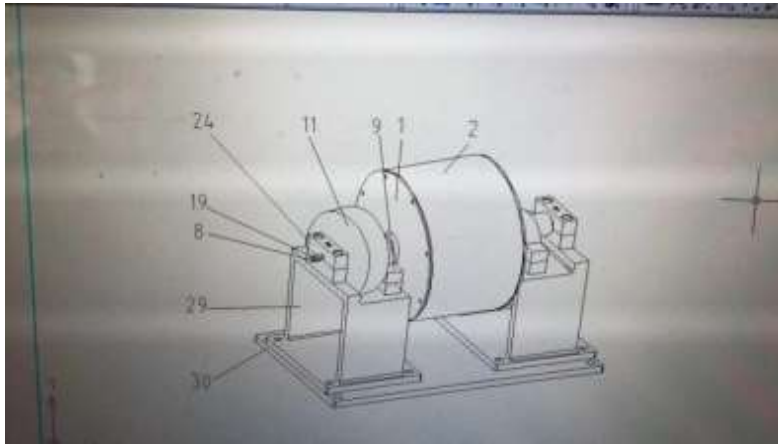
an eccentric vortex

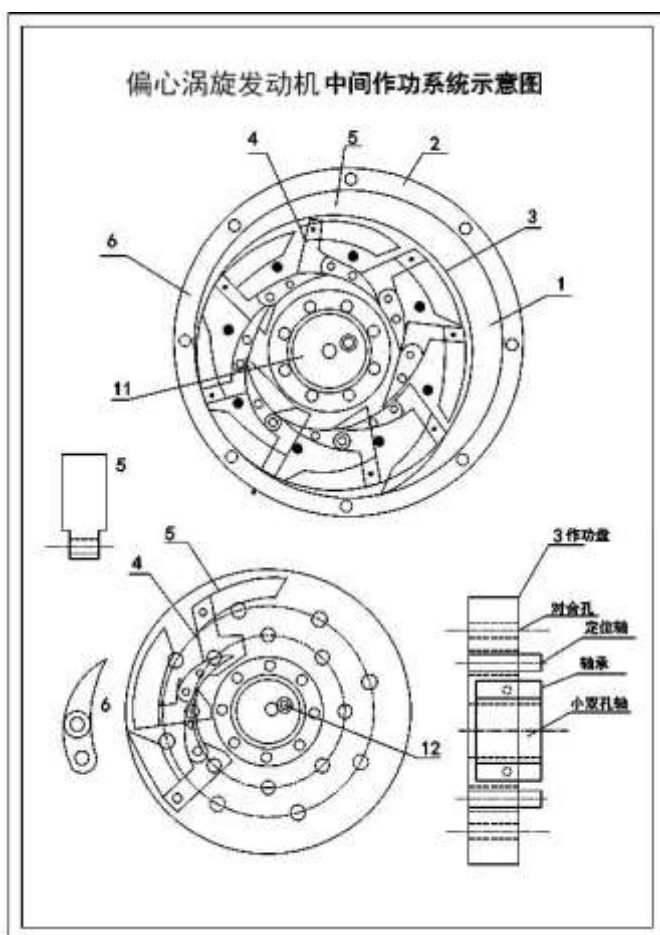
Sun Chunwu, Yangzhou, China



[ Month ] [ Day ],  
2022

Modular Eccentric Vortex Engine





Yangzhou is definitely worth a visit!  
Although Yangzhou is not a large city, it boasts many

historical sites and scenic spots. Even Li Bai, the “ Poet Immortal ” of the Tang Dynasty, could hardly wait to visit:  
 “ Farewell to the Yellow Crane Tower, my old friend heads west; in the misty spring of March, I set sail for Yangzhou.”  
 He boarded a large ship, and as the lone sail faded into the azure sky, all that remained was the Yangtze River flowing  
 toward the horizon.  
 Even those who have traveled extensively to famous mountains and ancient temples still find the beauty of  
 Yangzhou’ s Slender West Lake, Ge Garden, and He Family  
 Garden—where every step reveals a new scene—truly captivating. This time, I’ m determined to travel to Yangzhou  
 with a fortune in my pocket, staying a few extra days to savor the moonlit night over the Twenty-Four Bridges and  
 wonder  
 where the fair maiden is teaching someone to play the flute. I’  
 I also stock up on local specialties to bring home for my parents and mother-in-law. Last time, I brought too  
 little money, and my sister-in-law scolded me for not bringing her  
 any jade jewelry from Yangzhou—leaving me with a lingering  
 regret!  
 All the tourist attractions in Yangzhou have been spruced up for the Spring Festival—it’ s truly worth a visit!  
 Wishing all the ladies and gentlemen visiting Yangzhou a safe journey! Happiness and joy! Good luck in abundance!!  
 May                      you                      strike                      it                      rich!!





**Overtaking the Theory of the Origin of the Universe! The “Black Hole Galaxy Evolution Theory” by folk scientist Sun Chunwu sidelines the Big Bang theory!**

Last night, we turned Professor Sun Chunwu's research achievements into a video and posted it on Douyin. This time, we aim to present his revolutionary understanding of the universe to netizens worldwide!

**Are you still believing in the “Big Bang” ? Professor Sun says: NO!**

His proposed “trumpet-shaped simplified black hole” theory is like a thunderclap in cosmology — diffuse gas swirls into clumps inside black holes and is then ejected, evolving into new

galaxies outside the black hole!

This means that the universe was never born in an instant from a "Big Bang" ; instead, it continuously "spawns" galaxies through black holes, evolving endlessly and perpetually!

From the mechanical breakthroughs of the eccentric vortex engine to the theoretical overturning of the universe's origin, Professor Sun Chunwu, with the persistence of a folk researcher, has ripped open a new crack in scientific understanding. Such "scientific ambition," do you dare to take a look?

In this age of information overload, popular science books that truly combine intellectual depth with practical value are few and far between. However, Mr. Sun Chunwu's "Tai Chi Talks About the World" uses Tai Chi and Bagua as keys to unlock many world-class questions such as the evolution of the universe, the origin of life, and disease prevention and treatment. It can be described as an encyclopedic masterpiece that spans philosophy, natural science, and medicine.

The unique aspect of \*Tai Chi Talks About the World\* lies in its breaking down of traditional academic barriers, perfectly integrating the mysterious Eastern Tai Chi culture with modern science. Author Sun Chunwu, though not formally trained in the field, through over sixty years of self-study, research, and practical exploration, starts with the yin and yang fish in the Tai Chi symbol and proposes that "centripetal rotation" and "centrifugal rotation" are the core driving forces behind the movement of all things in the universe. This seemingly simple viewpoint can convincingly explain many scientific mysteries such as the creation of the universe, the movement of tectonic plates, and the changes in lunar craters. Through vivid, anthropomorphic narratives, the book portrays celestial bodies such as the Earth's core, crust, and moon as living entities, explaining complex physical principles clearly and easily through humorous dialogue, allowing readers to appreciate the mysteries of the universe in a relaxed reading experience.

As a highly practical popular science book, the most impactful part of this work is undoubtedly its groundbreaking research on disease prevention and treatment. Combining decades of personal experience in health preservation and scientific research, Mr. Sun Chunwu proposes the startling view that "cancer is not a disease," overturning the traditional medical framework. He believes that the root cause of intractable diseases such as leukemia, cancer, AIDS, and COVID-19 lies in the imbalance of energy metabolism and the accumulation of waste within the body. By adjusting the balance between the body's "centripetal" and "eccentric" vortices, coupled with scientific diet, rest, and care methods, both the symptoms and the root cause can be addressed. The book details a variety of economical and practical disease prevention and treatment plans, ranging from traditional Chinese medicine dietary therapies and acupressure to lifestyle adjustments, covering all scenarios from daily health maintenance to severe illness management. Many readers have verified the effectiveness of these methods through practice.

It is worth mentioning that the author, Mr. Sun Chunwu, has a life story that is itself an inspirational legend. He entered a factory as a child laborer at the age of 15, and through sheer perseverance, he became self-taught, achieving remarkable success not only in scientific research, inventing the eccentric turbo engine, but also winning numerous awards in literature and music. His novel \*The Lunar Doctor\* was awarded the title of "Outstanding Popular Science Book of the 21st Century in China," and his papers, such as \*The Causes and Prevention of Cancer\*, have won national-level special prizes multiple times. He has also published over twenty academic articles on the American scientific journal website. It is this rich life experience that imbues \*Tai Chi Talks About the World\* with both rigorous scientific logic and profound humanistic concern, revealing a deep reverence for life and a dedication to science throughout.

The value of this work also lies in its innovation of traditional understanding. The "trumpet-shaped black hole ejection model" proposed in the book reinterprets the mechanism of the universe's origin; the unique insights into the "naming of Tang Sanzang's three disciples" and "Namo Amitabha Buddha" demonstrate the wonderful connection between traditional culture and science; and the production plan for the "eccentric vortex engine" provides a completely new approach to the development of new energy. Whether you are a young science enthusiast, a seasoned researcher, or an ordinary reader interested in health and wellness, you can find inspiration in this book. As Liu Zhaoan, a veteran employee of Yangzhou Sanli Electric Group, said: "Old Sun only graduated from elementary school

but became self-taught, his level far exceeding that of a university undergraduate. It's truly remarkable that he received a special prize certificate. I read this book every day."

The publication of *\*Tai Chi Talks About the World\** received widespread support from the academic community. Senior scholars such as Professor Wang Yiping from Quzhou, Zhejiang Province, and Physics Expert Liu Qisi from Xuzhou University of Mining and Technology offered valuable suggestions for revising the manuscript. Retired Professor Zheng Lie from Chang'an University even expressed his willingness to promote the industrialization of the core technologies described in the book. The book not only gained popularity among domestic readers but also reached the international stage, receiving an invitation to contribute to a magazine under the UK Department for Science and Education, demonstrating its academic value and influence. In 2025, Mr. Sun Chunwu released a new popular science work, *\*New Highlights in Natural Science\**, continuing the spirit of scientific exploration in *\*Tai Chi Talks About the World\** and bringing readers more cutting-edge knowledge.

In this era of fragmented information, *\*Tai Chi Talks About the World\** acts as a lighthouse, guiding readers through the fog of science. It not only teaches us to view the universe and life from a completely new perspective but also provides a set of practical healthy living solutions. Whether you want to explore the mysteries of the universe, improve your scientific literacy, or seek practical methods for disease prevention and health maintenance, this book is worth reading carefully. As the book says, "Whoever gets it first, benefits first," and it is believed that every reader can gain their own wisdom and enlightenment from this remarkable book, steadily progressing on the path of cognitive upgrading and health protection.

If you too are filled with curiosity about the origins of the universe and hopeful for the prevention and treatment of intractable diseases, why not open "Tai Chi Talks About the World" and follow in the footsteps of Mr. Sun Chunwu on a scientific exploration journey spanning ancient and modern times and connecting East and West? This popular science masterpiece, which combines fun, science, and practicality, will surely help you rediscover the world and gain unexpected knowledge and surprises.

#### About the Author

Sun Chunwu ( born July 1948 ) is a male of Han ethnicity from Xihu Town, Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province , China . He is retired from Jiangsu Yangzhou Sanli Electric Appliance Group Co., Ltd.

His main invention was the eccentric turbofan engine. In his spare time, he wrote poetry and novels, and also pursued innovative research in philosophy and natural sciences. He started as a child laborer in a factory at the age of 15. His comprehensive discussion of unified field theory was published in the 18th issue of *\*Science & Technology Information\** in 2007, pages 5-6.

In June 2009, the novel *\*The Lunar Doctor\** was published by Beijing Art and Science Electronic Press, and won the title of "Outstanding Popular Science Book of the 21st Century in China" awarded by the China Primary and Secondary School Quality Education Research Center. His literary work won the top prize in the first "Chinese National Essence Cup" Contemporary Hundred Poets and Couplets Competition. His work *\*Causes and Prevention of Cancer\** was included in *\*Anthology of Outstanding Articles by Distinguished Scholars of the Republic\** published by the China National Academy of Chinese Learning, and won the Special Prize for Outstanding Paper. His paper *\*Causes and Prevention of Earthquakes\** was awarded an Outstanding Work Award by experts from the National Information Center and the Academic Review Department of the China National History Research Institute. In October 2009, he participated in the Second National Conference on Folk Science and Technology and published articles on the causes and prevention of cancer. He has published more than twenty articles on the American Natural Science Journal website. Sun Chunwu also published the popular science book *\*Tai Chi Talks About the World\** at Maslan Publishing House, New York, USA. In 2013, he became a researcher at the China Social, Economic and Cultural Development Research Association.

Songs such as "Moon Appreciation" were published in the 24th issue of Music Panorama in 2013.

The article "Origin and Prevention of COVID-19" published in 2021 won the Special Prize at the Annual Meeting of Scientists and Economists.

Visiting Professor, Talent Education and Training Center of China Management Science Research Association, 2023 .

On February 16, 2023, an English article titled "My Understanding of the Origin and Prevention of Novel Coronavirus Pneumonia" was published in an American scientific journal. The WHO

declared the end of the global COVID-19 pandemic at the end of February , and no second major resurgence of the epidemic has been observed to date.

Published in Academic Fields on May 25, 2024.

An Initial Exploration of Research on Natural Science Modeling Theory, Academ  
Arena, May 25, 2024;

The popular science book "New Highlights in Natural Sciences" will be published in  
May 2025 .Marsland Press

#### Book Cataloging in Publication (CIP) data

**Taiji Talks About the World**

Taiji Talks About the World / by Sun Chunwu.—Marsland Press, January 2016

I. Tai...II. Sun...III. Nature Research. Taiji—China—Contemporary IV.757

**ISBN-13: 978-1-5996-4006-x**

**ISBN-10: 1-5996-4006-2**

Marsland Press CIP Data Core Word (2010) First 1-59964-069-4 No

**Taiji Talks About the World**

Author: Sun Chunwu

Published: Marsland Press

Website: <http://www.sciencepub.net>

Issued by: Marsland Press Distribution Department

Address: Richmond Hill, New York, USA, P.O. Box 180432, Zip Code 11418

Editor in Charge: Ma Hongbao

Graphic Design: Jenny

YoungFolio: 850×1168mm 1/32 Word Count:

150,000 words Print: 5.5

Number of copies: Volumes 10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1

**Edition: 1st edition, January 2016, 1st printing**

**Book Number: ISBN-13: 978-1-5996-4006-x ISBN-10: 1-5996-4006-2**

List Price: 50 US dollars / 300 yuan (RMB)

All rights reserved · Infringements will be investigated

